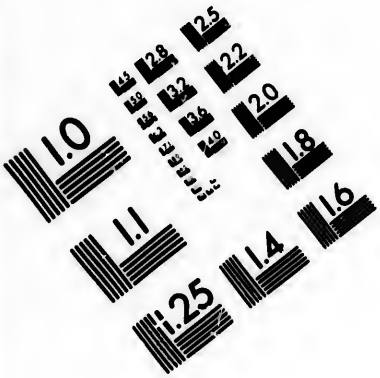


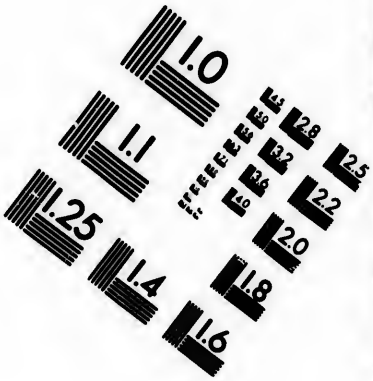
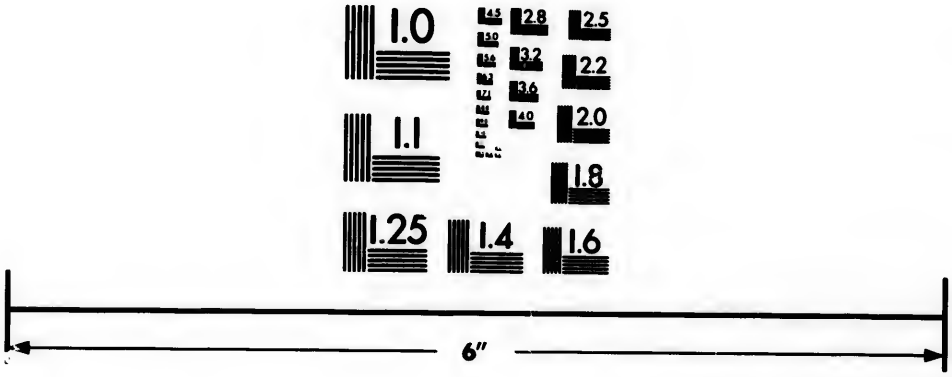
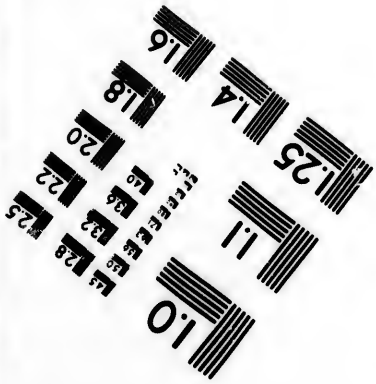


IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)





Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

Technical and Bibliographic Notes/Notes techniques et bibliographiques

The Institute has attempted to obtain the best original copy available for filming. Features of this copy which may be bibliographically unique, which may alter any of the images in the reproduction, or which may significantly change the usual method of filming, are checked below.

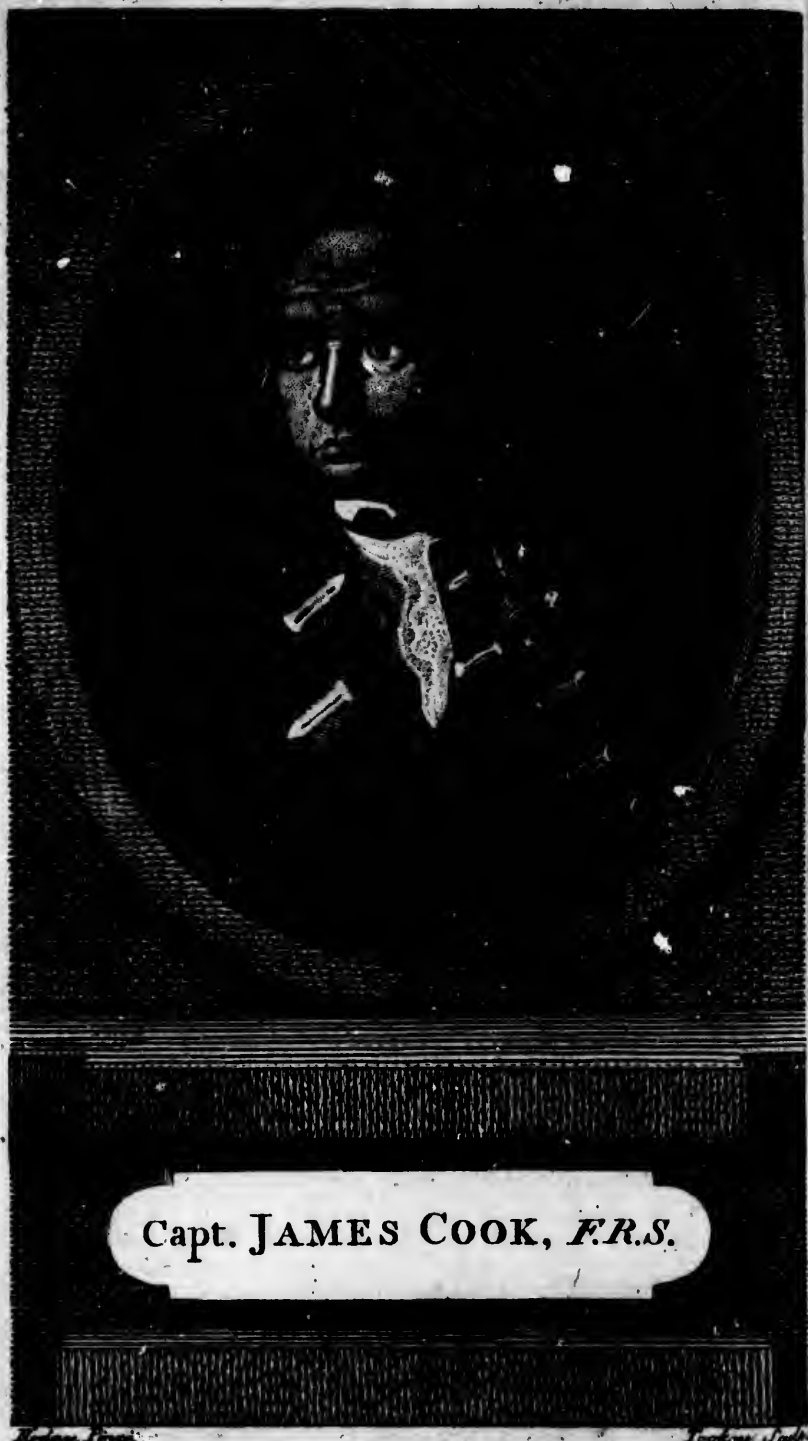
L'Institut a microfilmé le meilleur exemplaire qu'il lui a été possible de se procurer. Les détails de cet exemplaire qui sont peut-être uniques du point de vue bibliographique, qui peuvent modifier une image reproduite, ou qui peuvent exiger une modification dans la méthode normale de filmage sont indiqués ci-dessous.

- [ ] Coloured covers/ Couverture de couleur
- [ ] Covers damaged/ Couverture endommagée
- [ ] Covers restored and/or laminated/ Couverture restaurée et/ou pelliculée
- [ ] Cover title missing/ Le titre de couverture manque
- [ ] Coloured maps/ Cartes géographiques en couleur
- [ ] Coloured ink (i.e. other than blue or black)/ Encre de couleur (i.e. autre que bleue ou noire)
- [ ] Coloured plates and/or illustrations/ Planches et/ou illustrations en couleur
- [ ] Bound with other material/ Relié avec d'autres documents
- [ ] Tight binding may cause shadows or distortion along interior margin/ La reliure serrée peut causer de l'ombre ou de la distortion le long de la marge intérieure
- [ ] Blank leaves added during restoration may appear within the text. Whenever possible, these have been omitted from filming/ Il se peut que certaines pages blanches ajoutées lors d'une restauration apparaissent dans le texte, mais, lorsque cela était possible, ces pages n'ont pas été filmées.
- [ ] Additional comments:/ Commentaires supplémentaires:

- [ ] Coloured pages/ Pages de couleur
- [ ] Pages damaged/ Pages endommagées
- [ ] Pages restored and/or laminated/ Pages restaurées et/ou pelliculées
- [x] Pages discoloured, stained or foxed/ Pages décolorées, tachetées ou piquées
- [ ] Pages detached/ Pages détachées
- [x] Showthrough/ Transparence
- [ ] Quality of print varies/ Qualité inégale de l'impression
- [ ] Includes supplementary material/ Comprend du matériel supplémentaire
- [ ] Only edition available/ Seule édition disponible
- [ ] Pages wholly or partially obscured by errata slips, tissues, etc., have been refilmed to ensure the best possible image/ Les pages totalement ou partiellement obscurcies par un feuillet d'errata, une pelure, etc., ont été filmées à nouveau de façon à obtenir la meilleure image possible.

This item is filmed at the reduction ratio checked below/
Ce document est filmé au taux de réduction indiqué ci-dessous.

10X			14X			18X			22X			26X			30X		
						✓											
	12X			16X			20X			24X			28X			32X	



Capt. JAMES COOK, *F.R.S.*

Hodges, Pinxt. Cooke, Sculp.

Captain Cook's

THIRD AND LAST

VOYAGE,

TO THE

PACIFIC OCEAN,

In the Years 1776, 1777, 1778, 1779 and 1780.

Faithfully abridged from the Quarto Edition

PUBLISHED

by order of

His MAJESTY.

Illustrated with Copper Plates.

LONDON:

Printed for JOHN FIELDING, Pater Noster Row;

and

JOHN STOCKDALE, Piccadilly.

Price 4s. Bound.

INTRODUCTION.

THE ſucceſſes of His Majeſty's ſhips in having penetrated into the inmoſt receſſes of the South Pacific Ocean, will appear from a recital of their various extenſive operations, which have ſettled the geography of ſo conſiderable a part of the globe.

The ſeveral lands mentioned to have been diſcovered by preceding navigators, whether Spaniſh or Dutch, have been diligently ſought after; and moſt of thoſe which appeared to be of any conſequence, found out and viſited; and every method put in practice to correct former miſtakes, and ſupply the deficiencies.

Beſides perfecting the diſcoveries of their predeceſſors, our late navigators have added a long catalogue of their own, to enrich geographical knowledge. By repeatedly traverſing the Pacific Ocean, ſuch ample accounts have been received of the different iſlands and their inhabitants, that, to make uſe of Captain Cook's own words, we *have left little more to be done in thoſe parts.*

Byron, Wallis, and Carteret, all contributed towards increaſing our knowledge of the iſles in the Pacific Ocean, within the limits of the ſouthern tropic; but how far that ocean ex-

tended to the weſt, by what lands it was bounded on that ſide, and the connections of thoſe lands with former diſcoveries, remained unknown, till Captain Cook, after his firſt voyage, brought back a ſatisfactory deciſion of this important queſtion. With wonderful ſkill and perſeverance, amidſt perplexities, difficulties, and dangers, he traced this coaſt almoſt two thouſand miles, from the 38° of ſouth latitude, croſs the tropic, to its northern extremity, within 10° and a half of the equinoctial, where it joined the land already explored by the Dutch, which they have denominated New Holland.

The voyages projected by His preſent Majeſty George the Third, and carried into execution by Captain Cook, have not, it is preſumed, been uſeleſs. When Great Britain was firſt viſited by the Phœnicians, the inhabitants were painted ſavages, much leſs civilized than thoſe of Tongataboo, or Otaheite; and it is not impoſſible, but that our late voyages may, in proceſs of time, ſpread the bleſſings of civilization among the numerous iſlanders of the South Pacific Ocean, and be the means of aboliſhing their abominable repaſts, and almoſt equally abominable ſacrifices.

THE LIFE OF

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK.

SINCE the printing of the following ſheets, ſome new and authentic particulars of the life of this great navigator, having come to our hands, we ſhall here give them as a ſeparate article, which may be read inſtead of what we have inſerted immediately after the account of Captain Cook's death.

James Cook was born at Marton, in Cleveland, near Great Ayton, in Yorkſhire, in Nov. 1728. His father was a day labourer to a farmer, and lived in a ſmall village ſurrounded with mud walls. His father afterwards removed to Great Ayton, where he was employed as a hind by the late Thomas Scuttowe, Eſq. aſſiſted by his ſon in the different branches of huſbandry.

At the age of thirteen, he was put under the care of Mr. Pullen, a ſchoolmaſter who taught at Ayton, where he learned arithmetic, book-keeping, &c. and is ſaid to have ſhewn a very early genius for figures. About Jan. 1745, at the age of ſeventeen, his father bound him apprentice to learn the grocery and haberdaſhery buſineſs, at Snaith; but after a year and a half's ſervitude, having contracted a ſtrong propenſity to the ſea, his maſter was willing to indulge him in following the bent of his inclination, and gave up his indentures.

In July, 1746, he was bound apprentice to Mr. J. Walker of Whitby, for the term of three years, which time he ſerved to his maſter's full ſatisfaction. He firſt ſailed on board the ſhip Freelove, chiefly employed in the coal trade from Newcaſtle to London.

In the ſpring, 1750, Mr. Cook ſhipped himſelf as a ſeaman on board the Maria, under the command of Captain Gaſkin. In her he continued all that year in the Baltic trade.

In 1753, he entered on board His Majeſty's ſhip Eagle; "having a mind," as he expreſſed himſelf, "to "try his fortune that way." Some time after, the Eagle ſailed with another frigate on a cruiſe, in which they were very ſucceſsful.

He received a commiſſion as Lieutenant, on the firſt day of April, 1760; and ſoon after gave a ſpecimen of thoſe abilities, which recommended him to the commands which he executed ſo highly to his credit, that his name will go down to poſterity, as one of the moſt ſkilful navigators which this country hath produced.

In the year 1765, he was with Sir William Burnaby, on the Jamaica ſtation; and behaved in ſuch a manner as intitled him to the approbation of the Admiral.

In the year 1767, the Royal Society reſolved, that it would be proper to ſend ſome perſons into ſome part of the South Seas, to obſerve the tranſit of the planet Venus over the Sun's diſk; and Otaheite being fixed upon, the Endeavour, a ſhip built for the coal trade, was put into commiſſion, and the command of her given to Lieutenant Cook, who was appointed with Mr. Charles Green to obſerve the tranſit.

In this voyage he was accompanied by Joſeph Banks, Eſq. ſince Sir Joſeph, and Dr. Solander. On the 13th of April, 1769, he came to Otaheite, where the tranſit of Venus was obſerved in different parts of the iſland. He came to anchor in the Downs on the 12th of June, after having been abſent almoſt three years, in which he had made diſcoveries equal to all the navigators of his country, from the time of Columbus to the preſent.

Soon after Captain Cook's return to England, it was reſolved to equip two ſhips to complete the diſcovery of the Southern hemiſphere. It had long been a prevailing idea, that the unexplored part contained another continent. To aſcertain the fact was the principal object of this expedition; and that nothing might be omitted

omitted that could tend to facilitate the enterprize, two ſhips were provided; the Reſolution, under the command of Captain Cook; the other, the Adventure, commanded by Captain Furneaux. Both of them ſailed from Deptford on the 9th of April, 1772, and arrived at the Cape of Good Hope on the 30th of Oct. They departed from thence on the 22d of November, and from that time, until the 17th of January, 1773, continued endeavouring to diſcover the continent, when they were obliged to relinquiſh the deſign. They then proceeded into the South Seas, and made many other diſcoveries, and returned to England on the 14th of July: having, during three years and eighteen days, loſt but one man by ſickneſs; although he had navigated throughout all the climates from fifty-two degrees north, to ſeventy-one degrees ſouth, with a company of an hundred and eighteen men.

The want of ſucceſs which attended Captain Cook's attempt to diſcover a Southern Continent, did not diſcourage another plan being reſolved on, which had been recommended ſome time before. This was no other than the finding out a North-weſt paſſage, which the fancy of ſome chimerical projectors had conceived to be a practicable ſcheme. His intrepid ſpirit, and inquiſitive mind, induced him again to offer his ſervices, and they were accepted without heſitation. He prepared for his departure with the utmoſt alacrity, and ſailed in the month of July, 1776.

A few months after his departure from England, notwithſtanding he was then abſent, the Royal Society voted him Sir Godfrey Copley's gold medal, as a reward for the account which he had tranſmitted to that Body, of the method taken to preſerve the health of the crew of his ſhips.

Captain Cook was a married man, and left ſeveral children behind him. On each of theſe His Majeſty has ſettled a penſion of 25l. per annum, and 200l. per annum on his widow.

The particulars of this laſt voyage, together with an account of his death, will be found amply deſcribed in the following pages.

Directions to the BINDER for placing the CUTS.

CONTENTS.

BOOK I.

TRANSACTIONS FROM THE BEGINNING OF THE VOYAGE, TILL OUR DEPARTURE FROM NEW ZEALAND.

BOOK

BOOK II.

CONTAINING OUR ADVENTURES FROM OUR DEPARTURE FROM NEW ZEALAND, TILL OUR ARRIVAL AT OTAHEITE, OR THE SOCIETY ISLANDS.

BOOK III.

OCCURRENCES AT OTAHEITE, AND THE SOCIETY ISLES; AND PROSECUTION OF THE VOYAGE TO NORTH AMERICA.

BOOK IV.

TRANSACTIONS WITH THE NATIVES OF NORTH AMERICA; DISCOVERIES ON THAT COAST AND THE EASTERN EXTREMITY OF ASIA, AND RETURN SOUTHWARD TO THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

BOOK

BOOK V.

JOURNAL OF THE TRANSACTIONS ON RETURNING TO THE SANDWICH ISDANDS.

BOOK VI.

TRANSACTIONS IN A SECOND EXPEDITION TO THE NORTH, BY THE WAY OF KAMTSCHATKA, AND IN RETURNING HOME, BY THE WAY OF CANTON, AND THE CAPE OF GOOD HOPE.

A VOY-

A VOYAGE TO THE PACIFIC OCEAN.

BOOK I.

TRANSACTIONS FROM THE BEGINNING OF THE VOYAGE TILL OUR DEPARTURE FROM NEW ZEALAND.

ON the 10th of February, 1776, Captain Cook went on board His Majesty's sloop the Resolution, having received a commission to command her the preceding day. The Discovery, of three hundred tons, was, at the same time, prepared for the service, and Captain Clerke appointed to the command of her. It may be necessary to observe, that Captain Clerke had been Captain Cook's Second Lieutenant on board the Resolution, in his second voyage round the world.

Both ships being abundantly supplied with every thing requisite for a voyage of such duration, we sailed on the 29th of May, and arrived the next day at Long Reach, where our powder and shot, and other ordnance stores, were received.

On the 8th of June, while we lay in Long Reach, we had the satisfaction of a visit from the Earl of

Sandwich, Sir Hugh Palliſer, and others of the Board of Admiralty, to examine whether every thing had been completed purſuant to their orders, and to the convenience of thoſe who were to embark.

On the 10th we took on board a bull, two cows with their calves, and ſome ſheep, with hay and corn for their ſupport. We were alſo furniſhed with a ſufficient quantity of our valuable European garden ſeeds, which might add freſh ſupport of food to the vegetable productions of our newly-diſcovered iſlands.

Both the ſhips, by order of the Board of Admiralty, were amply ſupplied with an extenſive aſſortment of iron tools and trinkets, to facilitate a friendly commerce and intercourſe with the inhabitants of ſuch new countries as we might diſcover. With reſpect to our own wants, nothing was refuſed us that might be conducive to health, comfort, or convenience.

We received on board, the next day, variety of aſtronomical and nautical inſtruments, which the Board of Longitude intruſted to Captain Cook and Mr. King, his Second Lieutenant; they having engaged to ſupply the place of a profeſſed obſervator. The Board, likewiſe, put into their poſſeſſion the time-keeper, which Captain Cook had carried out in his laſt voyage, and which had performed ſo well. Another time-keeper, and the ſame aſſortment of aſtronomical and other inſtruments, were put on board the Diſcovery, for the uſe of Mr. William Bailey, a diligent and ſkilful obſervator, who was engaged to embark with Captain Clerke.

Mr. Anderſon, Surgeon to Captain Cook, added to his profeſſional abilities a great proficiency in natural hiſtory.

Though ſeveral young men among the ſea officers were capable of being employed in conſtructing charts, drawing plans, and taking views of the coaſts and head lands, Mr. Webber was engaged to embark with Captain Cook, for the purpoſe of ſupplying the defects of written accounts, by taking accurate and maſterly draw-

drawings of the moſt memorable ſcenes of our tranſactions.

The neceſſary preparations being completed, Captain Cook received orders to proceed to Plymouth, and to take the Diſcovery under his command. In conſequence of which, he ordered Captain Clerke to carry his ſhip alſo round to Plymouth.

The Reſolution, with the Diſcovery in company, ſailed from Long Reach on the 15th of June, and anchored at the Nore the ſame evening. The Diſcovery proceeded the next day in obedience to Captain Cook's order, and the Reſolution remained at the Nore till Captain Cook, who was then in London, ſhould join her.

It being our intention to touch at Otaheite and the Society Iſlands, it had been determined to carry Omai back to his native country; accordingly Captain Cook and he ſet out from London early on the 24th.

Though Omai left London with ſome degree of regret, when he reflected upon the favours and indulgencies he had received, yet, when mention was made of his own iſlands, his eyes ſparkled with joy. He entertained the higheſt ideas of this country and its inhabitants: but the pleaſing proſpect of returning home, loaded with what would be deemed invaluable treaſures there, and of obtaining a diſtinguiſhed ſuperiority among his countrymen, operated ſo far as to ſuppreſs every uneaſy ſenſation; and when he got on board the ſhip, he appeared to be quite happy.

Omai was furniſhed by His Majeſty with quantities of every article that was ſuppoſed to be in eſtimation at Otaheite. Every method had, indeed, been employed, during his abode in England, and at his departure, to make him the inſtrument of conveying to his countrymen an exalted opinion of Britiſh greatneſs and generoſity.

About noon on the 25th we weighed anchor, and made ſail for the Downs, where Captain Cook received two boats on board, which had been built for him at Deal.

On the 30th, at three o'clock in the afternoon, we anchored at Plymouth Sound. The Diſcovery had arrived there three days before.

On the 8th of July, Captain Cook received his inſtructions for the voyage, and an order to proceed to the Cape of Good Hope with the Reſolution; with directions alſo to leave an order for Captain Clerke to follow him as ſoon as he ſhould join his ſhip, he being at that time in London.

The officers and men on board the Reſolution, including marines, were one hundred and twelve, and thoſe on board the Diſcovery were eighty.

In the morning of the 11th, Captain Cook delivered into the hands of Mr. Burney, Firſt Lieutenant of the Diſcovery, Captain Clerke's ſailing orders; a copy of which he alſo left with the commanding officer of His Majeſty's ſhips at Plymouth, to be delivered to the Captain on his arrival. In the afternoon we weighed with the ebb, and got out beyond all the ſhipping in the Sound, where we were detained moſt of the following day. At eight o'clock in the evening, we weighed again, and ſtood out of the Sound, with a gentle breeze at north-weſt by weſt.

Soon after we came out of Plymouth Sound, the wind came more weſterly, and blew freſh, which obliged us to ply down the channel; and we were not off the Lizard till the 14th, at eight in the evening. On the afternoon of the 24th, we paſſed Cape Finiſterre, with a fine gale at north-north-eaſt.

Captain Cook determined to touch at Teneriffe, to get a ſupply of hay and corn for the ſubſiſtence of his animals on board, as well as the uſual refreſhments for ourſelves; and at day-light, on the firſt of Auguſt, we ſailed round the eaſt point of that iſland, and anchored on the ſouth ſide, in the road of Santa Cruz, about eight o'clock, in twenty-three fathoms water.

Immediately after we had anchored, we received a viſit from the maſter of the port, who aſked the ſhip's name. Upon his retiring, Captain Cook ſent an officer aſhore, to preſent his reſpects to the Governor, and

and aſk his permiſſion to take in water, and to purchaſe ſuch articles as were thought neceſſary. The Governor very politely complied with Captain Cook's requeſt, and ſent an officer on board to compliment him on his arrival. In the afternoon, Captain Cook waited upon him, accompanied by ſome of his officers, and, before he returned to the ſhip, beſpoke ſome corn and ſtraw, ordered a quantity of wine, and made an agreement for a ſupply of water.

The water to ſupply the ſhipping, and for the uſe of the inhabitants of Santa Cruz, is derived from a rivulet that runs from the hills, which is conveyed into the town in wooden troughs. As theſe troughs were at this time repairing, freſh water was extremely ſcarce.

From the appearance of the country about Santa Cruz, it might naturally be concluded that Teneriffe is a barren ſpot: we were convinced, however, from the ample ſupplies we received, that it not only produced ſufficient to ſupply its own inhabitants, but alſo enough to ſpare for viſitors.

Teneriffe is certainly a more eligible place than Madeira for ſhips to touch at which are bound on long voyages; but the wine of the latter is infinitely ſuperior to that of the former.

Behind the town of Santa Cruz, the country riſes gradually to a moderate height; afterwards it continues to riſe ſouth weſtward towards the celebrated pic of Teneriffe.

The iſland, eaſtward of Santa Cruz, appears perfectly barren. Ridges of high hills run towards the ſea, between which are deep vallies, terminating at mountains that run acroſs and are higher than the former.

On the 1ſt of Auguſt, in the afternoon, Mr. Anderſon (Captain Cook's ſurgeon) went on ſhore to one of theſe vallies, intending to reach the top of the remoter hills, but time would not permit him to get farther than their foot. The lower hills produce great quantities of the *euphorbia canarienſis*.

Santa Cruz, though not large, is a well-built city. Their churches have not a magnificent appearance without, but they are decent and tolerably handſome within.

Almoſt facing the ſtone pier, which runs into the ſea from the town, is a marble column, lately erected, enriched with human figures which reflect honour to the ſtatuary.

On the 2d of Auguſt, in the afternoon, Mr. Anderſon and three others hired mules to ride to the city of Laguna, about the diſtance of four miles from Santa Cruz. They arrived there between five and ſix in the evening; but the ſight of it did not reward them for their trouble, as the roads were very bad, and their cattle but indifferent. Though the place is extenſive, it hardly deſerves to be dignified with the name of a city. There are ſome good houſes, but the diſpoſition of the ſtreets is very irregular. Laguna is larger than Santa Cruz, but much inferior to it in appearance.

The laborious work in this iſland is chiefly performed by mules, horſes being ſcarce, and reſerved for the uſe of the officers. Oxen are alſo much employed here. Some hawks and parrots were ſeen, which were natives of the iſland; as alſo the ſea-ſwallow, ſea-gulls, partridges, ſwallows, canary-birds, and blackbirds. There are alſo lizards, locuſts, and three or four ſorts of dragon flies.

The air and climate are remarkably healthful, and particularly adapted to afford relief in phthiſical complaints. By reſiding at different heights in the iſland, it is in the power of any one to procure ſuch a temperature of air as may be beſt ſuited to his conſtitution. He may continue where it is mild and ſalubrious, or he may aſcend till the cold becomes intolerable. No perſon, it is ſaid, can live comfortably within a mile of the perpendicular height of the pic after the month of Auguſt.

Smoke continually iſſues from near the top of the pic, but they have had no earthquake or eruption ſince 1704, when the port of Garrachica was deſtroyed, being

being filled up by the rivers of burning lava that flowed into it; and houſes are now built where ſhips formerly lay at anchor.

The trade of Teneriffe is very conſiderable, forty thouſand pipes of wine being annually made there; which is conſumed in the iſland, or made into brandy, and ſent to the Spaniſh Weſt Indies. Indeed, the wine is the only conſiderable article of the foreign commerce of Teneriffe, unleſs we reckon the large quantities of filtering ſtones brought from Grand Canary.

The race of inhabitants found here when the Spaniards diſcovered the Canaries are no longer a diſtinct people, having intermarried with the Spaniſh ſettlers; their deſcendants, however, may be known, from their being remarkably tall, ſtrong, and large boned. The men are tawny, and the women are pale. The inhabitants, in general, of Teneriffe, are decent, grave, and civil; retaining that ſolemn caſt which diſtinguiſhes thoſe of their country from others. Though we are not of opinion that our manners are ſimilar to thoſe of the Spaniards, yet Omai declared, he did not think there was much difference. He ſaid, indeed, that they did not appear to be ſo friendly as the Engliſh, and that their perſons nearly reſembled thoſe of his countrymen.

Having got our water and other articles on board, we weighed anchor on the 4th of Auguſt, quitted Teneriffe, and proceeded on our voyage.

On the 10th, at nine o'clock in the evening, we ſaw the iſland of Bonaviſta bearing ſouth, diſtant about a league; though we then thought ourſelves much farther off, but it ſoon appeared that we were miſtaken; for, after hauling to the eaſtward, to clear the ſunken rocks that lie near the ſouth-eaſt point of the iſland, we found ourſelves cloſe upon them, and barely weathered the breakers. Our ſituation was for ſome minutes ſo very alarming, that Captain Cook did not chuſe to ſound, as that might have increaſed the danger, without any poſſibility of leſſening it.

Having cleared the rocks, we ſteered between Bonaviſta and the iſland of Mayo, intending to look into Port Praya for the Diſcovery, as Captain Cook had told Captain Clerke that he ſhould touch there.

On Monday the 12th, the iſle of Mayo bore ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, diſtant four or five leagues. We ſounded, and found ground at ſixty fathoms. At the diſtance of three or four miles from this iſland, we ſaw not the leaſt appearance of vegetation; nothing preſented itſelf to our view, but that lifeleſs brown, ſo common in unwooded countries under the torrid zone.

On the 13th we arrived before Port Praya, in the iſland of St. Jago; but the Diſcovery not being there, we did not go in, but ſtood to the ſouthward. Between the latitude of 12° and of 7° north, the weather was very gloomy, and frequently rainy; inſomuch, that we were enabled to ſave as much water as filled the greateſt part of our empty caſks.

Our ſhip, at this time, was very leaky in all her upper works. The ſultry weather had opened her ſeams ſo wide, that the rain-water paſſed through as it fell. The officers in the gun-room were driven from their cabins by the water that came through the ſides, and hardly a man could lie dry in his bed. The caulkers were employed to repair theſe defects, as ſoon as we got into fair ſettled weather; but Captain Cook would not truſt them over the ſides while we were at ſea.

On the 1ſt of September we croſſed the equator, in the longitude of 27° 38′ weſt, and paſſed the afternoon in performing the old ceremony of ducking thoſe who had not croſſed the equator before. On the 8th we were a little to the ſouthward of Cape St. Auguſtine. We proceeded on our voyage, without any remarkable occurrence, till the 8th of October.

In the evening of the 8th, a bird, which the ſailors call a noddy, ſettled on our rigging, and was taken. It was larger than a common Engliſh blackbird, and nearly of the ſame colour, except the upper part of the head,

head, which was white: it was web-footed, had black legs and a long black bill.

On the 17th we saw the Cape of Good Hope, and, on the 18th, anchored in Table-bay, in four fathoms water. After receiving the usual visit from the Master-attendant and the Surgeon, Captain Cook sent an officer to Baron Plettenberg, the Governor, and saluted the garrison with thirteen guns, and was complimented in return with the same number.

After having saluted, Captain Cook went on shore, accompanied by some of his officers, and waited on the Governor, the Lieutenant-governor, the Fiscal, and the Commander of the troops. These gentlemen received Captain Cook with the greatest civility; and the Governor, in particular, voluntarily promised him every assistance that the place afforded. Before Captain Cook returned on board, he ordered fresh meat, greens, &c. to be provided every day for the ship's company.

On the 22d we fixed our tents and observatory; the next day we began to observe equal altitudes of the sun, in order to discover whether the watch had altered its rate. The caulkers were set to work to caulk the ship; and Captain Cook had concerted measures for supplying both ships with such provisions as were wanted; and, as the several articles for the Resolution were got ready, they were immediately conveyed on board.

On the 10th of November the Discovery arrived in the bay. She sailed from Plymouth on the 1st of August, and would have been with us a week sooner had not a gale of wind blown her off the coast. Captain Clerke on his passage from England lost one of his marines by falling over board. No other accident happened among his people, and they arrived in perfect health.

The next day, the Discovery wanting caulking, Captain Cook sent all his workmen on board her, and lent every other assistance to the Captain to expedite his supply of provisions and water.

While the ſhips were preparing for the proſecution of our voyage, Mr. Anderſon, and ſome of our officers, made an excurſion, to take a ſurvey of the neighbouring country. Mr. Anderſon relates their proceedings to the following effect:

In the forenoon of Saturday, the 16th of November, he and five others ſet out in a waggon to take a view of the country. They croſſed the large plain to the eaſtward of the town, which is entirely a white ſand. At five in the afternoon they paſſed a large farm-houſe, ſome corn-fields and vineyards, ſituated beyond the plain, where the ſoil appeared worth cultivating. At ſeven they arrived at Stellenboſh, a colony in point of importance next to that of the Cape.

The village ſtands at the foot of the range of lofty mountains, about twenty miles to the eaſtward of Cape Town, and conſiſts of about thirty houſes, which are neat and clean: a rivulet, and the ſhelter of ſome large oaks planted at its firſt ſettling, form a rural proſpect in this deſert country. There are ſome thriving vineyards and orchards about the place, which ſeem to indicate an excellent ſoil.

At this ſeaſon of the year, Mr. Anderſon could find but few plants in flower, and inſects were very ſcarce. He and his companions left Stellenboſh the next morning, and ſoon arrived at the houſe they had paſſed on Saturday; Mr. Cloeder, the owner of which, having ſent them an invitation to viſit him, they were entertained by this gentleman with great politeneſs and hoſpitality. They were received with a band of muſic, which continued playing while they were at dinner, which in that ſituation might be reckoned elegant.

In the evening they arrived at a farm-houſe, which is ſaid to be the firſt in the cultivated tract called the *Pearl*. Here they had a view of Drakenſtein, the third colony of this country, which contains ſeveral little farms or plantations.

Plants and inſects were as ſcarce here as at Stellenboſh; but there was a greater plenty of ſhrubs, or ſmall trees,

trees, naturally produced, than they had before seen in the country.

On Tuesday the 19th, in the afternoon, they went to see a remarkable large stone, called by the inhabitants, the Tower of Babylon, or the Pearl Diamond. It stands upon the top of some low hills, and is of an oblong shape, rounded on the top, and lying nearly south and north. The east and west sides are nearly perpendicular. The south end is not equally steep, but its greatest height is there; whence it declines gently to the north-part, by which they ascended, and had a very extensive prospect of the whole country.

The circumference of this stone is about half a mile, as they were half an hour walking round it, including allowances for stopping and a bad road. Its height seems to equal the dome of St. Paul's church. Except some few fissures, it is one uninterrupted mass of stone.

On the 20th, in the morning, they set out from the Pearl, and, going a different road, passed through an uncultivated country to the Tyger hills, where they beheld some tolerable corn-fields. About noon they stopped in a valley for refreshment, where they were plagued with a vast number of musquitoes, and in the evening arrived at the Cape Town.

Captain Cook got his sheep and other cattle on board as soon as possible. He also increased his stock by purchasing two bulls, two heifers, two stone-horses, two mares, two rams, some ewes and goats, some poultry, and some rabbits.

Both ships being supplied with provisions and water sufficient for two years and upwards, and every other necessary article, and Captain Cook having given Captain Clerke a copy of his instructions, we repaired on board in the morning of the 30th. At three o'clock the next morning, we weighed and put to sea with a light breeze at south, but did not get clear of land till the 3d of December in the morning.

On the evening of the 6th, being then in the latitude of 39° 14′ south, and in the longitude of 23° 56′ east, we observed several spots of water of a reddish hue.

Upon examining ſome of this water that was taken up, we perceived a number of ſmall animals, which the microſcope diſcovered to reſemble cray-fiſh.

We continued to the ſouth-eaſt, followed by a mountainous ſea, which occaſioned the ſhip to roll exceedingly, and rendered our cattle troubleſome. Several goats, eſpecially the males, died, and ſome ſheep. We now began to feel the cold in a very ſenſible degree.

On Thurſday the 12th at noon, we diſcovered two iſlands. That which lies moſt to the ſouth appeared to be about fifteen leagues in circuit; and the moſt northerly one, about nine leagues in circuit.

We paſſed at equal diſtance from both iſlands, and could not diſcover either tree or ſhrub on either of them. They ſeemed to have a rocky ſhore, and excepting the ſouth-eaſt parts, a ridge of barren mountains, whoſe ſides and ſummits were covered with ſnow. Captain Cook named theſe two iſlands Prince Edward's iſlands.

We had now, in general, ſtrong gales, and very indifferent weather. After leaving Prince Edward's Iſlands, we ſhaped our courſe to paſs to the ſouthward of the four others, to get into the latitude of the land diſcovered by Monſieur de Kerguelen.

Captain Cook had received inſtructions to examine this iſland, and endeavour to diſcover a good harbour. The weather was now very foggy, and as we hourly expected to fall in with the land, our navigation was both dangerous and tedious.

On the 24th, the fog clearing away a little, we ſaw land, which we afterwards found to be an iſland of conſiderable height, and about three leagues in circuit. We ſoon after diſcovered another of equal magnitude, about one league to the eaſtward; and between theſe two, ſome ſmaller ones. In the direction of ſouth by eaſt another high iſland was ſeen. We did but juſt weather the iſland laſt mentioned; it was a high round rock, named Bligh's Cap. The weather beginning to clear up about eleven, we tacked, and ſteered in for the

the land. At noon we were enabled to determine the latitude of Bligh's Cap to be 48° 29′ ſouth, and its longitude 68° 40′. We paſſed it at three o'clock, with a freſh gale at weſt. Preſently after we clearly ſaw the land, and at four o'clock it extended from ſouth-eaſt to ſouth-weſt by ſouth, diſtant about four miles.

Having got off the Cape, we obſerved the coaſt to the ſouthward much indented by points and bays, and therefore fully expected to find a good harbour. — We ſoon diſcovered one, into which we began to ply; but it preſently fell calm, and we anchored in forty-five fathoms water; the Diſcovery alſo anchored there ſoon after. Mr. Bligh, the maſter, was ordered to ſound the harbour, who reported it to be ſafe and commodious.

Early in the morning of the 25th we weighed, and having wrought into the harbour, we anchored in eight fathoms water. The Diſcovery got in at two o'clock in the afternoon; when Captain Clerke informed us, that he had with difficulty eſcaped being driven on the ſouth point of the harbour, his anchor having ſtarted before he could ſhorten in the cable.

Immediately after we had anchored, Captain Cook ordered all the boats to be hoiſted out, and the empty water-caſks to be got ready. In the mean time he landed, to ſearch for a convenient ſpot where they might be filled, and to obſerve what the place afforded.

He found vaſt quantities of penguins, and other birds, and ſeals on the ſhore. The latter were not numerous, but ſo inſenſible of fear that we killed as many as we choſe, and made uſe of their fat and blubber to make oil for our lamps and other purpoſes. Freſh water was exceedingly plentiful, but not a ſingle tree or ſhrub was to be diſcovered, and but little herbage of any kind.

Before Captain Cook returned to his ſhip, he aſcended a ridge of rocks, riſing one above another, expecting by that means to obtain a view of the country; but before he had reached the top, ſo thick a fog came

came on, that it was with difficulty he could find his way down again. Towards the evening we hauled the ſeine at the head of the harbour, but caught no more than half a dozen ſmall fiſh; nor had we any better ſucceſs the next day, when we tried with hook and line. Our only reſource, therefore, for freſh proviſions, was birds, which were innumerable.

Though it was both foggy and rainy on Thurſday the 26th, we began to fill water, and to cut graſs for our cattle, which we found near the head of the harbour. The rivulets were ſwelled to ſuch a degree by the rain that fell, that the ſides of the hills bounding the harbour, appeared to be covered with a ſheet of water.

The people having laboured hard for two ſucceſſive days, and nearly completed our water, Captain Cook allowed them the 27th of December as a day of reſt, to celebrate Chriſtmas. In conſequence of which, many of them went on ſhore and made excurſions into the country, which they found deſolate and barren in the extreme. In the evening one of them preſented a quart bottle to Captain Cook, which he had found on the north-ſide of the harbour, faſtened with ſome wire to a projecting rock. This bottle contained a piece of parchment, with the following inſcription:

Ludovico XV. Galliarum
rege, et d de Boynes*
regi a Secretis ad res
maritimas annis 1772 *et*
1773.

It is evident from this inſcription, that we were not the firſt Europeans who had viſited this harbour: and, as a memorial of our having been in this harbour, Captain Cook wrote on the other ſide of the parchment,

Naves Reſolution
et Diſcovery,
de Rege Magnæ Britanniæ,
Decembris 1776.

He

* The *d* is probably a contraction of the word *domino*.

He then put it again into the bottle, accompanied with a ſilver two-penny piece of 1772, covered the mouth of the bottle with a leaden cap, and placed it the next morning in a pile of ſtones erected for that purpoſe on an eminence, near the place where it was firſt found. Here Captain Cook diſplayed the Britiſh flag, and named the place *Chriſtmas Harbour*, it being on that feſtival we arrived in it.

In the afternoon, Captain Cook, accompanied by Mr. King, his Second Lieutenant, went upon Cape François; expecting from this elevation to have had a view of the ſea-coaſt and the iſlands lying off it: but they found every diſtant object below them hid in a thick fog. The land even with them, or of a greater height, was viſible enough, and appeared exceedingly naked and deſolate, except ſome hills to the ſouthward which were covered with ſnow.

On the 29th of December we ſailed out of Chriſtmas Harbour with a fine breeze and clear weather. This was unexpected, as, for ſome time paſt, fogs had prevailed more or leſs every day. Though we kept the lead conſtantly going, we ſeldom ſtruck ground with a line of ſixty fathoms.

We were off a promontory, which Captain Cook called Cape Cumberland, about ſeven or eight o'clock. It lies about a league and an half from the ſouth point of Chriſtmas Harbour; between them is a good bay. Off Cape Cumberland is a ſmall iſland, on the ſummit of which is a rock reſembling a ſentry-box, which name was given to the iſland on that account. A group of ſmall iſlands and rocks lies two miles farther to the eaſtward: we ſailed between theſe and Sentry-box iſland, the breadth of the channel being full a mile. We found no bottom with forty fathoms of line.

After paſſing through this channel, we ſaw a bay on the ſouth-ſide of Cape Cumberland, running in three leagues to the weſtward. Captain Cook named this promontory Point Pringle. The bottom of this bay we called Cumberland Bay.

The

The coaſt is formed into a fifth bay, to the ſouthward of Point Pringle. In this bay which obtained the name of White Bay, are ſeveral leſſer bays or coves, which appeared to be ſheltered from all winds. Off the ſouth-point, ſeveral rocks raiſe their heads above water, and probably there are many others that do not.

The land which firſt opened off Cape François, in the direction of ſouth 53° eaſt, we had kept on our larboard-bow, thinking it was an iſland, and that we ſhould diſcover a paſſage between that and the main; but we found it to be a peninſula, joined to the reſt of the coaſt by a low iſthmus. The bay formed by this peninſula, Captain Cook named Repulſe Bay. The northern point of the peninſula was named Howe's Foreland, in honour of Lord Howe.

Drawing near it, we obſerved ſome rocks and breakers not far from the north-weſt part, and two iſlands to the eaſtward of it, which at firſt appeared as one. We ſteered between them and the foreland, and were in the middle of the channel by twelve o'clock. The land of this foreland or peninſula is of a tolerable height, and of a hilly and rocky ſubſtance. The coaſt is low, and almoſt covered with ſea-birds.

Having cleared the rocks and iſlands before mentioned, we perceived the whole ſea before us to be checquered with large beds of rock-weed, which was faſt to the bottom. There is often found a great depth of water upon ſuch ſhoals, and rocks have as often raiſed their heads almoſt to the ſurface of the water. It is always dangerous to ſail over them, eſpecially when there is no ſurge of the ſea to diſcover the danger. We endeavoured to avoid the rocks by ſteering through the winding channels by which they were ſeparated. Though the lead was continually going, we never ſtruck ground with a line of ſixty fathoms: this increaſed the danger, as we could not anchor however urgent the neceſſity might be. At length we diſcovered a lurking rock, in the middle of one of theſe beds of weeds, and even with the ſurface of the

ſea.

ſea. This was ſufficiently alarming to make us take every precaution to avoid danger.

We were now about eight miles to the ſouthward of Howe's Foreland, acroſs the mouth of a large bay. In this bay are ſeveral rocks, low iſlands, and beds of ſea-weed; but there appeared to be winding channels between them. We were ſo much embarraſſed with theſe ſhoals, that we hauled off to the eaſtward, in hopes of extricating ourſelves from our difficulties; but this plunged us into greater, and we found it abſolutely neceſſary to ſecure the ſhips if poſſible, before night, eſpecially as the weather was hazy, and a fog was apprehended.

Seeing ſome inlets to the ſouth-weſt, Captain Cook ordered Captain Clerke (the Diſcovery drawing leſs water than the Reſolution) to lead in for the ſhore, which was immediately attempted: after running over the edges of ſeveral ſhoals, on which was found from ten to twenty fathoms water, Captain Clerke made the ſignal for having diſcovered an harbour, in which we anchored in fifteen fathoms water, about five o'clock in the evening.

As ſoon as we had anchored, Captain Cook ordered two boats to be hoiſted out to ſurvey the upper part of the harbour and look out for wood.

When they landed, from an hill over the point, they had a view of the ſea-coaſt, as far as Howe's Foreland. Several ſmall iſlands, rocks, and breakers were ſcattered along the coaſt, and there appeared no better channel to get out of the harbour than that by which they had entered it.

At nine o'clock the boats got on board, and Mr. Bligh reported, that he had been four miles up the harbour; that its direction was weſt ſouth-weſt; that its breadth near the ſhips did not exceed a mile; that the ſoundings were from thirty-ſeven to ten fathoms; and that, having landed on both ſhores, he found the land barren and rocky, without a tree or ſhrub, or hardly any appearance of verdure.

The

The next morning we weighed anchor and put out to ſea. This harbour was named Port Palliſer. Having got three or four leagues from the coaſt, we found a clear ſea, and about nine o'clock, diſcovered a round hill, like a ſugar-loaf, and a ſmall iſland to the northward of it, diſtant about four leagues. Captain Cook named the ſugar-loaf hill Mount Campbell.

The land here in general, is low and level. The mountains end about five leagues from the low point, leaving a great extent of low land, on which Mount Campbell is ſituated. Theſe mountains ſeem to be compoſed of naked rocks, whoſe ſummits were covered with ſnow; and nothing but ſterility was to be ſeen in the vallies.

At noon we perceived low land, opening off the low point juſt mentioned, in the direction of ſouth ſouth-eaſt. It proved to be the eaſtern extremity of this land, and was named Cape Digby. Between Howe's Foreland and Cape Digby, the ſhore forms one great bay, extending ſeveral leagues to the ſouth-weſt.

At one o'clock, ſeeing a ſmall bending in the coaſt, on the north ſide of Cape Digby, we ſteered for it, with an intention to anchor there; but, being diſappointed in our views, we puſhed forward, in order to ſee as much as poſſible of the coaſt before night. From Cape Digby it tends nearly ſouth-weſt by ſouth to a low point, to which Captain Cook gave the name of Point Charlotte, in honour of our amiable Queen.

In the direction of ſouth ſouth-weſt, about ſix leagues from Cape Digby, is a pretty high projecting point, called the Prince of Wales's Foreland; and ſix leagues beyond that, in the ſame direction, is the moſt ſoutherly point of the whole coaſt, which, in honour of His Majeſty, was diſtinguiſhed by the name of Cape George.

Between Point Charlotte, and the Prince of Wales's Foreland, we diſcovered a deep inlet which, was called Royal Sound. On the ſouth-weſt ſide of the Royal Sound, all the land to Cape George conſiſts of elevated

vated hills, gradually rising from the sea to a considerable height; they were naked and barren, and their summits capt with snow. Not a vestige of a tree or shrub was to be seen. Some of the low land about Cape Digby seemed to be covered with a green turf, but a considerable part of it appeared quite naked. Penguins, and other oceanic birds were numerous on the beaches, and shags innumerable kept flying about our ships.

Desirous of getting the length of Cape George, Captain Cook continued to stretch to the south, till between seven and eight o'clock, when seeing no probability of accomplishing his design, he took the advantage of the wind, which had shifted to west south-west (the direction in which we wanted to go) and stood from the coast.

The French discoverers imagined Cape François to be the projecting point of a southern continent. The English have discovered that no such continent exists, and that the land in question is an island of small extent; which, from its sterility, might properly be called the Island of Desolation; but Captain Cook was unwilling to rob Monsieur de Kerguelen of the honour of its bearing his name.

Mr. Anderson, who during the short time we lay in Christmas Harbour, lost no opportunity of searching the country in every direction, relates the following particulars.

No place (says he) hitherto discovered in either hemisphere affords so scanty a field for the naturalist as this steril spot. Some verdure, indeed, appeared, when at a small distance from the shore, which might raise the expectation of meeting with a little herbage; but all this lively appearance was occasioned by one small plant resembling saxifrage, which grew up the hills in large spreading tufts, on a kind of rotten turf, which, if dried, might serve for fuel, and was the only thing seen here that could possibly be applied to that purpose.

Another plant, which grew to near the height of two feet, was pretty plentifully scattered about the boggy

boggy declivities; it had the appearance of a ſmall cabbage when it was ſhot into ſeeds. It had the watery acrid taſte of the antiſcorbutic plants, though it materially differed from the whole tribe.

Near the brooks and boggy places were found two other ſmall plants, which were eaten as ſallad; the one like garden creſſes, and very hot, and the other very mild: the latter is a curioſity, having not only male and female, but alſo androgynus plants.

Some coarſe graſs grew pretty plentifully in a few ſmall ſpots near the harbour, which was cut down for our cattle. In ſhort, the whole catalogue of plants did not exceed eighteen, including a beautiful ſpecies of lichen, and ſeveral ſorts of moſs; nor was there the appearance of a tree or ſhrub in the whole country.

Among the animals, the moſt conſiderable were ſeals, which were diſtinguiſhed by the name of ſea-bears, being the ſort that are called the urſine ſeal. They come on ſhore to repoſe and breed. At that time they were ſhedding their hair, and ſo remarkably tame, that there was no difficulty in killing them.

No other quadruped was ſeen; but a great number of oceanic birds, as ducks, ſhags, petrels, &c. The ducks were ſomewhat like a widgeon, both in ſize and figure; a conſiderable number of them were killed and eaten: they were excellent food, and had not the leaſt fiſhy taſte.

The Cape petrel, the ſmall blue one, and the ſmall black one, or Mother Cary's chicken, were not in plenty here: but another ſort, which is the largeſt of the petrels, and called by the ſeamen, Mother Carey's gooſe, is found in abundance. This petrel is as large as an albatroſs, and is carniverous, feeding on the dead carcaſes of ſeals, birds, &c.

The greateſt number of birds here were penguins, which conſiſt of three ſorts. The head of the largeſt is black, the upper part of the body of a leaden-grey, the under part white, and the feet black; two broad ſtripes of fine yellow deſcend from the head to the breaſt; the bill is of a reddiſh colour, and longer than in

the other ſorts. The ſecond ſort is about half the ze of the former. It is of a blackiſh grey on the up-er part of the body, and has a white ſpot on the upper art of the head. The bill and feet are yellowiſh. In he third ſort, the upper part of the body and throat e black, the reſt white, except the top of the head, hich is ornamented with a fine yellow arch, which it an erect as two creſts.

The ſhags here were of two ſorts, viz. the leſſer cor-orant, or water-crow, and another with a blackiſh ack and a white belly. The ſea-ſwallow, the tern, he common ſea-gull, and the Port Egmont hen, were lſo found here. The only ſhell-fiſh we ſaw here ere a few limpets and muſcles. Many of the hills, otwithſtanding they were of a moderate height, were t that time covered with ſnow, though anſwering to ur June.

Captain Cook intending to proceed next to New-ealand, to take in wood and water, and provide hay or the cattle, ſteered eaſt by north from Kerguelen's and. The 31ſt of December, our longitude, by ob-ervation of the ſun and moon, was 72° 33′ 31″ eaſt; nd on the firſt day of the year 1777, we were in the atitude of 48° 41′ ſouth, longitude 76° 50′ eaſt. On he 7th, Captain Cook diſpatched a boat with orders to aptain Clerke, fixing their rendezvous at Adventure ay, in Van Diemen's Land, if the ſhips ſhould hap-en to ſeparate before they arrived there; however, we ad the good fortune not to loſe company with each ther.

On the 19th, a ſudden ſquall carried away the Re-olution's fore-top-maſt and main-top-gallant-maſt, hich occaſioned ſome delay in fitting another top-maſt. The former was repaired without the loſs of ny part of it. The wind ſtill remaining at the weſt oint, we had clear weather, and on the 24th, in the orning, we diſcovered the coaſt of Van Diemen's and. Several iſlands and elevated rocks lie diſperſed long the coaſt, the moſt ſoutherly of which is the ewſtone. Our latitude at noon was 43° 47′ ſouth,

lon-

longitude 147° eaſt, the ſouth-eaſt or ſouth cape being near three leagues diſtant. Captain Cook gave the name of the Eddyſtone to a rock that lies about a league to the eaſtward of Swilly Iſle, or Rock, on account of its ſtriking reſemblance to Eddyſtone lighthouſe. Theſe two rocks may, even in the night, be ſeen at a conſiderable diſtance, and are the ſummits of a ledge of rocks under water.

The 26th, at noon, a breeze ſprung up at ſouth-eaſt, which gave Captain Cook an opportunity of executing his deſign of carrying the ſhips into Adventure Bay, where we anchored at four o'clock in the afternoon in twelve fathoms water, about three quarters of a mile from the ſhore. The Captains Cook and Clerke then went, in ſeparate boats, in ſearch of convenient ſpots for wooding, watering, and making hay. They found plenty of wood and water, but very little graſs. The next morning Captain Cook detached two parties, under the conduct of Lieutenant King, to the eaſt ſide of the bay, to cut wood and graſs, ſome marines attending them as a guard, though none of the natives had yet appeared. He alſo ſent the launch to provide water for the ſhips, and afterwards paid a viſit to the parties thus employed.

In the evening we caught a great quantity of fiſh, with which this bay abounds; and we ſhould have procured more if our net had not broken. Every one now came on board with the ſupplies they had obtained: but next morning, the wind not being fair for ſailing, they were again ſent on ſhore on the ſame duty, and Mr. Roberts, one of the Mates, was diſpatched in a boat to examine the bay. We had obſerved columns of ſmoke in different parts, from the time of our approaching the coaſt; but we ſaw none of the natives till the afternoon of the 28th, when eight men and a boy ſurpriſed us with a viſit at our wooding-place. They approached us with the greateſt confidence, none of them having any weapons except one, who had a ſhort ſtick pointed at one end. They were of a middling ſtature, and ſomewhat ſlender; their hair was black

black and woolly, and their ſkin was alſo black. They were entirely naked, with large punctures or ridges, ſome in curved, and others in ſtraight lines, on different parts of their bodies. Their lips were not remarkably thick, nor their noſes very flat; their features, on the contrary, were not unpleaſing, their eyes pretty good, and their teeth tolerably even and regular, though exceedingly dirty. The faces of ſome of them were painted with a red ointment, and moſt of them ſmeared their hair and beards with the ſame compoſition. When we offered them preſents, they received them without any apparent ſatisfaction. They either returned or threw away ſome bread that was given them without even taſting it; they likewiſe refuſed ſome elephant fiſh: but when we gave them ſome birds, they kept them. Two pigs having been brought on ſhore to be left in the woods, they ſeized them by the ears, and ſeemed inclined to carry them off, with an intention, as we ſuppoſed, of killing them.

Captain Cook wiſhing to know the uſe of the ſtick which one of the ſavages held in his hand, made ſigns to them to ſhew him; upon which one of them took aim at a piece of wood placed as a mark, about the diſtance of twenty yards, but after ſeveral eſſays he was ſtill wide of the mark. Omai, to ſhew the great ſuperiority of our weapons, immediately fired his muſquet at it, which unexpected noiſe ſo alarmed them, that they ran into the woods with uncommon ſpeed; and one of them was ſo terrified, that he let fall two knives and an axe which he had received from us. They then went to the place where the crew of the Diſcovery were watering; but the officer of that party firing a muſquet in the air, they fled with great precipitation.

Immediately after they had retired, Captain Cook ordered the two pigs, one a male and the other a female, to be carried about a mile within the woods, and he himſelf ſaw them left there, taking care that none of the natives ſhould obſerve what was paſſing. He alſo intended to have left a young bull and a cow, be-

ſides ſome goats and ſheep; but he ſoon relinquiſhed that deſign, being of opinion that the natives would deſtroy them, which he ſuppoſed would be the fate of the pigs, if they ſhould chance to find them out: but as ſwine ſoon become wild, and are fond of being in the woods, it is probable that they were preſerved. The other cattle could not have remained long concealed from the ſavages, as they muſt have been put into an open place.

We were prevented from ſailing on the 29th by a dead calm, which continued the whole day. Captain Cook, therefore, ſent parties on ſhore to cut wood and graſs, as uſual, and he accompanied the wooding party himſelf. Soon after our landing, about twenty of them joined us, one of whom was diſtinguiſhed not only by his deformity, but by the drollery of his geſticulations, and the ſeeming humour of his ſpeeches, which, however, we could not underſtand. Thoſe whom we now ſaw differed in ſome reſpects, particularly in the texture of the hair, from the natives of the more northerly parts of this country, whom Captain Cook met with in his firſt voyage. Some of our preſent company had a ſlip of the kangooroo ſkin round their ancles, and others wore round their necks ſome ſmall cord, made of fur. They ſeemed not to value iron, but were apparently pleaſed with the medals and beads that were given them. They did not even appear to know the uſe of fiſh-hooks, though it is more than probable, that they were acquainted with ſome method of catching fiſh.

Their habitations were ſmall hovels or ſheds built of ſticks, and covered with the bark of trees. We had alſo good reaſon to ſuppoſe, that they ſometimes took up their reſidence in the trunks of large trees, hallowed out by fire.

Captain Cook, on leaving the wooding party, went to the graſs-cutters, and having ſeen the boats loaded with hay, returned on board. He had juſt quitted the ſhore, when ſeveral women and children appeared, and were introduced to Lieutenant King by the men who accom-

companied them. Their bodies were black, and marked with ſcars like thoſe of the men; from whom, however, they differed, in having their heads ſhaved; ſome of them being completely ſhorn, others only on one ſide, while the reſt of them had the upper part of their heads ſhaved, leaving a very narrow circle of hair all round.

In the afternoon Captain Cook went again on ſhore, and found the graſs-cutters on Penguin Iſland, where they had met with excellent graſs in the greateſt abundance. The different parties laboured hard till the evening, and then, having provided a ſufficient quantity of what was moſt wanted, returned on board.

Mr. Anderſon, Surgeon of the Reſolution, employed himſelf in examining the country during our continuance in Adventure Bay. His remarks on the inhabitants, and his account of the natural productions of the country, are to the following purport. There is a beautiful ſandy beach, about two miles long, at the bottom of Adventure Bay, formed to all appearance by the particles which the ſea waſhes from a fine white ſand-ſtone. This beach is very well adapted for hauling a ſeine. Behind it is a plain, with a brackiſh lake, out of which we caught, by angling, ſome bream and trout. The parts adjoining the bay are moſtly hilly, and are an entire foreſt of tall trees, rendered almoſt impaſſable by brakes of fern, ſhrubs, &c. The ſoil on the flat land, and on the lower part of the hills, is ſandy, or conſiſts of a yellowiſh earth, and in ſome parts of a reddiſh clay; but farther up the hills it is of a grey tough caſt. This country, upon the whole, bears many marks of being very dry, and the heat appears to be great. No mineral bodies, nor ſtones of any other kind than the white ſand ſtone, were obſerved by us; nor could we find any vegetables that afforded ſubſiſtence for man. The foreſt-trees are all of one kind, and generally quite ſtraight; they bear cluſters of ſmall white flowers. The principal plants we obſerved were wood-ſorrel, milk-wort, cudweed, bell-flower, gladiolus, ſamphire, and ſeveral kinds of

 fern.

ſern. The only quadruped we ſaw diſtinctly was a ſpecies of opoſſum, about twice the ſize of a large rat.

The principal ſorts of birds in the woods are brown hawks or eagles, crows, large pigeons, yellowiſh paroquets, and a ſpecies which we called *motacilla cyanea*, from the beautiful azure colour of its head and neck. On the ſhore were ſeveral gulls, black oyſter-catchers, or ſea-pies, and plover of a ſtone-colour.

We obſerved in the woods ſome blackiſh ſnakes that were pretty large, and we killed a lizard which was fifteen inches long and ſix round, beautifully clouded with yellow and black.

Among a variety of fiſh we caught ſome large rays, nurſes, leather-jackets, breams, ſoles, flounders, gurnards, and elephant-fiſh. Upon the rocks are muſcles and other ſhell-fiſh; and upon the beach we found ſome pretty Meduſa's heads. The moſt troubleſome inſects we met with were the muſquitoes, and a large black ant, whoſe bite inflicts extreme pain.

The inhabitants ſeemed mild and chearful, with little of that wild appearance that ſavages in general have. They are almoſt totally devoid of perſonal activity or genius, and are nearly upon a par with the wretched natives of Terra del Fuego. They diſplay, however, ſome contrivance in their method of cutting their arms and bodies in lines of different directions, raiſed above the ſurface of the ſkin. Their indifference for our preſents, their general inattention, and want of curioſity, were very remarkable, and teſtified no acuteneſs of underſtanding. Their complexion is a dull black, which they ſometimes heighten by smutting their bodies. Their hair is perfectly woolly, and is clotted with greaſe and red ochre, like that of the Hottentots. Their noſes are broad and full, and the lower part of the face projects conſiderably. Their eyes are of a moderate ſize, and though they are not very quick or piercing, they give the countenance a frank, chearful, and pleaſing caſt. Their teeth are not very white nor well ſet, and their mouths are wide; they wear their beards long, and clotted with paint.

They

They are upon the whole well proportioned, though their belly is rather protuberant. Their favourite attitude is to ſtand with one ſide forward, and one hand raſping, acroſs the back, the oppoſite arm, which, in this occaſion, hangs down by the ſide that projects.

Near the ſhore, in the bay, we obſerved ſome wretched conſtructions of ſticks covered with bark; but theſe ſeemed to have been only temporary, and they had converted many of their largeſt trees into more comfortable and commodious habitations. The trunks of theſe were hollowed out to the height of ſix or ſeven feet, by means of fire. Theſe places of ſhelter are rendered durable, by their leaving one ſide of the tree ſound, ſo that it continues growing with great luxuriance.

That the natives of Van Diemen's Land originate from the ſame ſtock with thoſe who inhabit the northern parts of New Holland, ſeems evident. Though they differ in many reſpects, their diſſimilarity may be reaſonably accounted for, from the united conſiderations of diſtance of place, length of time, total ſeparation, and diverſity of climate.

On the 30th of January, in the morning, we weighed anchor with a light weſterly breeze, from Adventure Bay. In the night between the 6th and 7th of February, one of the Diſcovery's marines fell overboard and was drowned. On the 10th, in the afternoon, we deſcried the coaſt of New-Zealand, at the diſtance of eight or nine leagues. We then ſteered for Cape Farewell, and afterwards for Stephens's Iſlands; and in the morning of the 12th, anchored in Ship Cove, Queen Charlotte's Sound. We ſoon after landed many empty water-caſks, and cleared a place for two obſervatories. In the mean time ſeveral canoes came along ſide our ſhips; but very few of thoſe who were in them would venture on board. This ſhyneſs appeared the more extraordinary, as Captain Cook was well known to all of them; and as one man in particular among the preſent group had been treated by him with diſtinguiſhed kindneſs during a former

voyage. This man, however, could not by any means be prevailed on to come on board. We could only account for this reſerve, by ſuppoſing, that they were apprehenſive of our revenging the death of Captain Furneaux's people who had been killed here. But, upon Captain Cook's aſſuring them of the continuance of his friendſhip, and that he ſhould not moleſt them on that account, they ſoon laid aſide all appearance of ſuſpicion and diſtruſt. The next day we pitched two tents and erected the obſervatories, in which Meſſrs. King and Baily immediately commenced their aſtronomical operations. Two of our men were employed in brewing ſpruce beer, while others filled the water-caſks, collected graſs for the cattle, and cut wood. Thoſe who remained on board were occupied in repairing the rigging, and performing the neceſſary duty of the ſhips. A guard of marines was appointed for the protection of the different parties on ſhore, and arms were given to all the workmen, to repel all attacks from the natives, if they had been inclined to moleſt us, but this did not appear to be the caſe.

During the courſe of this day, many families came from various parts of the coaſt, and erected their huts cloſe to our encampment. The facility with which they build theſe temporary habitations, is remarkable. They have been ſeen to erect above twenty of them on a ſpot of ground, which was covered with plants and ſhrubs not an hour before. Captain Cook was preſent when a number of ſavages landed and built a village of this kind. They had no ſooner leaped from the canoes, than they tore up the ſhrubs and plants from the ground they had pitched upon, or put up ſome part of the framing of a hut. While the men were thus employed, the women took care of the canoes, ſecured the proviſions and utenſils, and gathered dry ſticks to ſerve as materials for a fire.

We received conſiderable advantage from the natives coming to live with us; for every day ſome of them were occupied in catching fiſh, a good ſtore of which we generally procured by exchanges. Beſides fiſh, we had other

any means
could only
t they were
of Captain
here. But,
continuance
holeſt them
pearance of
itched two
ich Meſſrs.
eir aſtrono-
nployed in
the water-
cut wood.
ied in re-
eſſary duty
pointed for
ſhore, and
pel all at-
nclined to
caſe.
ilies came
their huts
ith which
emarkable.
of them on
plants and
as preſent
a village
om the ca-
s from the
me part of
thus em-
s, ſecured
ſticks to

he natives
e of them
which we
n, we had
other

other refreſhments in abundance. Scurvy-graſs, celery, and portable ſoup were boiled every day with the wheat and peaſe, and we had ſpruce beer for our drink. Such a regimen ſoon removed all ſeeds of the ſcurvy from our people, if any of them had contracted it. But, indeed, on our arrival here, we had only two invalids in both ſhips.

We were occaſionally viſited by other natives, beſides thoſe who lived cloſe to us. Among our occaſional viſitors was a chief called Kahoora, who headed the party that cut off Captain Furneaux's people. He was far from being beloved by his countrymen, ſome of whom even importuned Captain Cook to kill him, at the ſame time expreſſing their diſapprobation of him in the ſevereſt terms. A ſtriking proof of the diviſions that prevail among theſe people occurred to us; for the inhabitants of each village, by turns, ſolicited our Commodore to deſtroy the other.

Captain Cook, on the 15th, went in a boat to ſearch for graſs, and viſited the hippah, or fortified village, at the ſouth-weſt point of the iſland of Motuara. He obſerved no inhabitants at this village, though there were evident marks of its having been lately occupied, the houſes and palliſadoes being in a ſtate of good repair. Not the ſmalleſt veſtige remained of the Engliſh garden-ſeeds which had been planted at this hippah in 1773, during Captain Cook's ſecond voyage. They had probably been all rooted out to make room for buildings; for at the other gardens then planted, we found radiſhes, onions, leeks, cabbages, purſlain, potatoes, &c. Though the natives of New Zealand are fond of the laſt-mentioned root, they had not planted a ſingle one, much leſs any of the other articles we had introduced among them.

Early in the morning of the 16th, the Captains Cook and Clerke, and ſeveral of the officers and ſailors, accompanied by Omai, and two New Zealanders, ſet out in five boats to collect fodder for the cattle.—Having proceeded about three leagues up the Sound,

they landed on the eaſt ſide, where they cut a ſufficient quantity of graſs to load the two launches. On their return down the Sound, they paid a viſit to Graſs Cove, the place where Captain Furneaux's people had been maſſacred. They here met with Captain Cook's old friend Pedro, who is mentioned by him in the hiſtory of his ſecond voyage. He, and another New Zealander, received them on the beach, armed with the ſpear and patoo, though not without manifeſt ſigns of fear. Their apprehenſions, however, were quickly diſſipated by a few preſents, which brought down to the ſhore two or three others of the family.

During the continuance of our party at this place, the Commodore, being deſirous of inquiring into the particular circumſtances relative to the maſſacre of our countrymen, fixed upon Omai as an interpreter for that purpoſe, as his language was a dialect of that of New Zealand. Pedro, and the other natives who were preſent, none of whom had been concerned in that unfortunate tranſaction, anſwered every queſtion without reſerve. Their information imported, that while our people were at dinner, ſome of the natives ſtole or ſnatched from them, ſome fiſh and bread, for which offence they received ſome blows: a quarrel immediately enſued, and two of the ſavages were ſhot dead by the only two muſkets that were fired; for, before a third was diſcharged, the natives ruſhed furiouſly upon our people, and being ſuperior in number deſtroyed them all. Pedro and his companions alſo pointed out the very ſpot where the *fracas* happened, and the place where the boat lay, in which a black ſervant of Captain Furneaux had been left to take care of it.

According to another account, this negro was the occaſion of the quarrel; for one of the natives ſtealing ſomething out of the boat, the black gave him a violent blow with a ſtick. His countrymen hearing his cries at ſome diſtance, imagined he was killed, and immediately attacked our people, who, before they could

could reach the boat, or prepare themſelves againſt the unexpected aſſault, fell a ſacrifice to the fury of the exaſperated ſavages.

It appears that there was no pre-meditated plan of bloodſhed, and that, if theſe thefts had not been rather too haſtily reſented, all miſchief would have been avoided: for Kahoora's greateſt enemies acknowledged, that he had no previous intention of quarrelling. With regard to the boat, ſome ſaid, that it had been pulled to pieces and burnt; while others aſſerted, that it had been carried off by a party of ſtrangers.

Our party continued at Graſs Cove till the evening, and then embarked to return to the ſhips. On Tueſday the 18th, Pedro and his whole family came to reſide near us. The proper name of this chief was Matahouah; but ſome of Captain Cook's people had given him the name of Pedro in a former voyage.

On Friday the 21ſt, a tribe or family of about thirty perſons came from the upper part of the Sound to viſit us. Their chief was named Tomatongeauooranuc; he was about the age of forty-five, and had a frank, chearful countenance; and, indeed, the reſt of his tribe were, upon the whole, the handſomeſt of all the New Zealanders that Captain Cook had ever ſeen. By this time upwards of two-thirds of the natives of Queen Charlotte's Sound had ſettled near us, numbers of whom daily reſorted to the ſhips and our encampment on ſhore; but the latter was moſt frequented during the time when our people there were making ſeal blubber; for the ſavages were ſo fond of train oil, that they reliſhed the very dregs of the caſks and ſkimmings of the kettle, and conſidered the pure ſtinking oil as a moſt delightful feaſt.

When we had procured a competent ſupply of hay, wood, and water, we ſtruck our tents, and the next morning, which was the 24th, weighed out of the Cove. But the wind not being ſo fair as we could have wiſhed, we were obliged to caſt anchor again near the Iſle of Motuara. While we were getting under ſail, Tomatongeauooranuc, Matahouah, and many others

of the natives, came to take leave of us. These two chiefs having requested Captain Cook to present them with some hogs and goats, he gave to Tomatongeauooranuc two pigs, a boar and a sow; to Matahouah two goats, a male and female, after they had promised not to destroy them.

Before we had been long at anchor near Motuara, several canoes, filled with natives, came towards us, and we carried on a brisk trade with them for the curiosities of this place. In one of these canoes was Kahoora, whom Omai immediately pointed out to Captain Cook, and solicited him to shoot that chief; he also threatened to be himself his executioner, if he should ever presume to pay us another visit. These menaces of Omai had so little influence upon Kahoora, that he returned to us the next morning, accompanied with his whole family. Omai, having obtained Captain Cook's permission to ask him on board, introduced him into the cabin, saying, "There is Kahoora; "dispatch him." But, fearing perhaps that he should be called upon to put his former threats in execution, he instantly retired. He soon, however, returned; and perceiving that the chief was unhurt, he earnestly remonstrated to Captain Cook on the subject; saying, that if a man killed another in England, he was hanged for it, but that Kahoora had killed ten, and therefore justly deserved death. These arguments, however plausible, had no weight with our Commodore, who desired Omai to ask the New-Zealand chief, why he had destroyed Captain Furneaux's people? Kahoora, confounded at this question, hung down his head, folded his arms, and seemed in expectation of immediate death: but, as soon as he was assured of safety, he became chearful. He appeared, however, unwilling to answer the question which had been put to him, till after repeated promises that no violence should be offered to him. He then ventured to inform us, that one of the natives having brought a stone hatchet for the purpose of traffic, the person to whom it was offered, took it, and refused either to return it or give any thing in exchange;

exchange; upon which the owner of it ſeized ſome bread by way of equivalent; and this gave riſe to the quarrel that enſued. He alſo mentioned, that he himſelf, during the diſturbance, had a narrow eſcape; for a muſquet was levelled at him, which he found means to avoid by ſkulking behind the boat; and another man, who happened to ſtand cloſe to him, was ſhot dead: upon which Kahoora attacked Mr. Rowe, the officer who commanded the party, who defended himſelf with his hanger, with which he gave the chief a wound in the arm, till he was overpowered by ſuperiority of numbers. Mr. Burney, whom Captain Furneaux diſpatched the next day with an armed party in ſearch of his people who were miſſing, had, upon diſcovering the melancholy proofs of this cataſtrophe, fired ſeveral vollies among the natives who were ſtill on the ſpot, and were probably partaking of the horrid banquet of human fleſh. It was reaſonable to ſuppoſe that this firing was not ineffectual; but upon inquiry it appeared, that not a ſingle perſon had been killed, or even hurt, by the ſhot which Mr. Burney's people had diſcharged.

Before our arrival in New Zealand, Omai had expreſſed a deſire of taking one of the natives with him to his own country. He ſoon had an opportunity of gratifying his inclination, for a youth named Taweiharooa, the only ſon of a deceaſed chief, offered to accompany him, and took up his reſidence on board. Captain Cook cauſed it to be made known to him and all his friends, that if the youth departed with us he would never return. This declaration, however, had no effect. The day before we quitted the Cove, Tiratoutou, his mother, came to receive her laſt preſent from Omai; and the ſame evening ſhe and her ſon parted, with all the marks of the tendereſt affection: but ſhe ſaid ſhe would weep no more, and faithfully kept her word; for the next morning, when ſhe returned to take her laſt farewel of Taweiharooa, ſhe was quite chearful all the time ſhe remained on board, and departed with great unconcern. A boy of about

ten years of age accompanied Taweiharooa as a ſervant; his name was Kokoa. He was preſented to Captain Cook by his own father, who parted with him with ſuch indifference, as to ſtrip him and leave him entirely naked. The Captain having in vain endeavoured to convince theſe people of the great improbability of theſe youths ever returning home, at length conſented to their going.

The inhabitants of New Zealand ſeem to live under continual apprehenſions of being deſtroyed by each other; moſt of their tribes having, as they think, ſuſtained injuries from ſome other tribe, which they are ever eager to revenge; and it is not improbable, that the deſire of a good meal is frequently a great incitement. They generally ſteal upon the adverſe party in the night, and if they chance to find them unguarded, which is ſeldom the caſe, they kill every one without diſtinction, without ſparing even the women and children. When they have completed the inhuman maſſacre, they either gorge themſelves on ſpot, or carry off as many dead bodies as they can, and feaſt on them at home, with the moſt horrid acts of brutality. If they are diſcovered before they have time to execute their ſanguinary purpoſe, they uſually ſteal off again, and ſometimes they are purſued and attacked by the adverſe party in their turn. They never give quarter, or take priſoners, ſo that the vanquiſhed muſt truſt to flight alone for ſafety. From this ſtate of perpetual hoſtility, and this deſtructive mode of carrying it on, a New Zealander derives ſuch habitual vigilance and circumſpection, that he is ſcarce ever off his guard: and, indeed, theſe people have the moſt powerful motives to be vigilant, as the preſervation of both ſoul and body depends on it; for it is a part of their creed, that the ſoul of the man whoſe fleſh is devoured by his enemies, is condemned to an inceſſant fire; while the ſoul of him whoſe body has been reſcued from thoſe that ſlew him, as well as the ſouls of thoſe who die a natural death, aſcend to the manſions of the gods.

Their ordinary method of diſpoſing of their dead is

to commit their bodies to the earth: but when they have more of their ſlain enemies than they can conveniently eat, they throw them into the ſea. There are no *morais*, or other places of public worſhip among them; but they have prieſts, who pray to the gods for the ſucceſs of their temporal affairs. The principles of their religion, of which we know but little, are ſtrongly inſtilled into them from their infancy.

Notwithſtanding the divided ſtate in which theſe people live, travelling ſtrangers, whoſe deſigns are honourable, are well received and entertained; but it is expected that they will remain no longer than their buſineſs requires. It is thus that a trade for green talc, which they call *poenammoo*, is carried on. They informed us, that none of this ſtone is to be found, except at a place which bears its name, near the head of Queen Charlotte's Sound.

The New Zealanders have adopted polygamy among them, and it is common for one man to have two or three wives; but thoſe who are unmarried find difficulty in procuring ſubſiſtence.

Theſe people ſeem perfectly contented with the ſmall degree of knowledge they poſſeſs, for they make no attempts to improve it. They are not remarkably curious, nor do new objects ſtrike them with much ſurpriſe, for they ſcarce fix their attention for a moment. Omai, indeed, being a great favourite with them, would ſometimes attract a circle about him; but they liſtened to his ſpeeches with very little eagerneſs.

The longitude of Ship Cove, by lunar obſervations, is 174° 25′ 15″ eaſt; its latitude, 41° 6′ ſouth.

About Queen Charlotte's Sound the land is uncommonly mountainous, riſing immediately from the ſea into large hills. At remote diſtances are vallies, terminating each towards the ſea in a ſmall cove, with a pebbly or ſandy beach; behind which are flat places, where the natives uſually build their huts. This ſituation is the more convenient, as a brook of fine water runs through every cove, and empties itſelf into the ſea.

The bases of these mountains towards the shore are constituted of a brittle yellowish sand-stone, which acquires a blueish cast where it is laved by the sea. At some places it runs in horizontal, and at others, in oblique strata. The mould or soil by which it is covered resembles marle, and is, in general, a foot or two in thickness.

The luxuriant growth of the productions here, sufficiently indicates the quality of the soil. The hills, except a few towards the sea, are one continued forest of lofty trees, flourishing with such uncommon vigour, as to afford an august prospect to the admirers of the sublime and beautiful works of nature.

This extraordinary strength in vegetation is, doubtless, greatly assisted by the agreeable temperature of the climate; for at this time, though answering to our month of August, the weather was not so warm as to be disagreeable, nor did it raise the thermometer higher than 66°. The winter, also, seems equally mild with respect to cold; for in the month which corresponds to our December, the mercury was never lower than 48°, the trees at the same time retaining their verdure, as if in the height of summer.

Though the weather is generally good, it is sometimes windy, with heavy rain; which, however, is never excessive, and does not last above a day. In short, this would be one of the finest countries upon earth were it not so extremely hilly; which, supposing the woods to be cleared away, would leave it less proper for pasturage than flat land, and infinitely less so for cultivation, which could never be affected here by the plough.

The large trees on the hills are principally of two sorts. One of them, of the size of our largest firs, grows nearly after their manner. This supplied the place of spruce in making beer; which we did, with a decoction of its leaves fermented with sugar or treacle; and this liquor was acknowledged to be little inferior to American spruce-beer. The other sort of tree is like a maple, and often grows very large, but is fit only for

for fuel; the wood of that, and of the preceding, being too heavy for masts, yards, &c.

A greater variety of trees grow on the flats behind the beaches: two of these bear a kind of plumb, of the size of prunes; the one, which is yellow, is called karraca, and the other, which is black, called maitao; but neither of them had a pleasant taste, though eaten both by our people and the natives.

On the eminences which jut out into the sea grows a species of philadelphus, and a tree bearing flowers almost like myrtle. We used the leaves of the philadelphus as tea, and found them an excellent substitute for the oriental sort.

A kind of wild celery, which grows plentifully in almost every cove, may be reckoned among the plants that were useful to us, and another that we used to call scurvy-grass. Both sorts were boiled daily with wheat ground in a mill for the people's breakfast, and with their pease-soup for dinner. Sometimes, also, they were used as sallad, or dressed as greens. In all which ways they are excellent; and, together with the fish, with which we were amply supplied, they formed a most desirable refreshment.

The known kinds of plants to be found here are bindweed, night-shade, nettles, a shrubby speedwell, sow-thistles, virgin's bower, vanelloe, French willow, euphorbia, crane's-bill, cudweed, rushes, bulrushes, flax, all-heal, American night-shade, knot-grass, brambles, eye-bright, and groundsel; but the species of each are different from any we have in Europe.

There are a great number of other plants, but one in particular deserves to be noticed here, as the garments of the natives are made from it. A fine silky flax is produced from it, superior in appearance to any thing we have in this country, and, perhaps, as strong. It grows in all places near the sea, and sometimes a considerable way up the hills, in bunches or tufts, bearing yellowish flowers on a long stalk.

It is remarkable, that the greatest part of the trees and plants were of the berry-bearing kind; of which, and

and other ſeeds, Mr. Anderſon brought away about thirty different ſorts.

The birds, of which there is a tolerable good ſtock, are almoſt entirely peculiar to the place. It would be difficult and fatiguing to follow them, on account of the quantity of underwood and the climbing plants; yet any perſon, by continuing in one place, may ſhoot as many in a day as would ſerve ſeven or eight perſons. The principal kinds are large brown parrots, with grey heads, green parroquets, large wood-pigeons, and two ſorts of cookoos. A groſs-beak, about the ſize of a thruſh, is frequent; as is alſo a ſmall green bird, which is almoſt the only muſical one to be found here: but his melody is ſo ſweet, and his notes ſo varied, that any one would imagine himſelf ſurrounded by a hundred different ſorts of birds when the little warbler is exerting himſelf. From this circumſtance is was named the mocking-bird. There are alſo three or four ſorts of ſmaller birds, and among the rocks are found black ſea-pies, with red bills, and creſted ſhags of a leaden colour. About the ſhore there are a few ſea-gulls, ſome blue herons, wild ducks, plovers, and ſome ſand-larks. A ſnipe was ſhot here, which differs but little from that of Europe.

Moſt of the fiſh we caught by the ſeine were elephant-fiſh, mullets, ſoles, and flounders: but the natives ſupplied us with a ſort of ſea-bream, large congerells, and a fiſh of five or ſix pounds weight, called a mogge by the natives. With a hook and line we caught a blackiſh fiſh, called cole-fiſh by the ſeamen, but differing greatly from that of the ſame name in Europe. We alſo got a ſort of ſmall ſalmon, ſkait, gurnards, and nurſes. The natives ſometimes furniſhed us with hake, paracutas, parrot-fiſh, a ſort of mackarel, and leather jackets; beſides another, which is extremely ſcarce, of the figure of a dolphin, a black colour, and ſtrong bony jaws. Theſe, in general, are excellent to eat; but the ſmall ſalmon, cole-fiſh, and mogge, are ſuperior to the others.

Great quantities of excellent muſcles inhabit among the

the rocks, one ſort of which exceeds a foot in length. Many cockles are found buried in the ſand of the ſmall beaches; and in ſome places, oyſters, which, though very ſmall, have a good flavour. There are alſo periwinkles, limpets, wilks, ſea-eggs, ſtar-fiſh, and ſome beautiful ſea-ears, many of which are peculiar to the place. The natives alſo furniſhed us with ſome excellent cray-fiſh.

Inſects here are not very numerous: we ſaw ſome butterflies, two ſorts of dragon-flies, ſome ſmall graſshoppers, ſeveral ſorts of ſpiders, ſome black ants, and ſcorpion flies innumerable, with whoſe chirping the woods reſounded. The ſand-fly, which is the only noxious one, is very numerous here, and is almoſt as diſagreeable as the muſquito. The only reptiles we ſaw here were two or three ſorts of inoffenſive lizards.

In this extenſive land it is remarkable, that there ſhould not even be the traces of any quadruped, except a few rats, and a kind of fox dog, which is kept by the natives as a domeſtic animal.

They have not any mineral deſerving notice, but a great jaſper or ſerpent ſtone, of which the tools and ornaments of the inhabitants are made.

The natives, in general, are not ſo well formed, eſpecially about the limbs, as the Europeans, nor do they exceed them in ſtature. Their ſitting ſo much on their hams, and being deprived, by the mountainous diſpoſition of the country, of uſing that kind of exerciſe which would render the body ſtraight and well-proportioned, is probably the occaſion of the want of due proportion. Many of them, indeed, are perfectly formed, and ſome are very large boned and muſcular; but very few among them were corpulent.

Their features are various, ſome reſembling Europeans, and their colour is of different caſts, from a deepiſh black to an olive or yellowiſh tinge. In general, however, their faces are round, their lips rather full, and their noſes (though not flat) large towards the point. An aquiline noſe was not to be ſeen among them: their eyes are large, and their teeth are commonly

monly broad, white, and regular. Their hair, in general, is black, ſtrong, and ſtraight; it is commonly cut ſhort on the hinder part, and the reſt tied on the crown of the head: ſome, indeed, have brown hair, and others a ſort that is naturally diſpoſed to curl. The countenance of the young is generally free and open; but in many of the men it has a ſerious or ſullen caſt. The men are larger than the women; and the latter are not diſtinguiſhed by peculiar graces, either of form or features.

Both ſexes are clothed alike; they have a garment made of the ſilky flax already mentioned, about five feet in length and four in breadth. This appears to be their principal manufacture, which is performed by knotting. Two corners of this garment paſs over the ſhoulders, and they faſten it on the breaſt with that which covers the body; it is again faſtened about the belly with a girdle made of mat. Sometimes they cover it with dog-ſkin or large feathers. Many of them wear coats over this garment, extending from the ſhoulders to the heels. The moſt common covering, however, is a quantity of the ſedgy plant above mentioned, badly manufactured, faſtened to a ſtring, and thrown over the ſhoulders, whence it falls down on all ſides to the middle of the thighs. When they ſat down in this habit, they could hardly be diſtinguiſhed from large grey ſtones, if their black heads did not project beyond their coverings.

They adorn their heads with feathers, combs of bone or wood, with pearl ſhell, and the inner ſkin of leaves. Both men and women have their ears ſlit, in which are hung beads, pieces of jaſper, or bits of cloth. Some have the *ſceptum* of the noſe bored in its lower part, but we never ſaw any ornament wore in that part; though a twig was paſſed through it by one of them, to ſhew that it was occaſionally uſed for that purpoſe.

Many are ſtained in the face with curious figures of a black or dark blue colour; but it is not certain whether this is intended to be ornamental, or as a mark of particular diſtinction: the women are marked only

on

on their lips and chins; and both ſexes beſmear their heads and faces with a greaſy reddiſh paint. The women alſo wear necklaces of ſhark's teeth, or bunches of long beads; and a few of them have ſmall triangular aprons, adorned with feathers, or pieces of pearl ſhells, faſtened about the waiſt with a double or treble ſet of cords.

They live in the ſmall coves already mentioned, ſometimes in ſingle families, and ſometimes in companies of perhaps forty or fifty. Their huts, which are in general moſt miſerable lodging places, are built contiguous to each other. The beſt we ſaw was built in the manner of one of our country barns, and was about ſix feet in height, fifteen in breadth, and thirty-three in length. The inſide was ſtrong and regular, well faſtened by means of withes, &c. and painted red and black. At one end it had a hole ſerving as a door to creep out at, and another, conſiderably ſmaller, ſeemingly for the purpoſe of letting out the ſmoke. This, however, ought to be conſidered as one of their palaces, for many of their huts are not half the ſize, and ſeldom are more than four feet in height.

They have no other furniture than a few ſmall bags or baſkets, in which they depoſit their fiſhing-hooks and other trifles. They ſit down in the middle round a ſmall fire, and probably ſleep in the ſame ſituation, without any other covering than what they have worn in the day.

Fiſhing is their principal ſupport, in which they uſe different kinds of nets, or wooden fiſh-hooks pointed with bone; but made in ſo extraordinary a manner, that it appears aſtoniſhing how they can anſwer ſuch a purpoſe.

Their boats conſiſt of planks raiſed upon each other, and faſtened with ſtrong withes. Many of them are fifty feet long. Sometimes they faſten two together with rafters, which we call a double canoe: they frequently carry upwards of thirty men, and have a large head, ingeniouſly carved and painted, which ſeems intended to repreſent a man enraged. Their paddles are narrow,

narrow, pointed, and about five feet long. Their ſail, which is very little uſed, is a mat formed into a triangular ſhape.

They dreſs their fiſh by roaſting, or rather baking them, being entirely ignorant of the art of boiling. It is thus they alſo dreſs the root of the large fern-tree, in a hole prepared for that purpoſe: when dreſſed, they ſplit it, and find a gelatinous ſubſtance within, ſomewhat like ſago powder. The ſmaller fern-root ſeems to be their ſubſtitute for bread, being dried and carried about with them, together with great quantities of dried fiſh, when they go far from their habitations.

When the weather will not ſuffer them to go to ſea, muſcles and ſea-ears ſupply the place of other fiſh. Sometimes, but not often, they kill a few penguins, rails, and ſhags, which enable them to vary their diet. Conſiderable numbers of their dogs are alſo bred for food; but they depend principally on the ſea for their ſubſiſtence, by which they are moſt bountifully ſupplied.

They are as filthy in their feeding as in their perſons, which often emit a very offenſive effluvia, from the quantity of greaſe about them, and from their never waſhing their cloaths: their heads are plentifully ſtocked with vermin, which they ſometimes eat. Large quantities of ſtinking train oil, and blubber of ſeals, they would eagerly devour. When on board the ſhips, they not only emptied the lamps, but actually ſwallowed the cotton with equal voracity. Though the inhabitants of Van Diemen's Land would not even taſte our bread, theſe people devoured it with the greateſt eagerneſs, even when it was rotten and mouldy.

In point of ingenuity, they are not behind any uncivilized nations under ſimilar circumſtances; for, without the aſſiſtance of metal tools, they make every thing by which they procure their ſubſiſtence, cloathing, and warlike weapons, with neatneſs, ſtrength, and convenience. Their principal mechanical tool is formed in the manner of an adze, and is made of the ſerpent-ſtone or jaſper; their chiſſel and gouge are furniſhed from

from the ſame material, though they are ſometimes compoſed of black ſolid ſtone. Carving, however, is their maſter-piece, which appears upon the moſt trifling things: the ornaments on the heads of their canoes, not only diſplay much deſign, but execution. Their cordage for fiſhing lines is not inferior to that in this country, and their nets are equally good. A ſhell, a bit of flint or jaſper, is their ſubſtitute for a knife; and a ſhark's tooth, fixed in the end of a piece of wood, is their auger. They have a ſaw made of ſome jagged fiſhes teeth, fixed on a piece of wood nicely carved: but this is uſed for no other purpoſe than to cut up the bodies of thoſe whom they kill in battle.

Though no people are more ready to reſent an injury, yet they take every opportunity of being inſolent when they apprehend there is no danger of puniſhment; whence it may be concluded, that their eagerneſs to reſent injuries is rather an effect of a furious diſpoſition than genuine bravery. They are naturally miſtruſtful and ſuſpicious, for ſuch as are ſtrangers never venture immediately to viſit our ſhips, but keep at a ſmall diſtance in their boats, obſerving our motions, and heſitating whether they ſhould riſk their ſafety with us. They are to the laſt degree diſhoneſt, and ſteal every thing within their reach, if they ſuppoſe they can eſcape detection; and in trading they ſeem inclined to take every poſſible advantage, for they never truſt an article out of their hands for examination, and ſeem highly pleaſed if they have over-reached you in a bargain.

Their public contentions are almoſt perpetual, for war is their principal profeſſion, as appears from the number of weapons, and their dexterity in uſing them. Their arms are ſpears, patoos and halberts, and ſometimes ſtones. The firſt are from five to thirty feet long, made of hard wood and pointed. The patoo is about eighteen inches long, of an elliptical ſhape, with a handle made of wood, ſtone, &c. and appears to be their principal dependance in battle. The halbert is about five or ſix feet in length, tapering at one end with

with a carved head, and broad or flat, with ſharp edges, at the other.

Before the onſet, they join in a war ſong, keeping the exacteſt time; and by degrees work themſelves into a kind of frantic fury, accompanied with the moſt horrid diſtortions of their tongues, eyes, and mouths, in order to deter their enemies. To this ſucceeds a circumſtance that is moſt horrid, cruel, and diſgraceful to human nature, which is mangling and cutting to pieces (even when not perfectly dead) the bodies of their enemies; and, after roaſting them, devouring the fleſh with peculiar pleaſure and ſatisfaction.

It might naturally be ſuppoſed, that thoſe who could be capable of ſuch exceſs of cruelty, muſt be totally deſtitute of every humane feeling; and yet they lament the loſs of their friends in a manner the moſt tender and affectionate.

BOOK II.

CONTAINING OUR ADVENTURES FROM OUR DEPARTURE FROM NEW ZEALAND, TILL OUR ARRIVAL AT OTAHEITE, OR THE SOCIETY ISLANDS.

IN the morning of the 25th of February, we left the Sound, and made ſail through Cook's Straits. On the 27th, Cape Palliſer bearing weſt about ſeven leagues diſtant, we had a fine gale, and ſteered towards the north-eaſt. As ſoon as we loſt ſight of land, our two young New Zealeanders heartily repented of the adventurous ſtep they had taken. Though we endeavoured as far as lay in our power to ſooth them, they wept, both in public and private; and gave vent to their ſorrows in a kind of ſong, which ſeemed to expreſs their praiſes of their country and people, from which they were now, in all probability, to be for ever ſeparated. They continued in this ſtate for ſe-

veral

veral days, till, at length, the agitation of their minds began to ſubſide, and their ſea-ſickneſs, which aggravated their grief, wore off. Their lamentations then became leſs and leſs frequent; their native country, their kindred and friends, were gradually forgotten, and they appeared to be firmly attached to us.

On the 28th at noon, we were in the latitude of 41° 17′ ſouth, and in the longitude of 177° 17′ eaſt: and after encountering various winds, we croſſed the Tropic on the 27th of March. In all this run, we obſerved nothing that could induce us to ſuppoſe we had ſailed near any land, except occaſionally a tropic bird. On the 20th, as we were ſtanding to the north-eaſt, the Diſcovery made the ſignal of ſeeing land. We ſoon found it to be a ſmall iſland, and ſtood for it till the evening, when it was at the diſtance of two or three leagues. The next morning, at day-break, we bore up for the weſt ſide of the iſland, and ſaw ſeveral people wading to the reef, where, as they obſerved the ſhip leaving them quickly, they remained. But others who ſoon appeared, followed her courſe, and ſome of them aſſembled in ſmall bodies, making great ſhouts.

Upon our nearer approach to the ſhore, we ſaw many of the natives running along the beach, and by the aſſiſtance of our glaſſes, could perceive that they were armed with long ſpears and clubs, which they brandiſhed in the air with ſigns of threatening, or as ſome of us ſuppoſed with invitations to land. Moſt of them were naked, except having a kind of girdle which was brought up between their thighs; but ſome of them wore about their ſhoulders pieces of cloth of various colours, white, ſtriped, or chequered; and almoſt all of them had about their heads a white wrapper, in ſome degree reſembling a turban. They were of a tawny complexion, robuſt, and about the middle ſize.

A ſmall canoe was now launched from the moſt diſtant part of the beach, and a man getting into it, put off as with a view of reaching the ſhip, but his courage failing, he quickly returned towards the beach.

Ano-

Another man ſoon after joined him in the canoe, and then both of them paddled towards us. They ſeemed, however afraid to approach, till their apprehenſions were partly removed by Omai, who addreſſed them in the language of Otaheite. Thus encouraged, they came near enough to receive ſome nails and beads, which being tied to ſome wood, were thrown into the canoe. They however put the wood aſide without untying the things from it, which may perhaps have proceeded from ſuperſtition; for we were informed by Omai, that when they obſerved us offering preſents to them, they requeſted ſomething for their *Eatooa*. They afterwards laid hands on a rope, but would not venture on board, telling Omai, that their countrymen on ſhore had ſuggeſted to them this caution; and had likewiſe directed them to inquire whence our ſhip came, and to procure information of the name of the Captain. Upon our inquiring the name of the iſland, they told us it was *Mangya* or *Mangeea*, to which they ſometimes added *nooe*, *nai*, *naiwa*.

The features of one of them were agreeable, and his diſpoſition, to all appearance was no leſs ſo; for he exhibited ſome droll geſticulations, which indicated humour and good nature. He alſo made others of a ſerious kind, and repeated ſome words with an air of devotion, before he would venture to take hold of the rope at the ſtern of the ſhip.

As ſoon as the ſhips were in a proper ſtation, Captain Cook ſent out two boats to endeavour to find a convenient place for landing. In one of them he went himſelf, and had no ſooner put off from the ſhip than the two men in the canoe paddled towards his boat; and when they were come along-ſide, a native, without heſitation, ſtept into her. Omai, who was with the Captain, was deſired to inquire of the iſlander where we could land; upon which he directed us to two places. But we ſoon obſerved with regret, that the attempt at either place was impracticable, on account of the ſurf, unleſs at the riſque of having our boats deſtroyed. Nor were we more ſucceſsful in our

ſearch

ſearch for anchorage, as we could find no bottom till within a cable's length of the breakers, where we met with from forty to twenty fathoms deep, over ſharp rocks of coral.

While we thus reconnoitered the ſhore of Mangeea, the natives thronged down upon the reef, all armed. The native, who ſtill remained in the boat with Captain Cook, thinking, perhaps, that this warlike appearance deterred us from landing, commanded them to retire. As many of them complied, we imagined that he was a perſon of ſome conſequence: we found his name was Mouroua, and that he was brother to the king of the iſland. Several of them inſtigated by curioſity, ſwam from the ſhore to the boats, and came on board without reſerve. We even found ſome difficulty in keeping them out, and could ſcarce prevent their pilfering whatever they could lay their hands on. At length, when they obſerved us returning to the ſhips, they all left us except Mouroua, who, though not without manifeſt indications of fear, accompanied the Commodore on board the Reſolution. The cattle and other new objects that he ſaw there, did not ſtrike him with much ſurpriſe; his mind, perhaps, being too much occupied about his own ſafety, to allow him to attend to other things. He ſeemed very uneaſy, and gave us but little new intelligence; and therefore, after he had continued a ſhort time on board, Captain Cook ordered a boat to carry him towards the land. In his way out of the cabin, happening to ſtumble over one of the goats, he ſtopped, looked at the animal, and aſked Omai what bird it was; but not receiving an immediate anſwer from him, he put the ſame queſtion to ſome of the people who were upon deck. The boat having conveyed him near the ſurf, he leaped into the water and ſwam aſhore. His countrymen, eager to learn from him what he had ſeen, flocked round him as ſoon as he landed; in which ſituation they remained when we loſt ſight of them. We hoiſted in the boat as ſoon as ſhe returned, and made ſail to the northward. Thus were we obliged to leave this fine iſland

-un

unviſited, which ſeemed capable of ſupplying all our neceſſities. It is ſituate in the longitude of 201° 53′ eaſt, and in the latitude of 21° 57′ ſouth.

Thoſe parts of the coaſt of Mangeea which fell ununder our obſervation, are guarded by a reef of coral rock, againſt which a heavy ſurf is continually breaking. The iſland is about five leagues in circumference, and though of a moderate and pretty equal height, may be ſeen in clear weather at the diſtance of ten leagues. In the interior parts, it riſes into ſmall hills, whence there is an eaſy deſcent to the ſhore, which in the ſouth-weſt part is ſteep, though not very high, and has ſeveral excavations made by the daſhing of the waves againſt a brownifh ſand ſtone of which it conſiſts. The ſhore, on the north-weſt part terminates in a ſandy beach, beyond which the land is broken into ſmall chaſms, and has a broad border of trees which reſemble tall willows.

The natives appearing to be both numerous and well fed, it is highly probable, that ſuch articles of proviſion, as the iſland produces, are found in great abundance. Our friend Mouroa informed us, that they had no hogs nor dogs, though they had heard of both theſe animals; but that they had plantains, taro, and bread-fruit. The only birds we obſerved, were ſome terns, noddies, white egg-birds, and one white heron.

The language of the Mangeeans is a dialect of that of Otaheite; but their pronounciation is more guttural. They reſemble the inhabitants of Otaheite and the Marqueſas in the beauty of their perſons; and their general diſpoſition alſo ſeems to correſpond with that of the firſt-mentioned people; for they are not only lively and chearful, but are acquainted with all the indecent geſticulations practiſed by the Otaheitans in their dances. We had likewiſe reaſon to ſuppoſe, that they have ſimilar methods of living: for, though we had not an opportunity of ſeeing many of their habitations, we obſerved one houſe near the beach, which, in its mode of conſtruction, differed little from

thoſe

thoſe of Otaheite. It appeared to be ſeven or eight feet high, and about thirty in length, with an open end which repreſented an ellipſe, or oval, tranſverſely divided. It was pleaſantly ſituated in a grove.

Theſe people ſalute ſtrangers by joining noſes, and taking the hand of the perſon whom they accoſt, which they rub with ſome force upon their mouth and noſe. It is worthy of remark, that the inhabitants of the Palaos, New Philippine, or rather Caroline Iſlands, though at the diſtance of near 1500 leagues from Mangeea, have a ſimilar method of ſalutation.

We quitted Mangeea in the afternoon of the 30th of March, and proceeding on a northerly courſe, we again diſcovered land, on the 31ſt, at the diſtance of nine or ten leagues. The next morning we were abreaſt of its north end, within four leagues of it. It now appeared to us, to be an iſland nearly of the ſame extent with that which we had juſt left. Another iſland, much ſmaller, was alſo deſcried right a-head. Though we could ſoon have reached this, we preferred the larger one, as being moſt likely to furniſh food for the cattle. We therefore made ſail to it; but there being little wind, and that unfavourable, we were ſtill about two leagues to leeward at eight o'clock the ſucceeding morning. The Commodore, ſoon after, diſpatched three armed boats, under the command of Mr. Gore, his Firſt Lieutenant, in ſearch of a landing place and anchoring ground. Meanwhile we plied up under the iſland with the ſhips. As our boats were putting off, we ſaw ſeveral canoes coming from the ſhore, which repaired firſt to the Diſcovery, as that ſhip was the neareſt. Not long after, three of theſe canoes, each conducted by one man, came along ſide of the Reſolution.

We beſtowed on our viſitors ſome knives, beads, and other trifles; and they gave us ſome cocoa nuts, in conſequence of our having aſked for them; but they did not part with them by way of exchange, as they ſeemed to have no idea of barter or traffic. One of them, after a little perſuaſion, came on board; and the

 other

other two followed his example. They appeared to be perfectly at their eaſe, and free from all apprehenſion. After their departure, a man arrived in another canoe, bringing a bunch of plantains as a preſent to Captain Cook, who gave him in return a piece of red cloth and an axe.

We were afterwards informed by Omai, that this preſent had been ſent from the king of the iſland. Soon after, a double canoe, containing twelve of the iſlanders, came towards us. On approaching the ſhip they recited ſome words in concert, by way of chorus, one of them firſt giving the word before each repetition. Having finiſhed this ſolemn chant, they came along ſide and aſked for the chief. As ſoon as Captain Cook had made his appearance, a pig and ſome cocoa nuts were conveyed into the ſhip; and the Captain was alſo preſented with a piece of matting by the principal perſon in the canoe, when he and his companions had got on board.

Theſe new viſitors were introduced into the cabin, and conducted to other parts of the ſhip. Though ſome objects ſeemed to ſurpriſe them, nothing could fix their attention. They were afraid to venture near the cows and horſes, of whoſe nature they could form no conception. As for the ſheep and goats, they gave us to underſtand they knew them to be birds.

Though the Commodore beſtowed on his new friend what he ſuppoſed the moſt acceptable preſent, yet he ſeemed ſomewhat diſappointed. The Captain was afterwards informed that he eagerly wiſhed to procure a dog, of which kind of animals this iſland was deſtitute, though the natives knew that the race exiſted in other iſlands of the Pacific Ocean. Captain Clerke had received a ſimilar preſent with the ſame view from another man, who was equally diſappointed in his expectations.

The iſlanders, whom we had ſeen in thoſe canoes, were in general of the middle ſtature, and not unlike the Mangeeans. Their hair either flowed looſely over their ſhoulders, or was tied on the crown of the head;

and though in ſome it was frizzed, yet that, as well as the ſtraight ſort, was long. Some of the young men were handſome. Like the inhabitants of Mangeea, they wore girdles of glazed cloth, or fine matting, the ends of which were brought between their thighs. Their ears were bored, and they wore about their necks, by way of ornament, a ſort of broad graſs, ſtained with red, and ſtrung with berries of the night ſhade. Many of them were curiouſly marked or *tatooed* from the middle downwards, particularly upon their legs, which made them appear as if they wore boots. Their beards were long, and they had a kind of ſandals on their feet. They were frank and chearful in their deportment, and very friendly and good natured.

Lieutenant Gore returned from his excurſion in the afternoon, and informed Captain Cook, that he had examined the weſt ſide of the iſland without being able to find a place where the ſhips could ride in ſafety, or a boat could land, the ſhore being bounded by a ſteep coral rock, againſt which a continual ſurf broke with extraordinary violence. But as the inhabitants ſeemed extremely friendly, and as deſirous of our landing as we ourſelves were, Mr. Gore was of opinion, that they might be prevailed upon to bring off to the boats beyond the ſurf, ſuch articles as we were moſt in need of. As we had little or no wind, the delay of a day or two was of ſmall conſideration; and therefore the Commodore reſolved to try the experiment next morning.

The ſame morning, which was the 3d of April, Captain Cook detached Mr. Gore with three boats, to make trial of the experiment which that officer had propoſed. Two of the natives who had been on board accompanied him, and Omai ſerved as an interpreter. The ſhips being a full league from the iſland when the boats put off, and the wind being inconſiderable, it was twelve o'clock before the ſhip could work up to it. We then perceived our three boats juſt without the ſurf, and an amazing number

of the iſlanders on the ſhore abreaſt of them. Concluding from this, that Lieutenant Gore, and others of our people had landed, we were impatient to know the event. With a view of obſerving their motions, and being ready to afford them ſuch aſſiſtance as they might occaſionally require, the Commodore kept as near the ſhore as was conſiſtent with prudence. Some of the natives now and then brought a few cocoa nuts to the ſhips, and exchanged them for whatever was offered them. Theſe occaſional viſits diminiſhed the Captain's ſolicitude about our people who had landed. At length, towards the evening, we had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing the boats return. When our people got on board, we found that Mr. Gore, Mr. Anderſon, Mr. Burney, and Omai, were the only perſons who had landed. The occurrences of the day were now fully reported to the Commodore by Mr. Gore. — Mr. Anderſon's account of their tranſactions, which was very circumſtantial, and included ſome obſervations on the iſland and its inhabitants, was to the following purport:

They rowed towards a ſandy beach, where a great number of the natives had aſſembled, and came to an anchor at the diſtance of an hundred yards from the reef. Several of the iſlanders ſwam off, bringing cocoa nuts with them; and Omai gave them to underſtand that our people were deſirous of landing. Soon after, two canoes came off; aud to inſpire the natives with a greater confidence, Mr. Gore and his companions reſolved to go unarmed. Mr. Anderſon and Lieutenant Burney went in one canoe, a little before the other; and their conductors watching with great attention the motions of the ſurf, landed them ſafely on the reef. A native took hold of each of them, with a view of ſupporting them in walking over the rugged rocks to the beach, where ſeveral others holding in their hands the green boughs, met them, and ſaluted them by the junction of noſes. They were conducted from the beach amidſt a vaſt multitude of people, who flocked around them with the moſt eager curioſity;

ſity; and being led up an avenue of cocoa palms, ſoon came to a number of men, arranged in two rows, and armed with clubs. Proceeding onward among theſe, they found a perſon who appeared to be a chief, ſitting croſs legged on the ground, and cooling himſelf with a kind of triangular fan, made from the leaf of the cocoa palm, with a poliſhed handle of black wood. He wore in his ears large bunches of beautiful feathers of a red colour, but had no other mark to diſtinguiſh him from the reſt of the people. Our two countrymen having ſaluted him as he ſat, marched on among the men armed with clubs, and came to a ſecond chief, adorned like the former, and occupied like him, in fanning himſelf. He was remarkable for his ſize and corpulence, though he did not appear to be above thirty years of age. They were conducted in the ſame manner to a third chief, who ſeemed older than the two former; he, alſo, was ſitting, and was ornamented with red feathers. After they had ſaluted him as they had done the others, he deſired them both to ſit down; which they willingly conſented to, being greatly fatigued with walking, and with the extreme heat they felt amidſt the ſurrounding multitude.

The people being ordered to ſeparate, Meſſrs. Anderſon and Burney ſaw, at a ſmall diſtance, about twenty beautiful young women, adorned like the chiefs with red feathers, engaged in a dance, which they performed to a ſlow and ſolemn air, ſung by them all. Our two gentlemen roſe up, and walked forward to ſee theſe dancers, who, without paying them the ſmalleſt attention, ſtill continued their dance. They ſeemed to be directed by a man, who, in the capacity of a prompter, mentioned the ſeveral motions they were to make. They never changed the ſpot as Europeans do in dancing; and though their feet were not entirely at reſt, this exerciſe conſiſted more in moving their fingers very nimbly, holding their hands at the ſame time in a prone poſition near the face, and occaſionally clapping them together.

Their dancing and ſinging were performed in the exacteſt concert.

Before theſe beauteous females had finiſhed their dance, our two countrymen heard a noiſe, as if ſome horſes had been galloping towards them; and, on turning their eyes aſide, they ſaw the people armed with clubs, who had been deſired to entertain them, as they ſuppoſed, with an exhibition of their mode of fighting; which they now did, one party purſuing another who ran away.

Lieutenant Burney and Mr. Anderſon began now to look about for Mr. Gore and Omai, whom they at length found coming up, as much incommoded by the crowds of people as themſelves had been, and introduced in the ſame manner to the three chiefs. Each of theſe expecting a preſent, Mr. Gore gave them ſuch things as he had brought with him for that purpoſe; after which he informed the chiefs of his views in coming on ſhore, but was deſired to wait till the next day before he ſhould have what was wanted. They now ſeemed to endeavour to ſeparate our gentlemen from each other, every one of whom had his reſpective circle to ſurround, and gaze at him. Mr. Anderſon was, at one time, upwards of an hour apart from his friends; and when he told the chief, who was near him, that he wiſhed to ſpeak to Omai, his requeſt was peremptorily refuſed. At the ſame time he found that the people pilfered ſeveral trifling things which were in his pocket; and on his complaining of this treatment to the chief, he juſtified their behaviour. From theſe circumſtances, Mr. Anderſon began to apprehend that they deſigned to detain our party among them.

Mr. Burney going to the place where Mr. Anderſon was, the latter informed him of his ſuſpicions; and to try whether they were well founded or not, they both attempted to get to the beach: but they were ſoon ſtopped by ſome of the natives, who ſaid they muſt return to the place which they had left. On their coming up, they found Omai under the ſame apprehenſions; but he had, as he imagined, an additional motive of terror;

terror; for, having obſerved that they had dug a hole in the ground for an oven, which they were now heating, he could aſſign no other reaſon for it, than that they intended to roaſt and devour our party: he even went ſo far as to aſk them whether that was their intention, at which they were much ſurpriſed, aſking, in return, whether that cuſtom prevailed among us.

Thus were Mr. Anderſon and the others detained the greateſt part of the day, being ſometimes ſeparated, and ſometimes together; but continually in a croud, who frequently deſired them to uncover parts of their ſkin, the ſight of which ſtruck the iſlanders with admiration. They at the ſame time rifled the pockets of our countrymen; and one of them ſnatched from Mr. Gore a bayonet, which hung by his ſide. This being repreſented to one of the chiefs, he pretended to ſend a perſon in ſearch of it, but probably countenanced the theft; for Omai, ſoon after, had a dagger ſtolen from his ſide in the ſame manner. They now brought ſome green boughs, as emblems of friendſhip, and ſticking the ends of them in the ground, deſired that our party would hold them as they ſat, giving them to underſtand, that they muſt ſtay and eat with them. The ſight of a pig lying near the oven which they had prepared and heated, removed Omai's apprehenſions of being put into it himſelf, and made him think that it might be intended for the repaſt of him and his three friends. The chief alſo ſent ſome of his people to provide food for the cattle, and they returned with a few plantain-trees, which they conveyed to the boats. In the mean time, Meſſrs. Burney and Anderſon made a ſecond attempt to get to the beach; but, on their arrival, they found themſelves watched by people who ſeemed to have been ſtationed there for that purpoſe; for, when Mr. Anderſon endeavoured to wade in upon the reef, one of them dragged him back by his clothes. They alſo inſiſted upon his throwing down ſome pieces of coral that he had picked up, and, on his refuſal to comply, took them from him by force. Nor would they ſuffer him to retain ſome ſmall plants which he had gathered.

They likewiſe took a fan from Mr. Burney, which, on his coming aſhore, he had received as a preſent. Finding that obedience to their will was the only method of procuring better treatment, the gentlemen returned to the place they had quitted; and the natives now promiſed, that, after they had partaken of a repaſt which had been prepared for them, they ſhould be furniſhed with a canoe to carry them off to their boats. Accordingly, the ſecond chief to whom they had been preſented, having ſeated himſelf on a low ſtool, and directed the multitude to form a large ring, made them ſit down by him. A number of cocoa nuts were now brought, with a quantity of baked plantains, and a piece of the pig that had been dreſſed, was placed before each of them. Their fatigue, however, had taken away their appetites; but they eat a little to pleaſe their entertainers. It being now near ſun-ſet, the iſlanders ſent down to the beach the remainder of the proviſions that had been dreſſed, to be carried to the ſhips. Our gentlemen found a canoe prepared to put them off to their boats, which the natives did with great caution; but as they were puſhing the canoe into the ſurf, one of them ſnatched a bag out of her, which contained a pocket piſtol belonging to Mr. Anderſon, who calling out to the thief with marks of the higheſt diſpleaſure, he ſwam back to the canoe with the bag. The iſlanders then put them on board the boats, with the cocoa nuts, plantains, and other proviſions, and they immediately rowed back to the ſhips.

The reſtrained ſituation of theſe gentlemen gave them very little opportunity of obſerving the country: for they were ſeldom a hundred yards from the place where they had been introduced to the chiefs, and conſequently were confined to the ſurrounding objects. The chiefs, and others perſons of rank, had two little balls, with a common baſe, made of bone, which they hung round their necks with ſmall cord. Red feathers are here conſidered as a particular mark of diſtinction; for none but the chiefs, and the young women who danced, aſſumed them.

Many

Many of the natives were armed with ſpears and clubs, the latter of which were generally about ſix feet long, made of a hard black wood, neatly poliſhed. The ſpears were formed of the ſame wood, ſimply pointed, and were in general twelve feet long; but ſome were ſo ſhort as to ſeem intended for darts.

They preſerved their canoes from the ſun under the ſhade of various trees. Our gentlemen ſaw eight or ten of them, all double ones; that is, two ſingle ones faſtened together by rafters laſhed acroſs. They were about four feet deep, and in length about twenty feet, and the ſides were rounded with a plank raiſed upon them. Two of theſe canoes were curiouſly ſtained all over with black, in innumerable ſmall figures, as triangles, ſquares, &c. and were far ſuperior to any thing of the kind Mr. Anderſon had ever ſeen at any other iſland in the South-Sea. The paddles were almoſt elliptical, and about four feet long.

The ſoil, towards the ſea, is nothing more than a bank of coral, generally ſteep and rugged, which, though it has probably been for many centuries expoſed to the weather, has ſuffered no farther change than becoming black on its ſurface.

It has been already mentioned, that Omai was ſent upon this expedition as Mr. Gore's interpreter; which, perhaps, was not the only ſervice he performed this day. He was queſtioned by the natives concerning us, our country, our ſhips, and arms; in anſwer to which, he told them, among many other particulars, that our country had ſhips as large as their iſland, on board of which were implements of war (deſcribing our guns) of ſuch dimenſions, as to contain ſeveral people within them; one of which could demoliſh the iſland at one ſhot. As for the guns in our two ſhips, he acknowledged they were but ſmall in compariſon with the former; yet even with theſe, he ſaid, we could with great eaſe, at a conſiderable diſtance, deſtroy the iſland, and every ſoul in it. On their inquiring by what means this could be done, Omai produced ſome cartridges from his pocket, and having ſubmitted to inſpection

the balls, and the gunpowder by which they were to be ſet in motion, he diſpoſed the latter upon the ground, and, by means of a piece of lighted wood, ſet it on fire. The ſudden blaſt, the mingled flame and ſmoke, that inſtantaneouſly ſucceeded, filled the natives with ſuch aſtoniſhment, that they no longer doubted the formidable power of our weapons. Had it not been for the terrible ideas they entertained of the guns of our ſhips, from this ſpecimen of their mode of operation, it was imagined that they would have detained the gentlemen the whole night; for Omai aſſured them, that, if he and his friends did not return on board the ſame day, they might expect that the Commodore would fire upon the iſland.

The natives of this iſland call it by the name of Wateeoo. It is ſituated in the longitude of 201° 45′ eaſt, and in the latitude of 20° 1′ ſouth, and is about ſix leagues in circuit. It is a beautiful ſpot, with a ſurface covered with verdure, and compoſed of hills and plains. The ſoil, in ſome parts, is light and ſandy: but, farther up the country, we ſaw from the ſhip, by the aſſiſtance of our glaſſes, a reddiſh caſt on the riſing grounds. There the iſlanders build their houſes, for we could perceive ſeveral of them, which were long and ſpacious. Its produce is nearly the ſame with that of Mangeea Nooe Nainaiwa, the iſland we had laſt quitted.

If we may depend on Omai's report of what he learned from his three countrymen in the courſe of their converſation, the manners of the people of Wateeoo, their general habits of life, and their method of treating ſtrangers, greatly reſemble thoſe that prevail at Otaheite, and its neighbouring iſlands. There is alſo a great ſimilarity between their religious opinions and ceremonies. From every circumſtance, indeed, it may be conſidered as indubitable, that the inhabitants of Wateeoo derive their deſcent from the ſame ſtock, which has ſo remarkably diffuſed itſelf over the immenſe extent of the Southern Ocean.

Calms and light airs having alternately prevailed all the

the night of the 3d of April, before day-break the eafterly fwell had carried the fhips fome diftance from Wateeoo; but having failed of procuring, at that place, fome effectual fupply, there appeared no reafon for our continuing there any longer; we therefore willingly quitted it, and fteered for the ifland which we had difcovered three days before.

We got up with it about ten o'clock in the morning, when Captain Cook immediately difpatched Mr. Gore with two boats, to fee if he could land, and get fubfiftence for our cattle. Though a reef furrounded the land here, as at Wateeoo, and a confiderable furf broke againft the rocks, our boats no fooner reached the weft-fide of the ifland, but they ventured in, and Mr. Gore and his attendants arrived fafe on fhore. Captain Cook feeing they had fo far fucceeded, fent a fmall boat to know if farther affiftance was required. She waited to take in a lading of the produce of the ifland, and did not return till three o'clock in the afternoon: being cleared, fhe was fent again for another cargo; the jolly boat was alfo difpatched upon the fame bufinefs, with orders for Mr. Gore to return with the boats before night, which orders were punctually obferved.

The fupply obtained here was about two hundred cocoa nuts for ourfelves, and for our cattle fome grafs, and a quantity of the leaves and branches of young cocoa trees, and the pandanus.

This ifland lies about three or four leagues from Wateeoo, the inhabitants of which call it Otakootaia. It is in the latitude of 19° 15′ fouth, and the longitude of 201° 37′ eaft, and is fuppofed not to exceed three miles in circuit.

This ifland is entirely deftitute of water. Cocoa palms were the only common trees found there, of which there were feveral clufters, and great quantities of the wharra, or pandanus.

At this time there were no fixed inhabitants upon the ifland; but we difcovered a few empty huts, which convinced us of its being, at leaft, occafionally vifited.

Monuments, consisting of several large stones, were also erected under the shade of some trees: there were also some smaller ones, with which several places were inclosed, where we supposed their dead had been buried. We found in one place a great many cockle shells, of a particular sort, finely grooved, and larger than the fist; from which it was conjectured, that the island had been visited by persons who sometimes feed on shell-fish. Mr. Gore left some nails and a hatchet in one of the huts, for the use of those who might visit the island in future.

The boats being hoisted in, we made sail again to the northward, resolving to try our fortune at Hervey's Island, which was discovered by Captain Cook in 1773, during his last voyage. We got sight of it about daybreak in the morning of the 6th, at the distance of about three leagues. We approached it about eight o'clock, and observed several canoes coming from the shore towards the ships.

Advancing still towards the island, six or seven double canoes immediately came near us, with from three to six men in each of them. At the distance of about a stone's throw from the ship they stopped, and it was with difficulty that Omai prevailed on them to come along-side; but they could not be induced to trust themselves on board. Indeed, their disorderly behaviour did not indicate a disposition to trust us, or to treat us well. They attempted to steal some oars out of the Discovery's boat, and struck a man for endeavouring to prevent them. They also cut away a net containing meat, which hung over the stern of that ship, and at first would not restore it, though they afterwards permitted us to purchase it from them. Those who were about the Resolution, behaved equally disorderly and daring; for, with a sort of hooks made of a long stick, they openly endeavoured to rob us of several things, and actually got a frock belonging to one of our people. It appeared that they had a knowledge of bartering, for they exchanged some fish for some of our small nails, of which they were extravagantly fond, and called

called them *goore*. Pieces of paper, or any other trifling article that was thrown to them, they caught with the greateſt avidity; and if what was thrown fell into the ſea, they immediately plunged in to ſwim after it.

Though the diſtance between Hervey's Iſland and Wateeoo is not very great, the inhabitants differ greatly from each other, both in perſon and diſpoſition. The colour of the natives of Hervey's Iſland is of a deeper caſt, and ſeveral of them had a fierce ſavage aſpect, like the natives of New-Zealand, though ſome were fairer. Their hair was long and black, either hanging looſe about their ſhoulders, or tied in a bunch on the top of the head. Their clothing was a narrow piece of mat, bound ſeveral times round the lower part of the body, and paſſing between the thighs.

Their food, conſiſted of cocoa-nuts, fiſh, and turtle; being deſtitute of dogs and hogs, and the iſland not producing bread-fruit or plantains. Their canoes (near thirty of which appeared one time in ſight) are tolerably large, and well built, and bear ſome reſemblance to thoſe of Wateeoo.

We drew near the north-weſt part of the iſland about one o'clock. This ſeemed to be the only part where we could expect to find anchorage, or a landing place for our boats. Captain Cook immediately diſpatched Lieutenant King, with two armed boats, to ſound and reconnoitre the coaſt.

The boats returned at three o'clock, and Mr. King informed Captain Cook, that he could find no anchorage for the ſhips; and that the boats could advance no farther than the outer edge of the reef, which was almoſt a quarter of a mile from the dry land; that a number of the natives came upon the reef, armed with clubs and long pikes, meaning, as he ſuppoſed, to oppoſe his landing, though, at the ſame time, they threw cocoa nuts to our people, and requeſted them to come on ſhore; and, notwithſtanding this ſeeming friendly treatment, the women were very active in bringing down a freſh ſupply of darts and ſpears.

Captain

Captain Cook considered that, as we could not bring the ships to anchor, the attempt to procure grass here would be attended with delay and danger. Being thus disappointed in all the islands after our leaving New Zealand, and having, from variety of circumstances, been unavoidably retarded in our progress, it was in vain to think of doing any thing this year in the high latitudes of the northern hemisphere, from which we were then so far distant, though it was then the season for our operations there. Thus situated, it was necessary to pursue such measures as appeared best calculated to preserve our cattle, and save the stores and provisions of the ships; the better to enable us to prosecute our northern discoveries, which could not now commence till a year later than was intended.

The Captain, therefore, determined to bear away for the Friendly Islands, where he knew he could be well supplied with every thing he wanted; and, it being necessary to run night and day, he ordered Captain Clerke to keep a league a-head of the Resolution, because his ship could best claw off the land which we might possibly fall in with in our passage.

In order to save our water, Captain Cook ordered the still to be kept at work a whole day; during which time we procured about fifteen gallons of fresh water.

Light breezes continued till Thursday the 10th, when the wind blew some hours fresh from the north and north-north-west. In the afternoon we had some very heavy rain, attended with thunder squalls. We collected as much rain water as filled five of our puncheons. When these squalls had blown over, the wind was very unsettled, both in strength and position, till the next day at noon, when it fixed at north-west and north-north-west, and blew a fresh breeze.

We were thus persecuted with the wind in our teeth, and had the additional mortification to find those very winds here which we had reason to expect farther south. At day break, however, on the 13th, we perceived Palmerston's Island, at the distance of about five leagues, but did not get up with it till the next morning

ing at eight. Captain Cook then dispatched three boats from the Resolution and one from the Discovery, with a proper officer in each, to search for a convenient landing place; we being now under an absolute necessity of procuring here some provender for our cattle, or we must certainly have lost them.

What is called Palmerston's Island consists of a group of small islets, about nine or ten in number, connected together by a reef of coral rocks, and lying in circular direction. The boats first examined the most southeasterly islet, and, not succeeding there, ran down to the second, where they immediately landed. Captain Cook then bore down with the ships, till we were a-breast of the place, where we kept standing off and on, there being no bottom to be found to anchor upon; this, however, was of no material consequence, as there were no human beings upon the island except the party who had landed from our boats.

At one o'clock one of the boats returned, laden with scurvy grass and young cocoa trees, which was, at this time, a most excellent repast for our animals on board. A message was also brought from Mr. Gore, who commanded the party upon this expedition, acquainting us, that the island abounded with such produce, and also with the wharra tree and cocoa nuts. In consequence of this information, Captain Cook determined to get a sufficient supply of these articles before he quitted this station, and accordingly went ashore in a small boat, accompanied by the Captain of the Discovery. The island does not exceed a mile in circumference, and is not elevated above three feet beyond the level of the sea. It consisted almost entirely of a coral sand, with a small mixture of blackish mould, which appeared to be produced from rotten vegetables.

At one part of the reef, which bounds the lake within, almost even with the surface, there was a large bed of coral, which afforded a most enchanting prospect. Its base, which was fixed to the shore, extended so far that it could not be seen, so that it appeared to be suspended in the water. Even this delightful scene

was

was greatly improved by the multitude of fishes that gently glided along, seemingly with the most perfect security. Their colours were the most beautiful that can be imagined; blue, yellow, black, red, &c. far excelling any thing that can be produced by art. The richness of this submarine grotto was greatly increased by their various forms; and the whole could not possibly be surveyed without a pleasing transport, accompanied, at the same time, with regret, that a work so astonishingly elegant should be concealed in a place so seldom explored by the human eye.

The 15th, like the preceding day, was spent in collecting subsistence for the cattle, consisting principally of tender branches of the wharra tree, palm-cabbage and young cocoa-nut trees. A sufficient supply of these having been procured by sun set, Captain Cook ordered all the people on board; but, having very little wind, he determined to employ the next day in endeavouring, from the next island to leeward, to get some cocoa nuts for our people: for this purpose, we kept standing off and on all night, and about nine o'clock in the morning we went to the west side of the islands, and landed from our boats with little difficulty. The people immediately employed themselves in gathering cocoa nuts, which we found in the greatest plenty: but it was a tedious operation to convey them to our boats, being obliged to carry them half a mile over the reef, up to the middle in water. Omai, who accompanied us, presently caught with a scoop net as many fish as supplied the party on shore for dinner, besides sending a quantity to each ship. Men of war and tropic birds were found here in abundance; so that we fared most sumptuously. Before night the boats made two trips, and were each time heavy laden; with the last, Captain Cook returned on board, leaving his Third Lieutenant, Mr. Williamson, with a party, to prepare another lading for the boats against the next morning.

Accordingly, Captain Cook dispatched them about seven o'clock, and by noon they returned laden. No delay

delay was made in ſending them back for another cargo, with orders for all to be on board by ſun ſet. Theſe orders being punctually obeyed, we hoiſted in the boats, and ſailed to the weſtward, with a light air from the north.

The iſlet we laſt came from is ſomewhat larger than the other, and almoſt covered with cocoa palms. The other productions were the ſame as at the firſt iſlet.

The iſlets comprehended under the name of Palmerſton's Iſland, may be ſaid to be the ſummit of a reef of coral rock, covered only with a thin coat of ſand, though clothed with trees and plants, like the low grounds of the high iſlands of this ocean.

Having left Palmerſton's Iſland, we ſteered weſt, in order to proceed to Annamooka. We had variable winds, with ſqualls, ſome thunder, and much rain. The ſhowers being very copious, we ſaved a conſiderable quantity of water; and, as we could procure a greater ſupply in one hour by the rain than by diſtillation in a month, we laid the ſtill aſide, as being attended with more trouble than advantage.

The heat, which had continued in the extreme for about a month, became much more diſagreeable in this cloſe rainy weather, and we apprehended it would ſoon be noxious; it is, however, remarkable, that there was not then a ſingle perſon ſick on board either of the ſhips.

We paſſed Savage Iſland, which Captain Cook diſcovered in 1774, in the night between the 24th and 25th: and on the 28th, about ten o'clock in the morning, we ſaw the iſlands to the eaſtward of Annamooka, bearing north by weſt, about five leagues diſtant. We ſteered to the ſouth, and then hauled up for Annamooka. At the approach of night, the weather being ſqually, with rain, we anchored in fifteen fathoms water.

We had not long anchored when two canoes paddled towards us, and came along ſide without delay or heſitation: there were four men in one of the canoes, and three in the other. They brought with them

ſome

ſome ſugar cane, bread fruit, plantains, and cocoa nuts, which they bartered with us for nails. After theſe canoes had left us, we were viſited by another; but as night was approaching, he did not long continue with us. The iſland neareſt to us was Komango, which was five miles diſtant.

At four o'clock the next morning, Captain Cook diſpatched Lieutenant King, with two boats, to Komango, in order to procure refreſhments; and at five, made the ſignal to weigh, to proceed to Annamooka.

As ſoon as day light appeared, we were viſited by ſix or ſeven canoes, bringing with them two pigs, ſome fowls, ſeveral large wood pigeons, ſmall rails, and ſome violet-coloured coots, beſides fruits and roots of various kinds; which they exchanged with us for nails, hatchets, beads, &c. They had other articles of commerce, but Captain Cook gave particular orders that no curioſities ſhould be purchaſed till the ſhips were ſupplied with proviſions, and until they had obtained permiſſion from him.

About noon, Mr. King's boat returned with ſeven hogs, ſome fowls, a quantity of fruit and roots, and alſo ſome graſs for our animals. His party was treated with great civility at Komango. The inhabitants did not appear to be numerous; and their huts, which almoſt joined to each other, were but indifferent.

The boats being aboard, we ſtood for Annamooka, and, having little wind, we intended to go between Annamooka-ette and the breakers at the ſouth-eaſt; but, on drawing near, we met with very irregular ſoundings, which obliged us to relinquiſh the deſign, and go to the ſouthward. The night was dark and rainy, and we had the wind from every direction. The next morning, at day light, we were farther off than we had been the preceding evening, and the wind was now right in our teeth.

We continued to ply to very little purpoſe the whole day, and in the evening anchored in thirty-nine fathoms water.

At four the next morning, Captain Cook ordered a boat

boat to be hoiſted out, and the maſter to ſound the ſouth-weſt ſide of Annamooka. When he returned, he reported, that he had ſounded between Great and Little Annamooka, where he found ten and twelve fathoms depth of water; that the place was very well ſheltered from winds: but that no freſh water was to be had but at a conſiderable diſtance inland, and that, even there, it was neither plentiful nor good. For this very ſufficient reaſon, Captain Cook reſolved to anchor on the north ſide of the iſland, where, in his laſt voyage, he had found a convenient place for watering and landing.

Though not above a league diſtant, we did not reach it till about five o'clock in the afternoon, being retarded by the quantity of canoes that crowded round the ſhips, laden with abundant ſupplies of the produce of their iſland. Several of theſe canoes, which were double, had a large ſail, and carried between forty and fifty men each. We came to an anchor in eighteen fathoms water, the iſland extending from eaſt to ſouth-weſt, about three quarters of a mile diſtant. Thus Captain Cook reſumed the ſtation which he had occupied when he viſited Annamooka three years before.

The next day, during the preparations for watering, Captain Cook went aſhore, in the forenoon, accompanied by Captain Clerke, and others, to fix on a place for ſetting up the obſervatories, the natives having readily granted us permiſſion. They ſhewed us every mark of civility, and accommodated us with a boat houſe, which anſwered the purpoſe of a tent. Toobou, the chief of the iſland, conducted Captain Cook and Omai to his houſe, ſituated on a pleaſant ſpot, in the center of his plantation. It was ſurrounded with a graſs plat, which, he ſaid, was for the purpoſe of cleanſing their feet before they entered his habitation. Such an attention to clealineſs we had never obſerved before, wherever we had viſited in this ocean, though we afterwards found it to be very common at the Friendly Iſlands. No carpet in an Engliſh drawing

room

room could be kept neater than the mats which covered the floor of Toobou's houſe.

While we were on ſhore we bartered for ſome hogs and fruit, and, when we arrived on board, the ſhips were crowded with the natives. As very few of them came empty handed, we were ſpeedily ſupplied with every refreſhment.

Our various operations on ſhore began the next day. Some were buſied in making hay, others in filling our water caſks, and a third party in cutting wood. On the ſame day, Meſſrs. King and Bailey began to obſerve equal altitudes of the ſun, in order to get the rate of our time keepers.

On the 4th of May, the Diſcovery loſt her ſmall bower anchor, the cable being cut in two by the rocks.

On the 7th, the Diſcovery having found her ſmall bower anchor, ſhifted her birth; but not till after her beſt bower cable had met with the fate of the other.

A large junk axe having been ſtolen out of the ſhip by one of the natives, on the firſt day of our arrival at Annamooka, application was made to Feenou, the king of the iſland, to exert his authority to get it reſtored; who gave orders for that purpoſe, which exacted ſuch implicit obedience, that it was brought on board before we had finiſhed our dinner. We had, indeed, many opportunities of remarking how expert theſe people were in thievery. Even ſome of their chiefs were not aſhamed of acting in that profeſſion. On the 9th of May one of them was detected carrying out of the ſhip the bolt belonging to the ſpun-yard winch, which he had carefully concealed under his clothes; for this offence Captain Cook ſentenced him to receive a dozen laſhes, and to be confined till he paid a hog for his liberty. Though after this circumſtance we were troubled with no more thieves of rank, their ſervants or ſlaves were conſtantly employed in this dirty buſineſs, and they received a flogging with as much ſeeming indifference as if it had been upon the mainmaſt. When any of them were caught in the act of thieving, inſtead of interceding in their behalf, their

maſters

maſters would often adviſe us to kill them. This being a puniſhment we were not fond of inflicting, they uſually eſcaped without any kind of puniſhment. They were alike inſenſible of the ſhame and torture of corporal chaſtiſement. At length, however, Captain Clerke contrived a mode of treatment, which we ſuppoſed had ſome effect. Immediately upon detection he ordered their heads to be completely ſhaved, and thus pointed them out as objects of ridicule to their countrymen, and put our people upon their guard, to deprive them of future opportunities for a repetition of their thefts.

Feenou was ſo fond of our company, that he dined on board every day, though he did not always partake of our fare. On the 10th, his ſervants brought him a meſs which had been dreſſed on ſhore, conſiſting of fiſh, ſoup, and yams; cocoa-nut liquor had been uſed inſtead of water, in which the fiſh had been boiled or ſtewed (perhaps in a wooden veſſel with hot ſtones) and it was carried on board on a plantain leaf. Captain Cook taſted of the meſs, and was ſo well pleaſed with it, that he afterwards ordered ſome fiſh to be dreſſed in the ſame way; but, though his cook ſucceeded tolerably well, it was much inferior to the diſh he attempted to imitate.

Having, in a great meaſure, exhauſted the iſland of almoſt every article of food, on Sunday, the 11th of May, we removed from the ſhore the obſervatories, horſes, and other things that we had landed; intending to ſail as ſoon as the Diſcovery ſhould have found her beſt bower anchor. Feenou, hearing that the Captain meant to proceed to Tongataboo, earneſtly entreated him to alter his plan; expreſſing as much averſion to it, as if, by diverting him from it, he wiſhed to promote ſome particular intereſt of his own. He warmly recommended a group of iſlands, called Hapaee, lying to the north-eaſt; where, he aſſured us, we could be eaſily and plentifully ſupplied with every refreſhment, and even offered to attend us thither in perſon. In conſequence of his advice, Hapaee was made

choice of; and, as it had not been visited by any European ships, the surveying it became an object to Captain Cook.

On Tuesday the 13th, Captain Clerke's anchor was happily recovered, and, on the morning of the 14th, we got under sail and left Annamooka.

Though this island is somewhat higher than the other small isles that surround it, yet it is lower than Mangeea and Wateeoo, and even those are but of a moderate height. The shore where our ships lay, consists of a steep, rugged, coral rock, about nine or ten feet high, except two sandy beaches, which are defended from the sea by a reef of the same sort of rock. In the center of the island there is a salt-water lake, about a mile and a half in breadth, round which the ground rises with a gradual ascent, and we could not trace its having any communication with the sea. On the rising parts of the island, and especially towards the sea, the soil is either of a blackish loose mould, or a reddish clay: but there is not a stream of fresh water to be found in any part of the island.

The land here is well cultivated, except in a few places; and, though some parts appear to lie waste, they are only left to recover the strength exhausted by constant culture, for we often saw the natives at work upon these spots, in order to plant them again. Yams and plantains form their principal plantations; many of which are very extensive, and enclosed with fences of reed about six feet high. Fences of less compass were often seen within these, surrounding the houses of the principal people. The bread fruit and cocoa-nut trees are intersperſed without any regular order, but principally near the habitations of the natives. The other parts of the island, especially towards the sea, and round the lake, are covered with luxuriant trees and bushes, among which there are a great many mangroves and fatanoo trees.

In the direct track to Hapaee, whither we were now bound, to the north and north-east of Annamooka, a great number of small isles are seen. Amidst the rocks and

and ſhoals adjoining to this group, we were doubtful whether there was a free paſſage for ſhips of ſuch magnitude as ours, though the natives ſailed through the intervals in their canoes; therefore, when we weighed anchor from Annamooka, we ſteered to go to the weſtward of the above iſlands, and north-north-weſt towards Kao and Toofoa, two iſlands remarkable for their great height, and the moſt weſterly of thoſe in ſight. Feenou, with his attendants, remained in the Reſolution till about noon, and then entered the large ſailing canoe which had brought him from Tongataboo, and ſtood in among the cluſter of iſlands, of which we were now abreaſt.

In the afternoon, about four o'clock, we ſteered to the north, leaving Toofoa and Koa on our larboard. We intended to have anchored for the night, but it arrived before we could find a place in leſs than fifty fathoms water; and we rather choſe to ſpend the night under ſail, than come to in ſuch a depth.

In the afternoon we had been within two leagues of Toofoa, and obſerved the ſmoke of it ſeveral times in the day. There is a volcano upon it, of which the Friendly Iſlanders entertained ſome ſuperſtitious notions, and call it Kollofeea, ſaying, it is an Otooa, or divinity. We were informed that it ſometimes throws up very large ſtones, and the crater is compared to the ſize of a ſmall iſlet, which has not ceaſed ſmoking in the memory of the inhabitants, nor have they any tradition that it ever did. We were told that Toofoa was but thinly inhabited, but that the water upon it was excellent.

At day break, on the 15th, we were not far from Kao, which is a large rock of a conic figure; we ſteered to the paſſage between Footooha and Hafaiva, with a gentle breeze at ſouth-eaſt. About ten o'clock, Feenou came on board, and continued with us all day. He brought with him a quantity of fruit and two hogs; and in the courſe of the day, ſeveral canoes came to barter quantities of the former article, which was very acceptable to us, as our ſtock began to be low. At

noon

noon, our latitude was 19° 49′ 45″ ſouth, and we had made ſeven miles of longitude, from Annamooka.

After having paſſed Footooha, we met with a reef of rocks, and there being but little wind, it was attended with ſome difficulty to keep clear of them. Having paſſed this reef, we hauled up for Neeneeva, a ſmall low iſle in the direction of eaſt-north-eaſt from Footooha, in hopes of finding an anchorage, but were again diſappointed: for, notwithſtanding we had land in every direction, the ſea was unfathomable.

At day break on the 16th, we ſteered with a gentle breeze at ſouth-eaſt for Hapaee, which was now in ſight; and perceived it to be low land, from the trees only appearing above the water. At nine o'clock we ſaw it plainly forming three iſlands, nearly equal in ſize; and ſoon after, a fourth appeared to the ſouthward of theſe, as large as any of the others. Each of the iſlands appeared to be of a ſimilar height and appearance, and about ſix or ſeven miles in length. The moſt northern of them is called Haanno, the next Foa, the third Leſooga, and the fourth Hoolaiva; but they are all four included under the general name of Hapaee.

By the ſunſet we got up with the northernmoſt of theſe iſles, where we experienced the ſame diſtreſs for want of anchorage that we did the two preceding evenings; having another night to ſpend under ſail, with land and breakers in every direction. Feenou, who had been on board all day, went forward to Hapaee in the evening, and took Omai with him in the canoe. He was not unmindful of our diſagreable ſituation, and kept up a good fire the whole night, by way of a land mark.

At the return of daylight on the 17th, being then cloſe in with Foa, we perceived it was joined to Haanno, by a reef running from one iſland to the other, even with the ſurface of the ſea. Capt. Cook diſpatched a boat to look for anchorage; and a proper place was found. We were not above three quarters of a mile from the ſhore; and as we lay before a creek

creek in the reef it was convenient landing at all times.

As ſoon as we had anchored, we were ſurrounded by a multitude of canoes, and our ſhips were preſently filled with the natives. They brought with them hogs, fowls, fruit, and roots, which they exchanged for cloth, knives, beads, nails, and hatchets. Feenou and Omai having come on board early in the morning, in order to introduce Captain Cook to the people of the iſland, he ſoon accompanied them on ſhore for that purpoſe.

The chief conducted the Captain to a hut, ſituated cloſe to the ſea beach, which was brought thither but a few minutes before for his reception. In this Feenou, Omai, and Captain Cook were ſeated. The other chiefs and the multitude fronting them on the outſide, and they alſo ſeated themſelves. Captain Cook being aſked how long he intended to ſtay, anſwered, five days. Taipa was therefore ordered to ſit by him, and declare this to the people. He then harangued them in words nearly to the following purport, as we afterwards were informed by Omai. He exhorted both old and young to look upon Captain Cook as a friend, who meant to continue with them a few days; and that during his ſtay among them, they would not ſteal any thing from him, or offend him in any other manner. He informed them, that it was expected they ſhould bring hogs, fowls, fruit, &c. to the ſhips; for which they would receive in exchange, ſuch articles as he enumerated. Soon after Taipa had delivered his addreſs to the aſſembly, Feenou left them, on which Captain Cook was informed by Taipa, that it was neceſſary he ſhould make a preſent to Eraoupa, the chief of the iſland. The Captain being not unprepared for this, gave him ſuch articles as far exceeded his expectation. This liberality created ſimilar demands from two chiefs of other iſles who were preſent, and even from Taipa himſelf.

Feenou now reſumed his ſeat, ordering Eraoupa to

ſit by him, and harrangue the people, as Taipa had done, which he did nearly to the ſame purpoſe.

Theſe ceremonies over, the chief, at the Captain's requeſt, conducted him to the three ſtagnant pools of what he called freſh water; in one of which the water was indeed tolerable, and the ſituation convenient for filling our caſks.

On Sunday the 18th, early in the morning, Feenou and Omai, who now ſlept on ſhore with the chief, came on board to requeſt Captain Cook's preſence upon the iſland. He accompanied them, and upon landing, was conducted to the place where he had been ſeated the preceding day, and where he beheld a large concourſe of people already aſſembled. Though he imagined that ſomething extraordinary was in agitation, yet he could not conjecture what, nor could Omai give him any information.

Soon after he was ſeated, about an hundred of the natives appeared, and advanced, laden with yams, plantains, bread fruit, cocoa nuts, and ſugar canes; their burdens were depoſited on our left. A number of others arrived ſoon after, bearing the ſame kind of articles, which were collected into two piles on the right ſide. To theſe were faſtened two pigs, and half a dozen fowls; and to thoſe upon the left, ſix pigs and two turtles. Earoupa ſeated himſelf before the articles on the left ſide, and another chief before thoſe upon the right; they being, it was ſuppoſed, the two chiefs who had procured them by order of Feenou, who was as implicitly obeyed here, as he had been at Annamooka, and who had probably laid this tax upon the chiefs of Hapaee for the preſent occaſion.

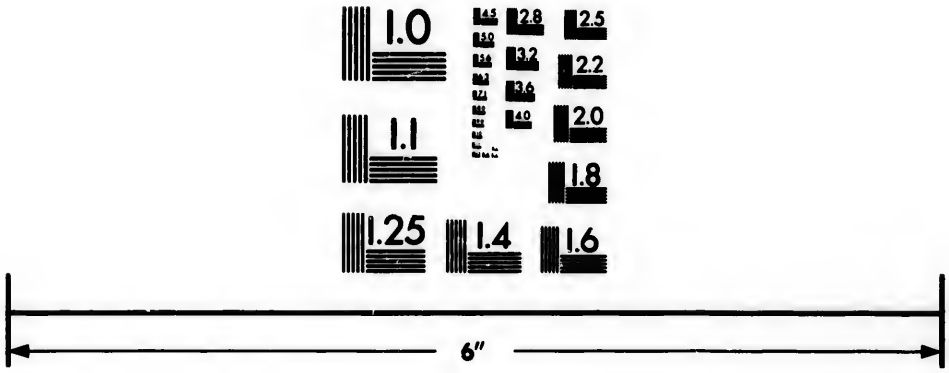
When this munificent collection of proviſions was placed in order, and advantageouſly diſpoſed, the bearers of it joined the multitude, who formed a circle round the whole. Immediately after, a number of men armed with clubs, entered this circle or area; where they paraded about for a few minutes, and then one half of them retired to one ſide and the other half to the other ſide, ſeating themſelves before the ſpectators.

tors. Presently after, they successively entertained us with single combats; one champion from one side challenging those from the other side, partly by words, but more by expressive gestures, to send one of their party to oppose him. The challenge was in general accepted: the two combatants placed themselves in proper attitudes, and the engagement began, which continued till one of them yielded, or till their weapons were broken. At the conclusion of each combat, the victor squatted himself down before the chief, then immediately rose up and retired. Some old men who seemed to preside as judges, gave their plaudits in a very few words; and the multitude, especially those on the side of the conqueror, celebrated the glory he had acquired in two or three loud huzzas.

This entertainment was sometimes suspended for a short space, and the intervals of time were filled up with wrestling and boxing matches. The first were performed in the manner practised at Otaheite, and the second differed very little from the English manner. A couple of stout wenches next stepped forth, and without ceremony began boxing with as much dexterity as the men. This contest, however, was but of short duration, for in the space of half a minute one of them gave it up. The victorious heroine was applauded by the spectators, in the same manner as the successful combatants of the other sex. Though we expressed some disapprobation at this part of the entertainment, it did not hinder two other females from entering the lists, who seemed to be spirited girls, and if two old women had not interposed to part them, would probably have given each other a good drubbing. At least three thousand spectators were present when these combats were exhibited, and every thing was conducted with the most perfect good humour on all sides; though some of the champions of both sexes received blows which they must have felt the effect of for some time after.

The diversions being finished, the chief informed Captain Cook, that the provisions on our right hand

IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503


2.5
2.2
2.0
1.8
1.0

were a present to Omai; and that those on our left, making about two-thirds of the whole quantity) were intended for him, and that he might suit his own convenience in taking them on board.

Four boats were loaded with the munificence of Feenou, whose favours exceeded any Captain Cook had ever received from the sovereigns of any of the islands which he had visited in the Pacific Ocean. He therefore embraced the first opportunity of convincing Feenou, that he was not insensible of his liberality, by bestowing upon him such commodities as he supposed were most valuable in his estimation. Feenou was so highly pleased with the return that was made him, that he left the Captain still indebted to him, by sending him two large hogs, some yams, and a considerable quantity of cloth.

Feenou having expressed a desire to see the marines perform their exercise, Captain Cook ordered them all ashore on the morning of the 20th of May. As they had gone through various evolutions, and fired several vollies, which seemed to give pleasure to our numerous spectators, the chief, in his turn, entertained us with an exhibition, which was performed with an exactness and dexterity far surpassing what they had seen of our military manœuvres. It was a kind of dance, performed by men, in which one hundred and five persons were engaged; each having an instrument in his hand resembling a paddle, two feet and a half long, with a thin blade and a small handle. With these instruments various flourishes were made, each of which was accompanied with a different movement or a different attitude of the body. At first, the dancers ranged themselves in three lines, and so changed their stations by different evolutions, that those who had been in the rear came into the front. At one part of the performance, they extended themselves in one line, afterwards they formed themselves into a semicircle, and then into two square columns. During the last movement, one of them came forward, and per-

performed an antic dance before Captain Cook, with which the entertainment ended.

The muſic that accompanied the dances was produced by two drums, or rather logs of wood, from which they forced ſome varied notes by beating on them with two ſticks. The dancers, however, did not appear to be much aſſiſted or directed by theſe ſounds; but by a chorus of vocal muſic, in which all the performers joined. Their ſong was rather melodious, and their correſponding motions were ſo ſkillfully executed, that the whole body of dancers appeared as one regular machine. Such a performance would have been applauded even on an European theatre. It far exceeded any attempt that we had made to entertain them; inſomuch that they ſeemed to plume themſelves on their ſuperiority over us. They eſteemed none of our muſical inſtruments, except the drum, and even thought that inferior to their own. They held our French horns in the higheſt contempt, and would not pay the ſmalleſt attention to them, either here or at any other of the iſlands.

To give them a more favourable opinion of the amuſements and ſuperior attainments of the Engliſh, Captain Cook ordered ſome fireworks to be prepared; and, after it was dark, exhibited them in the preſence of Feenou, and a vaſt multitude of people. They were highly entertained with the performance in general; but our water and ſky rockets in particular, aſtoniſhed them beyond all conception. They now admitted that the ſcale was turned in our favour.

This was followed by every exertion of the natives to entertain us, and their muſic and dancing were continued for ſome time, in which the women had no inconſiderable ſhare, moving with much grace and agility.

Soon after a perſon unexpectedly entered, making ſome ludicrous remarks on the fireworks that had been exhibited, which extorted a burſt of laughter from the croud. We had then a dance by the attendants of Feenou: they formed a double circle of twenty-four

each round the chorus, and joined in a gentle soothing song, accompanied with motions of the head and hands. They also began with slow movements, which gradually became more and more rapid, and finally closed with several very ingenious transpositions of the two circles.

The festivity of this memorable night concluded with a dance, in which the principal people assisted. In many respects it resembled the preceding ones, but they increased their motions to a prodigious quickness, shaking their heads from shoulder to shoulder, insomuch that they appeared in danger of dislocating their necks. This was attended with a clapping of the hands, and a kind of savage holla! or shriek. A person, on one side, repeated something in a truly musical recitative, and with an air so graceful, as might put some of our applauded performers to the blush. He was answered by another, and this was repeated several times by the whole body on each side; and they finished, by singing and dancing, as they had begun.

The two last dances were universally approved by all the spectators. They were perfectly in time, and some of their gestures were so expressive, that it might justly be said, they spoke the language that accompanied them.

The theatre for these performances was an open space among the trees, bordering on the sea, with lights, placed at small intervals, round the inside of the circle. Though the concourse of people was pretty large, their number was much inferior to that assembled in the forenoon, when the marines performed their exercise. At that time many of our gentlemen supposed there might be present five thousand persons, or upward; but Captain Cook supposes that to be rather an exaggerated account.

The next day, which was the 21st of May, Captain Cook made an excursion into the Island of Lesooga, on foot, which he found to be, in some respects, superior to Annamooka, the plantations being not only more numerous, but also more extensive. Many parts of the

the country, near the sea, are still waste; owing, perhaps to the sandiness of the soil. But, in the internal part of the island, the soil is better; and the marks of considerable population, and of an improved state of cultivation, are very conspicuous. Many of the plantations are enclosed in such a manner, that the fences, running parallel to each other, form spacious public roads. Large spots, covered with the paper mulberry trees, were observed; and the plantations, in general, were abundantly stocked with such plants and fruit trees as the island produces. To these the Commodore made some addition, by sowing the seeds of melons, pumkins, Indian corn, &c. Near the landing-place we observed a mount two or three feet high, on which stood four or five little huts, wherein the bodies of some persons of distinction had been interred. The island is but seven miles in length; and its breadth, in some places, is not above three miles. The east side has a reef, projecting considerably, against which the sea breaks with great violence. It is a continuation of this reef that joins Lefooga to Foa, which is but half a mile distant; and, at low water, the natives can walk upon this reef from one island to the other. The shore is either a sandy beach, or a coral rock.

When the Captain returned from his excursion, and went on board, he found a large sailing canoe fastened to the stern of the Resolution. In this canoe was Latooliboula, whom the Commodore had seen, during his last voyage, at Tongataboo, and who was then supposed by him to be the king of that island. He could not be prevailed upon to come on board, but continued sitting in his canoe with an air of uncommon gravity. The islanders called him *Areekee*, which signifies King; a title which we had not heard any of them give to Feenou, however extensive his authority over them had appeared to be. Latooliboula remained under the stern till the evening, and then departed. Feenou was on board the Resolution at that time; but neither of these chiefs took the smallest notice of the other.

On the 23d, as we were preparing to leave the island,

Feenou and his prime-minister Taipa came along-side in a canoe, and informed us that they were going to Vavaoo, an island situate, as they said, about two days sail to the northward of Hapaee. They assured us, that the object of their voyage was to procure for us an additional supply of hogs, besides some red-feathered caps for Omai to carry with him to Otaheite; and desired us not to sail till their return, which would be in four or five days; after which Feenou would accompany us to Tongataboo. Captain Cook consented to wait the return of this chief, who immediately set out for Vavaoo.

On Saturday the 25th, Captain Cook went into a house where a woman was dressing the eyes of a child, who seemed blind. The instruments used by this female oculist were two slender wooden probes, with which she brushed the eye so as to make them bleed. In the same house he found another woman shaving a child's head with a shark's tooth, stuck into the end of a stick: she first wetted the hair with a rag dipped in water, and then making use of her instrument, took off the hair as close as if a razor had been employed. Captain Cook soon after tried upon himself one of these remarkable instruments, which he found to be an excellent substitute. The natives of these islands, however, have a different method of shaving their beards, which operation they perform with two shells; one of which they place under a part of the beard, and with the other, applied above, they scrape off that part: in this manner they can shave very close, though the process is rather tedious. There are among them some men who seem to profess this trade: for it was as common for our sailors to go ashore to have their beards scraped off after the mode of Hapaee, as it was for their chiefs to come on board to be shaved by our barbers.

Captain Cook finding that little or nothing of what the island produced was now brought to the ships, determined to change his station, and to wait Feenou's return in some other anchoring place, where we might still meet with refreshments. We accordingly, on the 26th,

26th, made ſail to the ſouthward along the reef of the iſland, and having paſſed ſeveral ſhoals, hauled into a bay, that lies between the north end of Hoolaiva, and the ſouth of Lefooga, and there anchored. We had no ſooner caſt anchor, than Mr. Bligh, Maſter of the Reſolution, was ſent to ſound the bay where we were now ſtationed; and Captain Cook, accompanied by Lieutenant Gore, landed on the ſouthern part of Lefooga, to look for freſh water, and examine the country. On the approach of night, the Captain and Mr. Gore returned on board, and Mr. Bligh came back from ſounding the bay, in which he found from fourteen to twenty fathoms water, with a bottom principally of ſand.

Lefooga and Hoolaiva are ſeparated from each other by a reef of coral-rocks, dry at low water. Some of our gentlemen, who landed in the laſt-mentioned iſland, found not the ſmalleſt mark of cultivation, or habitation, upon it, except a ſingle hut, in which a man employed to catch fiſh and turtle reſided.

On Tueſday the 27th, at break of day, the Commodore made the ſignal to weigh; and as he intended to attempt, in his way to Tongataboo, a paſſage to Annamooka, by the ſouth-weſt, among the intermediate iſles, he ſent Mr. Bligh in a boat to ſound before the ſhips. But before we got under ſail, the wind became ſo variable and unſettled, as to render it unſafe to attempt a paſſage with which we were ſo little acquainted: we therefore lay faſt, and made ſignal for the Maſter to return. He and the Maſter of the Diſcovery were afterwards ſent, each in a boat, to examine the channels. Towards noon, a large ſailing canoe came under our ſtern, in which was a perſon named Poulaho, or Futtafaihe, or both; who was ſaid, by the natives then on board, to be king of Tongataboo, Annamooka, Hapaee, and all the neighbouring iſlands. We were ſurprized to find a ſtranger dignified with this title, which we had been taught to believe appertained to another: but they perſiſted in their aſſertions, that the ſupreme dignity belonged to Poulaho; and now for the firſt time

acknowledged, that Feenou was not the king, but a ſubordinate chief, though of great power. Poulaho was now invited by the Captain on board, where he was not an unwelcome gueſt, as he brought with him two fat hogs by way of preſent. This great perſonage, though not very tall, was extremely unwieldy, and almoſt ſhapeleſs with corpulence. He appeared to be about forty; his hair was ſtraight, and his features conſiderably different from thoſe of the majority of his people. We found him to be a man of gravity and good ſenſe. He viewed the ſhip, and the various new objects, with particular attention; and aſked many pertinent queſtions. When he had gratified his curioſity in looking at the cattle, and other novelties, he was requeſted to walk down into the cabin; to which ſome of his retinue objected, ſaying, that if he ſhould go down thither, it would doubtleſs happen that people would walk over his head; a circumſtance that could not be permitted. Though the Captain offered to obviate this objection, by ordering that no one ſhould preſume to walk over the cabin, Poulaho waved all ceremony, and went down without any previous ſtipulation. He now appeared to be no leſs ſolicitous than his people were, to convince us that he was ſovereign, and not Feenou. He ſat down to dinner with us, but eat and drank very little; and afterwards deſired our Commodore to accompany him on ſhore. Captain Cook attended the chief in his own boat, having firſt made him ſuch preſents as exceeded his expectations; in return for which, Poulaho ordered two more hogs to be ſent on board. The chief was then carried out of the boat, by his own ſubjects, on a board reſembling a hand-barrow; and immediately ſeated himſelf in a ſmall houſe near the ſhore. He placed the Captain at his ſide; and his attendants formed a ſemi-circle before them, on the outſide of the houſe. An old woman ſat cloſe to the chief, with a kind of fan in her hand, to prevent his being incommoded by the flies. The various articles which his people had procured by trading on board the ſhips, being

now

now displayed before him, he attentively looked over them all, inquired what they had given in exchange, and, at length, ordered every thing to be returned to the respective owners, except a glass-bowl, which he reserved for himself. Those who brought these things to him, first squatted themselves down before him, then deposited their purchases, and instantly rose and retired. They observed the same ceremony in taking them away; and not one of them presumed to speak to him standing. His attendants, just before they left him, paid him obeisance, by bowing their heads down to the sole of his foot, and touching it with the upper and under side of the fingers of each hand. Captain Cook was charmed with the decorum that was maintained on this occasion, having scarce seen the like any where, even among more civilized nations.

When the Captain arrived on board, he found the Master returned from his expedition, who informed him, that, as far as he had proceeded, there was a passage for the ships, and tolerable anchorage; but that, towards the south and south-east, he observed numerous shoals, breakers, and small isles. In consequence of this report, we relinquished all thoughts of a passage that way; and being resolved to return to Annamooka by the same route which we had so lately experienced to be a safe one, we should have sailed the next morning, which was the 28th, if the wind had not been very unsettled.

On the 29th, at day-break, we weighed with a fine breeze at east north-east, and made sail to the westward, followed by several sailing canoes.

In the afternoon the easterly wind was succeeded by a fresh breeze at south south-east. Our course being now south south-west, we were obliged to ply to windward, and barely fetched the northern side of Footooha by eight o'clock in the evening. The next day we plied up to Lofanga, and got soundings, under the lee or north-west side, in forty fathoms water; but the bottom being rocky, and a chain of breakers lying to leeward, we stretched away for Kotoo, expecting to

find better anchorage there. It was dark before we reached that island, where finding no convenient place to anchor in, we passed the night in making short boards. On the 31st, at break of day, we stood for the channel which is between Kotoo, and the reef of rocks lying to the westward of it; but, on our approach, we found the wind insufficient to lead us through. We therefore bore up on the outside of the reef, and stretched to the south-west till near twelve o'clock, when, perceiving that we made no progress to windward, and being apprehensive of losing the islands while we had so many of the natives on board, we tacked and stood back, and spent the night between Footooha and Kotoo. The wind now blew fresh, with squalls and rain; and, during the night, the Resolution, by a small change of the wind, fetching too far to the windward, was very near running full upon a low sandy isle, named Pootoo Pootooa, encompassed with breakers. Our people having fortunately been just ordered upon deck, to put the ship about, and most of them being at their respective stations, the necessary movements were performed with judgment and alertness; and this alone preserved us from destruction. The Discovery, being astern, incurred no danger.

On the return of day light, a boat was hoisted out, and the officer who commanded her was ordered to sound for anchorage along the reef that projects from that island. During the absence of the boat, we endeavoured to turn the ships through the channel between the reef of Kotoo and the sandy isle; but meeting with a strong current against us, we were obliged to desist, and cast anchor in fifty fathoms water, the sandy isle bearing east by north, about the distance of one mile. Here we remained till the 4th of June, being frequently visited by the king, by Tooboueitoa, and by people who came from the neighbouring islands to traffic with us. Mr. Bligh was, in the mean time, dispatched to sound the channels between the islands situate to the eastward; and Captain Cook himself landed on Kotoo, to take a survey of it. This island, on account of the coral

reefs that environ it, is ſcarcely acceſſible by boats. Its north-weſt end is low; but it riſes ſuddenly in the middle, and terminates at the ſouth-eaſt end in reddiſh clayey cliffs. It produces the ſame fruits and roots with the adjacent iſlands, and is tolerably cultivated, though thinly inhabited. It is abont two miles in length. While the Commodore was walking all over it, our people were occupied in cutting graſs for the cattle; and we planted ſome melon ſeeds.

We weighed in the morning of the 4th, and, with a freſh gale at eaſt ſouth-eaſt, made ſail towards Annamooka, where we anchored the next morning, nearly in the ſame ſtation which we had ſo lately occupied. Captain Cook ſoon after went on ſhore, and found the iſlanders very buſy in their plantations, digging up yams for traffic. In the courſe of the day, about two hundred of them aſſembled on the beach, and traded with great eagerneſs. The yams were now in the higheſt perfection; and we obtained a good quantity of them, in exchange for iron. Before the Captain returned on board, he viſited the ſeveral places where he had ſown melon and cucumber ſeeds; but found, to his great regret, that moſt of them had been deſtroyed by vermin; though ſome pine-apple plants, which he had alſo left, were in a thriving condition.

On Friday the 6th, at noon, Feenou arrived from Vavaoo, and informed us, that ſeveral canoes, laden with hogs and other proviſions, had ſailed with him from that iſland, but had been loſt in the late tempeſtuous weather, and every perſon on board of them had periſhed. This melancholy tale did not gain much credit with us, as we were by this time ſufficiently acquainted with the character of the relater. The truth, perhaps, was, that he had been unable to procure at Vavaoo the expected ſupplies; or, if he had obtained any there, that he had left them at Hapaee, which lay in his way back, and where he muſt have heard that Poulaho had come to viſit us; who, therefore, he knew, would, as his ſuperior, reap all the merit and reward of procuring theſe ſupplies, without having had any participation

ticipation of the trouble. On the ſucceeding morning, Poulaho, and ſome other chiefs, arrived; at which time Captain Cook happened to be aſhore with Feenou, who now appeared to be ſenſible of the impropriety of his conduct, in arrogating a character to which he had no juſt claim: for he not only acknowledged Poulaho as ſovereign of Tongataboo and the adjacent iſles, but affected to inſiſt much on it. The Captain left him, and went to pay a viſit to the King, whom he found ſitting with a few of the natives before him; but great numbers haſtening to pay their reſpects to him, the circle increaſed very faſt. When Feenou approached, he placed himſelf among the reſt that ſat before Poulaho, as attendants on his Majeſty. He at firſt ſeemed to be ſomewhat confuſed and abaſhed; but ſoon recovered from his agitation. Some converſation paſſed between theſe two chiefs, who went on board with the Captain to dinner; but only Poulaho ſat at table. Feenou, after having made his obeiſance in the uſual mode, by ſaluting the foot of his ſovereign with his head and hands, retired from the cabin; and it now appeared, that he could neither eat nor drink in the King's preſence.

On the 8th, we weighed anchor, and ſteered for Tongataboo, with a gentle breeze at north-eaſt. We were accompanied by fourteen or fifteen ſailing veſſels belonging to the iſlanders, every one of which outran the ſhips. At five in the afternoon we deſcried two ſmall iſlands, at the diſtance of four leagues to the weſtward; one was called Hoonga Hapaee, and the other Hoonga Tonga. They are ſituated in the latitude of 20° 36' ſouth, about ten leagues from the weſtern point of Annamooka. We ſtill proceeded on a ſouth-weſt courſe, and on the 9th ſaw ſeveral little iſlands, beyond which Eooa and Tongataboo appeared. We had at this time twenty-five fathoms water, the bottom conſiſting of broken coral and ſand; and the depth gradually decreaſed, as we approached the above-mentioned ſmall iſles. Steering, by the direction of our pilots, for the wideſt ſpace between thoſe iſles, we were

were insensibly drawn upon a large flat, on which lay innumerable rocks of coral, below the surface of the sea. Notwithstanding our utmost care and attention to avoid these rocks, we were unable to prevent the ship from striking on one of them; nor did the Discovery, though behind us, keep clear of them. It fortunately happened, that neither of the ships stuck fast, nor sustained any damage. We still continued our course, and the moment we found a place where we could anchor with any degree of safety, we came to, and the Masters were dispached with the boats to sound. Soon after we had cast anchor, several of the natives of Tongataboo came to us in their canoes; and they, as well as our pilots, assured us that we should meet with deep water farther in, free from rocks. Their intelligence was true; for about four o'clock the boats made a signal of having found good anchoring ground: we therefore weighed, and stood in till dark, when we anchored in nine fathoms water, with a clear sandy bottom. During the night we had some rain; but early in the morning the wind becoming southerly, and bringing on fair weather, we weighed again, and worked towards the shore of Tongataboo. While we were plying up to the harbour, the King continued sailing round in his canoe, and at the same time there was a great number of small canoes about the ships. Two of these not getting out of the way of his royal vessel, he ran quite over them with the greatest unconcern.

We arrived at our intended station about two o'clock in the afternoon of the 10th of June. It was a very convenient place, formed by the shore of Tongataboo on the south-east, and two little isles on the east and north-east. Here both our ships anchored over a sandy bottom, where the depth of water was ten fathoms. Our distance from the shore exceeded a quarter of a mile.

We had not been long at anchor off Tongataboo, when Captain Cook landed on the island, accompanied by some of the officers and Omai. They found the King

King waiting for them on the beach, who conducted them to a ſmall neat houſe near the woods, with an extenſive area before it, and told the Captain, that it was at his ſervice during his continuance in the iſland. Before they had been long in the houſe, a large circle of the natives aſſembled before them, and ſeated themſelves upon the area. Mean while, a baked hog, and a quantity of baked yams, were produced and divided into portions, which were diſtributed according to the King's orders.

Captain Cook, before he returned on board, went in ſearch of a watering place, and was conducted to ſome ponds, in one of which the water was tolerable, but it was at ſome diſtance inland. Being informed that the ſmall iſland of Pangimodoo, near which the ſhips were ſtationed, could better ſupply this important article, he went over to it the next morning, and found there a pool containing freſher water than any he had met with among theſe iſlands. This pool being extremely dirty, he cauſed it to be cleaned; and here it was that we filled our water caſks. The ſame morning a tent was pitched near the houſe which the King had aſſigned for our uſe. The horſes, cattle, and ſheep were then landed, and a party of marines ſtationed there as a guard. The obſervatory was ſet up at an inconſiderable diſtance from the other tent; and Mr. King took up his reſidence on ſhore, to direct the obſervations, and ſuperintend all other neceſſary buſineſs. A party was occupied in cutting wood for fuel, and planks for the ſhips; and the gunners were appointed to conduct the traffic with the inhabitants, who flocked from all parts of the iſland with hogs, yams, cocoa nuts, and other articles, inſomuch, that our land ſtation reſembled a fair, and our ſhips were remarkably crowded with viſitants. Feenou reſiding in our neighbourhood, we had daily proofs of his opulence and generoſity, by the continuance of his valuable donations. Poulaho was equally attentive to us in this reſpect, as ſcarcely a day paſſed without his favouring us with conſiderable preſents. We were now informed, that a perſon

of

of the name of Mareewagee was of very high rank in the island, and was superior to Poulaho himself: but that, being advanced in years, he lived in retirement; however, on Friday the 13th, about twelve o'clock, Mareewagee came within a small distance of our post on shore, attended by a great number of people of all ranks. In the course of the afternoon, the two Captains, and others of our gentlemen, accompanied by Feenou, went ashore to visit him. They found a person sitting under a tree, with a piece of cloth, about forty yards long, spread before him, round which numbers of people were seated. They imagined that this was the great personage, but were undeceived by Feenou, who informed them that another, who was sitting on a piece of mat, was Mareewagee.

Captain Cook not expecting on this occasion to meet with two chiefs, had brought on shore a present for one only: this, therefore, he was obliged to divide between them; but, as it happened to be considerable, both of them appeared to be satisfied. Our party now entertained them about an hour with the performance of two French horns and a drum; but the firing off a pistol that Captain Clerke had in his pocket seemed to please them most. Before our gentlemen took their leave of the two chiefs, the large piece of cloth was rolled up and presented to Captain Cook, together with a few cocoa nuts. The next morning, Old Toobou came on board to return the Commodore's visit: he also visited Captain Clerke; and if our former present was not sufficiently considerable, the deficiency was now supplied. In the mean time, Mareewagee went to see our people who were stationed on shore; and Mr. King shewed him whatever we had there. He was struck with admiration at the sight of the cattle; and the cross-cut saw rivetted his attention. Towards noon, Poulaho came on board, bringing with him his son, who was about twelve years of age. He dined with Captain Cook; but the son, though present, was not permitted to sit down with him. The King was soon reconciled to our cookery, and was fond of our wine.

wine. He now resided at the malaee near our tent, where he this evening entertained our people with a dance, in which he himself, though so corpulent and unwieldy, engaged.

On the 15th, Captain Cook received a message from Old Toobou, importing, that he was desirous of seeing him on shore. He and Omai accordingly waited on that chief, who they found sitting, like one of the ancient patriarchs, under the shade of a tree, with a large piece of cloth, the manufacture of the island, spread out before him. He desired them to place themselves by him; after which he told Omai, that the cloth, with some cocoa nuts and red feathers, constituted his present to Captain Cook.

In the mean time, Mr. Anderson, with several others, made an excursion into the country, which furnished him with observations to the following effect. Westward of the tent, the country for about two miles is entirely uncultivated, though covered with trees and bushes growing naturally with the greatest vigour. Beyond this, a pretty large plain extends itself, on which are cocoa trees, and some small plantations. Near the creek, which runs west of the tent, the land is perfectly flat, and partly overflowed every tide by the sea.

The following day, which was the 17th, was fixed upon by Mareewagee for giving a grand *haiva*, or entertainment, at which we were all invited to attend. Before the temporary hut of this chief, near our land station, a large space had been cleared for that purpose. In the morning, vast numbers of the natives came in from the country, every one of whom bore on his shoulder a long pole, at each end of which a yam was suspended. These poles and yams being deposited on each side of the open space, or area, formed two large heaps, decorated with small fish of different kinds. They were Mareewagee's present to the Captains Cook and Clerke. The necessary preparations being made, the islanders began, about eleven o'clock, to exhibit various dances, which they call *mai*. The band

band of muſic at firſt conſiſted of ſeventy men as a chorus, amidſt whom were placed three inſtruments that we called drums, though they did not much reſemble them.

There were four ranks, of twenty-four men each, in the firſt dance. Theſe held in their hands a ſmall thin wooden inſtrument, about two feet in length, reſembling in its ſhape an oblong paddle. With theſe inſtruments, which they call *pagge*, they made many different motions; ſuch as pointing them towards the ground on one ſide, and inclining their bodies that way at the ſame inſtant; then ſhifting them to the oppoſite ſide in the ſame manner; paſſing them with great quickneſs from one hand to the other, and twirling them about with remarkable dexterity; with various other manœuvres. A much quicker dance, though ſlow at firſt, was then begun, and they ſung for ten minutes, when the whole body, in a two-fold diviſion, retreated, and then advanced, forming a kind of circular figure, which concluded the dance; the chorus retiring, and the drums being removed at the ſame time. Three other dances ſucceeded this: but they were ſo nearly like that already deſcribed, that I ſhall here omit any deſcription of them.

Theſe amuſements continued from eleven o'clock till near three. The number of iſlanders who attended as ſpectators, together with thoſe who were round the trading place at the tent, or ſtraggling about, amounted to at leaſt ten thouſand, all within the compaſs of a quarter of a mile.

In the evening we were entertained with the *bomai*, or night dances, on a large area before the temporary dwelling place of Feenou. They continued three hours; during which time about twelve of them were performed, nearly the ſame as thoſe at Hapaee.

Though the whole entertainment was conducted with better order than could reaſonably have been expected, yet our utmoſt care and attention could not prevent our being plundered by the natives in the moſt daring and inſolent manner. There was ſcarcely any

thing

thing which they did not endeavour to ſteal. They once, in the middle of the day, attempted to take an anchor from off the Diſcovery's bows, but without effect. The only violence of which they were guilty, was the breaking the ſhoulder bone of one of our goats, in conſequence of which ſhe died ſoon after.

On Wedneſday the 18th, Captain Cook beſtowed ſome preſents on Mareewagee, in return for thoſe which had been received from that chief the preceding day; and as the entertainments then exhibited called upon us to make ſome exhibition in return, he ordered all the marines to go through their exerciſe, on the ſpot where the late dances had been performed; and in the evening ſome fireworks were alſo played off at the ſame place. The King, the principal chiefs, and a vaſt multitude of people, were preſent. The platoon firing ſeemed to pleaſe them; but, when they beheld our water rockets, they were filled with aſtoniſhment and admiration.

While the natives were in expectation of this evening exhibition, they engaged, for the greateſt part of the afternoon, in wreſtling and boxing. They preſerve great temper in theſe exerciſes, and leave the ſpot without the leaſt diſpleaſure in their countenances. Not only boys engage in both theſe exerciſes; but it not unfrequently happens, that little girls box with great obſtinacy. On all theſe occaſions, they do not conſider it as any diſgrace to be overcome, and the vanquiſhed perſon ſits down with as much indifference as if he had never engaged. Some of our people contended with them in both exerciſes, but were generally worſted.

Captain Cook intending to leave behind him ſome of the animals he had brought, thought proper to make a diſtribution of them before his departure. He, therefore, on the 19th, aſſembled the chiefs before our houſe, and marked out his intended preſents to them. To the King he gave a bull and a cow; to Mareewagee, a Cape ram and two ewes; and to Feenou, a horſe and a mare. He inſtructed Omai to tell them, that no

ſuch

ſuch animals exiſted within ſeveral months ſail of their iſland; that we had brought them, with a great degree of trouble and expence, for their uſe; that, therefore, they ought to be careful not to kill any of them till they had multiplied conſiderably; and, finally, that they and their poſterity ought to remember, that they had received them from the natives of Britain.

Some of the officers of both ſhips, who had made an excurſion into the interior parts of the iſland, returned the 22d of June in the evening, after an abſence of two days. They had taken their muſkets and neceſſary ammunition with them, beſides ſeveral ſmall articles of the favourite commodities; the whole of which the natives had the dexterity to ſteal from them in the courſe of their ſhort journey. Though the Captain did not afterwards endeavour to recover the articles taken upon this occaſion, the whole of them were returned, through the interpoſition of Feenou, except one muſket, and a few other inſignificant articles. By this time, alſo, we recovered the tools and other matters that had been ſtolen from our workmen.

By the 25th of June we had recruited our ſhips and repaired our ſails, and had little more to expect of the produce of the iſland: but, as an eclipſe of the ſun was to happen on the 5th of July, the Captain determined to ſtay till that time, to have a chance of obſerving it.

On Monday the 30th of June, Mr. King and Mr. Anderſon, accompanied Futtafaihe as viſitors to his houſe, which is not far from that of his brother Poulaho, at Mooa. Soon after they arrived, a large hog was killed, which was effected by repeated ſtrokes upon the head. The hair was then curiouſly ſcraped off, with the ſharp edge of pieces of ſplit bamboo, and the entrails taken out by the ſame ſharp inſtrument. Previous to this, an oven had been prepared, which is a large hole dug in the earth, the bottom of which is covered with ſtones, about the ſize of a man's fiſt, which are made red hot by kindling a fire over them; then they wrapt up

ſome

ſome of theſe ſtones in leaves of the bread-fruit tree, with which they filled the hog's belly; ſtuffing in a quantity of leaves to prevent their falling out, and thruſting a plug of the ſame kind in the anus. This being done, the carcaſe was placed upon ſome ſticks laid acroſs the ſtones, and covered with plantain leaves. The earth was afterwards dug up all round, and the oven being thus effectually cloſed, the operation of baking required no farther aid.

On their return to Futtafaihe's houſe, the baked hog was produced, accompanied with ſome cocoa nuts, and ſeveral baſkets of baked yams. The perſon who prepared the hog in the morning, now cut it up in a very maſterly manner, with a knife made of ſplit bamboo. Though the weight of it was at leaſt fifty pounds, the whole was placed before them, when they took a ſmall part, and deſired the reſt might be partaken of by the people ſitting round.

They were entertained in the evening with a pig for ſupper, dreſſed like the hog, and like that, accompanied with yams and cocoa nuts. When the ſupper was over, a large quantity of cloth was brought for them to ſleep in; but they were diſturbed in their repoſe by a ſingular inſtance of luxury, in which their men of conſequence indulge themſelves; that of being thumped or beat while they are aſleep. Two women who ſat by Futtafaihe, performed this operation, which they call *tooge tooge*, by ſtriking his body and legs, with both fiſts till he fell aſleep, and, with ſome intervals, continued it the whole night. The perſon being faſt aſleep, they abate a little of the ſtrength and briſkneſs of the beating; but if they obſerve any appearance of his awaking, they reſume it. In the morning they were informed, that Futtafaihe's women relieved each other and went alternately to ſleep. Such a practice as this, in any other country, would be ſuppoſed to be deſtructive of all reſt; but here it operates like an opiate, and ſtrongly ſhews what habit may effect.

Captain Cook had prolonged his ſtay at this iſland on

on account of the approaching eclipſe; but on looking at the micrometer (on the 2d of July) he found ſome accident had happened to it, and that it was rendererd uſeleſs till repaired; which could not be done before the time it was intended to be uſed. We therefore got on board, this day, all the cattle and other animals, except thoſe that were deſtined to remain. The Captain deſigned to have left a turkey cock and hen; but two hens being deſtroyed by accident, and wiſhing to carry the breed to Otaheite, he reſerved the only remaining pair for that purpoſe.

We took up our anchor the next day, and moved the ſhips behind Pangemodoo, to be ready for the firſt favourable wind to take us through the Narrows. The King, who this day dined with us, took particular notice of the plates; which the Commodore obſerving, made him an offer of one, either of pewter or of earthen ware.

In the morning of Saturday the 5th of July, the day of the eclipſe, the weather was cloudy, with ſome ſhowers of rain. About nine o'clock, the ſun broke out at ſmall intervals for about half an hour, but was totally obſcured juſt before the beginning of the eclipſe. The ſun again appeared at intervals till about the middle of the eclipſe; but was ſeen no more during the remainder of the day, ſo that we could not obſerve the end.

The eclipſe being over, we packed up the inſtruments, and every thing was conveyed on board. None of the natives having taken any care of the three ſheep allotted to Mareewagee, the Commodore ordered them to be carried back to the ſhips. He was apprehenſive, that if they had been left there, they would probably be deſtroyed by dogs.

Mr. Anderſon informs us, that Amſterdam is about twenty leagues in circumference, and the ſhores conſiſt of coral rocks. The face of the country appears beautiful, and produces plenty of yams, cocoa nuts, &c. There are no quadrupedes but hogs, dogs, and

rats.

rats. They have various ſorts of birds, and the ſea abounds with fiſh.

Though we were now ready to ſail, we had not ſufficient daylight to turn through the Narrows, the the morning flood falling early, and the evening flood late. We were therefore under the neceſſity of waiting two or three days, unleſs we ſhould be fortunate enough to have a leading wind.

However, we weighed anchor on the 10th about eight o'clock in the morning, and, with a ſteady gale, turned through the channel, between the ſmall iſles called Makkaha and Monooafai. The flood, at firſt, ſet ſtrong in our favour, till leading up to the *lagoon*, where the eaſtward flood meets that from the weſt. This, with the in-draught of the *lagoon*, and of the ſhoals before it, occaſions ſtrong riplings and whirlpools. Beſides theſe diſadvantages, the depth of the channel exceeds the length of a cable, conſequently there can be no anchorage, except cloſe to the rocks, in forty and forty-five fathoms water, where a ſhip would be expoſed to the whirlpools. We plied to the windward, between the two tides, till it was near high water, without either gaining or loſing an inch, when we ſuddenly got into the influence of the eaſtern tide, Convinced that we could not get to ſea before it was dark, we anchored under the ſhore of Tongataboo, in forty-five fathoms water. The Diſcovery dropped anchor under our ſtern, but drove off the bank before the anchor took hold, and did not recover it till midnight.

After remaining in this ſtation till eleven o'clock the next day, we weighed and plied to the eaſtward. At ten o'clock we weathered the eaſt end of the iſland, and ſtretched away for Middleburg, or Eooa (as the inhabitants call it) where we anchored about eight in the morning, in forty fathoms water; being nearly the ſame place where the Captain took his ſtation in 1773, when he named it Engliſh Road.

As ſoon as we had anchored, Taoofa the chief, and ſeveral of the natives, viſited us on board, and ſeemed rejoiced

rejoiced at our arrival. The Captain accompanied him on ſhore in ſearch of freſh water, the procuring of which was the chief object that brought him to Eooa. He had heard at Tongataboo of a ſtream here which ran from the hills into the ſea; but this was not the caſe at preſent. He was conducted to a brackiſh ſpring among rocks, between low and high-water mark. When they perceived that we did not approve of this, we were ſhewn a little way into the iſland, where, in a deep chaſm, we found ſome excellent water; which though attended with ſome trouble, might be conveyed to the ſhore by means of ſpouts or troughs, that might be provided for that purpoſe: but rather than undertake that tedious taſk, the Captain contented himſelf with the ſupply the ſhips had received at Tongataboo.

At this iſland we landed the ram and two ewes, of the Cape of Good Hope breed, and committed them to the care of Taoofa, who ſeemed delighted with his charge.

While we were lying at anchor, this iſland had a very different aſpect from any that we had lately ſeen, and formed a moſt pleaſing landſcape. It is the higheſt of any we had ſeen ſince we had left New Zealand, and from its top, which appears to be almoſt flat, declines gradually towards the ſea. The other iſles, which form this cluſter, being level, the eye cannot diſcover any thing except the trees that cover them; but here the land riſing gently upwards, preſents an extenſive proſpect, where groves of trees, in beautiful diſorder, are interſperſed at irregular diſtances. Near the ſhore it is quite ſhaded with a variety of trees, among which are erected the habitations of the natives, and to the right of where we were ſtationed, was one of the moſt extenſive groves of cocoa palms that we had ever ſeen.

In the afternoon of the 13th, a party of us aſcended the higheſt part of the iſland, a little to the right of our ſhips, to have a perfect view of the country. Having advanced about half way up, we croſſed a

deep valley, the bottom and ſides of which were clothed with trees. We found plenty of coral till we approached the ſummits of the higheſt hills; the ſoil near the top is in general a reddiſh clay, which in many places is very deep. On the moſt elevated part of the iſland we ſaw a round platform ſupported by a wall of coral ſtones. Our conductors informed us, that this mount had been raiſed by the direction of their chief and that they met there occaſionally to drink *kava*. At a ſmall diſtance from it was a ſpring of moſt excellent water; and about a mile lower down, a ſtream, which we were told, ran into the ſea when the rains were copious.

From this elevation we had a complete view of the whole iſland, except a ſmall part to the ſouth. The ſouth-eaſt ſide, from which the hills we were now upon are not far diſtant, riſes with great inequalities, immediately from the ſea; ſo that the plains and meadows lie all on the north-weſt ſide; which being adorned with tufts of trees, intermixed with plantations, form a moſt delightful landſcape in every point of view. While Captain Cook was ſurveying this enchanting proſpect, he enjoyed the pleaſing idea, that ſome future navigators might, from that eminence, behold theſe meadows ſtocked with cattle, brought by the ſhips of England; and that the completion of this ſingle benevolent purpoſe, excluſive of all other conſiderations, would ſufficiently prove that our voyages had not been uſeleſs.

Captain Cook the next morning planted a pine apple, and ſowed the ſeeds of melons and other articles, in the chief's plantation. He had reaſon, indeed, to ſuppoſe, that his endeavours of this kind would not be fruitleſs; for a diſh of turnips was this day ſerved up at his dinner, which was the produce of the ſeeds he had left here in 1773.

The Captain having fixed upon the 15th for ſailing, Taoofa preſſed him to ſtay a little longer, in order to receive a preſent which he had prepared for him, and his entreaties induced him to defer his departure.

The

The next day he received from the chief the preſent; conſiſting of two little heaps of yams, and a quantity of fruit, which ſeemed to be collected as at the other iſles.

Captain Cook then returned on board, in company with Taoofa, and one of Poulaho's ſervants, by whom he ſent a piece of bar iron, as a parting mark of his eſteem for that chief, that being as valuable a preſent as any he could make.

We weighed ſoon after, and with a light breeze at ſouth-eaſt ſtood out to ſea, when Taoofa, and ſome other natives left us. We found, on heaving up the anchor, that the cable had been much injured by the rocks. Beſides this, we experienced, that a moſt aſtoniſhing ſwell rolls in there from the ſouth-weſt.

We have now taken leave of the Friendly Iſlands and their inhabitants, after a cordial intercourſe with the lattar for between two and three months. Some differences, indeed, occaſionally happened, on account of their natural propenſity to thieving, though too frequently encouraged by the negligence and inattention of our people. Theſe differences, however, were never attended with any fatal conſequences; and few belonging to our ſhips parted from their friends without ſome regret. The time we continued here was not thrown away; and as we, in a great meaſure, ſubſiſted upon the produce of the iſlands, we expended very little of our ſea proviſions. We carried with us a ſufficient quantity of refreſhments to ſupply us till our arrival at another ſtation, where we could again recruit. The Commodore rejoiced at having had an opportunity, of ſerving theſe poor people, by leaving ſome uſeful animals among them; and that thoſe intended for Otaheite had acquired freſh ſtrength in the paſtures of Tongataboo. The advantages we received by touching here were great; and they were received without retarding the proſecution of our great object; the ſeaſon for proceeding to the North being loſt before we formed the reſolution of viſiting theſe iſlands.

We muſt include under the denomination of Friendly Iſlands, not only the group at Hapaee, but alſo thoſe which have been diſcovered to the north, nearly under the ſame meridian, as well as ſome others under the dominion of Tongataboo, which is the capital, and ſeat of government.

From the beſt information we could receive, this archipelago is very extenſive. One of the natives enumerated one hundred and fifty iſlands; and Mr. Anderſon procured all their names.

But the moſt conſiderable iſlands that we heard of in this neighbourhood, are Hamoa, Vavaoo, and Feejee; each of which is larger than Tongataboo; but it does not appear that any European has ever yet ſeen any one of them.

Hamoa lies two days ſail north-weſt from Vavaoo. It is ſaid to be the largeſt of all their iſlands; affords harbours and good water, and produces in abundance all the articles of refreſhment that are found at the places we viſited. Poulaho frequently reſides upon this iſland; and the people here are in high eſtimation at Tongataboo.

Feejee lies about three days ſail from Tongataboo. It abounds with hogs, dogs, fowls, and ſuch fruits and roots as are to be found in any others, and is much larger than Tongataboo; but not ſubject to its dominion, as the other iſlands of this archipelago are.

The colour of the natives of Feejee was at leaſt a ſhade darker than that of the inhabitants of the other Friendly Iſlands. We ſaw one of the natives of Feejee, who had his left ear ſlit, and the lobe ſo ſtretched, that it almoſt extended to his ſhoulder; which ſingularity had been obſerved by Captain Cook at other iſlands of the South Sea, during his ſecond voyage. The Feejee men were much reverenced here; not only on account of their power and cruelty in war, but alſo for their ingenuity; for they greatly excel the inhabitants of Tongataboo in workmanſhip. Specimens were ſhewn us of their clubs and ſpears, which were ingeniouſly carved. We were alſo ſhewn ſome of

their

their beautifully chequered cloth, variegated mats, earthen pots, and other articles, all of which displayed a superiority in the execution.

The harbour and anchoring place of Tongataboo is superior to any we have met with among these islands, as well from its great security, as its capacity and goodness of bottom. The risk we ran in entering it from the north, should caution every future commander from attempting that passage again, especially with a ship of burden, since that, by which we left it, may be pursued with greater ease and safety.

Though the harbour of Tongataboo has the preference, its water is exceeded in goodness by that at Annamooka; and yet this cannot be reckoned good. Tolerable water may, nevertheless, be procured by digging holes near the side of the pond: besides, Annamooka being nearly in the centre of the group, is the best situated for procuring refreshments from the others. There is a creek in the reef on the north side of the island, wherein two or three ships may lie securely.

After living among them between two and three months, it is reasonable to expect, that we should be able to clear up every difficulty, and to give a tolerably good account of their manners, customs, and institutions, civil as well as religious; particularly as we had a person with us, who, by understanding their language as well as ours, might be enabled to act as an interpreter. But Omai was not qualified for that task.

The Friendly Islanders seldom exceed the common stature (though some here were above six feet in height) and are strong and well proportioned. Their shoulders are in general broad; and we saw several who were really handsome, though their muscular disposition rather conveyed the idea of strength than of beauty. Their features are so various, that unless it be by a fulness at the point of the nose, which is common, it is impossible to fix any general likeness by which to characterize them. On the other hand,

many genuine Roman noſes, and hundreds of European faces were ſeen among them. They have good eyes and teeth; but the latter are neither ſo well ſet, nor ſo remarkably white, as among the Indian nations. Few of them, however, have that uncommon thickneſs about the lips, ſo frequent in other iſlands.

The women are leſs diſtinguiſhed from the men by their features, than by their general form, which ſeems deſtiſtute of that ſtrong fleſhy firmneſs that appears in the latter. Though the features of ſome are very delicate, and a true index of their ſex, laying claim to a conſiderable ſhare of beauty and expreſſion, yet the rule is not by any means ſo general as in many other countries. This is generally, however, the moſt exceptionable part, for the bodies of moſt of the females are uſually well proportioned, and ſome are abſolutely perfect models of a beautiful figure. But the extraordinary ſmallneſs and delicacy of their fingers, which may be put in competition with any in Europe, ſeems to be the moſt remarkable diſtinction in the women.

Few natural defects or deformities are to be ſeen among them; though we obſerved two or three with their feet bent inwards. Neither are they exempt from ſome diſeaſes.

Their ſtrength and activity are, in every reſpect, anſwerable to their muſcular appearance; and they exert both in ſuch a manner as to prove, that they are as yet, little debilitated by the numerous diſeaſes that are the natural conſequence of indolence.

The mildneſs or good nature which they abundantly poſſeſs is depicted on their countenances, which are totally free from that ſavage keenneſs which always marks the nations that are in a barbarous ſtate.

Their pacific diſpoſition is thoroughly evinced, from their friendly reception of ſtrangers. Inſtead of attacking them openly, or clandeſtinely, they have never appeared, in the ſmalleſt degree, hoſtile; but, like the moſt civilized nations, have even courted an intercourſe with their viſitors, by bartering; a medium which

unites

unites all nations in a degree of friendiſhip. So perfectly do they underſtand barter, that, at firſt, we ſuppoſed they had acquired the knowledge of it by trading with the neighbouring iſlands; but it afterwards appeared, that they had hardly any traffic, except with Feejee. No nation, perhaps, in the world, diſplayed, in their traffic, more honeſty and leſs diſtruſt. We ſafely permitted them to examine our goods, and they had the ſame implicit confidence in us. If either party became diſſatisfied with his bargain, a re-exchange was made with mutual conſent and ſatisfaction. They ſeem, upon the whole, to poſſeſs many of the moſt excellent qualities that adorn the human mind.

A propenſity to thieving, ſeems to be the only defect to ſully their fair character. Thoſe of all ages, and both ſexes, were addicted to it in an uncommon degree. It ſhould be conſidered, however, that this exceptionable part of their conduct exiſted merely with reſpect to us; for, in their general intercourſe with each other, thefts are not, perhaps, more frequent than in other countries, where the diſhoneſt practices of individuals ſhould not authorize any indiſcrimate cenſure on the people at large. Allowances ſhould be made for the foibles of theſe poor iſlanders, whoſe minds we overpowered with the glare of new and captivating objects.

The hair of theſe iſlanders is, in general, thick, ſtraight and ſtrong; though ſome have it buſhy or frizzled. The natural colour appears to be black; but many of the men, and ſome of the women, ſtain it of a brown or purple colour; and a few give it an orange caſt. The firſt of theſe colours is produced by applying a ſort of plaiſter of burnt coral mixed with water; the ſecond, by the raſpings of a reddiſh wood, mixed into a poultice, and laid over the hair; and the third is ſaid to be the effect of turmeric root.

The dreſs of both ſexes is the ſame; conſiſting of a piece of cloth or matting, about two yards in breadth, and two yards and a half in length. It is double before, and, like a petticoat, hangs down to the middle of the

leg. That part of the garment which is above the girdle, is plaited into ſeveral folds, which extended, is ſufficient to draw up and wrap round the ſhoulders. This, as to form, is the general dreſs; but the fine matting, and long pieces of cloth, are worn only by the ſuperior claſs of people. The inferior ſort are contented with ſmall pieces, and, very often, have only a covering made of leaves of plants, or the *maro*, a narrow piece of cloth, or matting, like a ſaſh. They paſs this between the thighs and round the waiſt. It is ſeldom uſed but by the men. In their *haivas*, or grand entertainments, they have various dreſſes, which, though the ſame in form, are embelliſhed more or leſs with red feathers.

Both men and women occaſionally defend their faces from the ſun with little bonnets, made of various ſorts of materials.

The ornaments worn by thoſe of either ſex are the ſame. Thoſe which are moſt common are necklaces, made of the fruit of the pandanus, and various ſweet-ſmelling flowers, known by the general name of *kahulla*. Others conſiſt of ſmall ſhells, ſhark's teeth, the wing and leg bones of birds, &c. all which are pendant upon the breaſt. In this manner, they often wear a poliſhed mother-of-pearl ſhell, or a ring, on the upper part of the arm; rings of tortoiſe ſhell on the fingers; and ſeveral of theſe joined together, formed into bracelets on the wriſts.

Two holes are perforated in the lobes of the ears, in which they wear cylindrical bits of ivory, of the length of three inches, introduced at one hole, and drawn out of the other; or bits of reed, filled with a yellow pigment.

Perſonal cleanlineſs is their delight; to produce which, they bathe frequently in the ponds. Though the water has an intolerable ſtench in moſt of them, they always prefer them to the ſea; and they are ſo ſenſible that their ſkin is injured with ſalt water, that, when they are obliged to bathe in the ſea, they have freſh water poured over them to waſh off its bad effects.

They

They are extravagantly fond of cocoa-nut oil; a great quantity of which they pour upon their head and ſhoulders, and rub the body all over with a ſmaller quantity.

The domeſtic life of theſe people is neither ſo laborious as to be diſagreeable, nor ſo free from employment as to ſuffer them to degenerate into indolence. Their country has been ſo favoured by nature, that the firſt can ſcarcely occur; and their diſpoſition appears to be a ſufficient bar to the laſt. The employment of the women is not difficult; and is generally ſuch as they can execute in the houſe. The making of cloth is intirely entruſted to their care.

Another manufacture, which is alſo conſigned to the women, is that of their mats, which excel thoſe of moſt other countries, both with reſpect to their texture and their beauty. There are ſeveral other articles of leſs importance, that employ their females.

The province of the men is, as might reaſonably be expected, far more laborious and extenſive than that of the other ſex. Architecture, boat-building, agriculture, and fiſhing, are the principal objects of their care. As cultivated roots and fruits form their chief ſubſiſtence, they find it neceſſary to practiſe huſbandry, which they have brought by their diligence to ſome degree of perfection.

The bread-fruit and cocoa-nut trees are diſperſed about, without any order; and, when they have arrived at a certain height, give them little or no trouble. Sugar-cane is uſually in ſmall ſpots, cloſely crowded. The mulberry, of which the cloth is made, is kept very clean, and has a good ſpace allowed for it.

They diſplay very little taſte or ingenuity in the conſtruction of their houſes. Thoſe of the lower claſs of people are wretched huts, ſcarcely ſufficient to ſhelter them from the weather. Thoſe of the better ſort are larger, as well as more commodious and comfortable.

They are very ſkilful in building their canoes, which, indeed, are the moſt perfect of their mechanical productions. The doubles ones are made ſufficiently large

to carry about fifty persons, and sail at a great rate. Upon them they generally fix a hut or shed, for the reception of the master and his family. They are made of the bread-fruit tree, and the workmanship is extremely neat. They appear on the outside as if they were composed of one solid piece; but, upon closer inspection, they are found to consist of a great number of pieces, which fit each other exactly, and by means of a ledge on the inside are secured together with cocoa-nut line. The single canoes are furnished with an outrigger. The only tools which they make use of in the construction of these boats, are hatchets, or adzes, of a smooth black stone; augers, made of shark's teeth; and rasps, composed of the rough skin of a fish, fastened on flat pieces of wood. The same tools are all they have for other works, except shells, which serve them for knives. Their cordage is made of the fibres of the cocoa-nut husk, which, though not above ten inches long, they plait about the size of a quill, to whatever length is required, and roll it up in balls; from which the ropes of a larger size are made, by twisting several of those together. Their fishing-lines are as strong and even as our best cord. Their small hooks consist entirely of pearl-shell; but the large ones are only covered with it on the back; and the points of both are, in general, of tortoise-shell. They have also numbers of small seines, some of which are of the most delicate texture.

Their musical reeds or pipes, which resemble the *syrinx* of the ancients, have eight or ten pieces placed parallel to each other, most of which are of unequal lengths. Their flutes are made of a joint of bamboo, about eighteen inches long, and are closed at both ends, having a hole near each end, and four others; two of which, and only one of the first, are used by them in playing.

Their warlike weapons are clubs, curiously ornamented, spears, and darts. They also make bows and arrows; but these are intended for amusement, such as shooting at birds, and not for the purposes of war.

Their vegetable diet principally consists of plantains, cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, and yams. Their chief articles of animal food are hogs, fish, and fowls; but the common people frequently eat rats. Their hogs, fowls, and turtle, however, seem to be only occasional dainties, reserved for persons of rank. Their food is, in general, dressed by baking, as at Otaheite; and they make, from different sorts of fruit, several dishes, which are very good. They are not very cleanly either in their cookery or their manner of eating. Their usual drink at their meals is water, or cocoa-nut milk, the *kava* being only their morning beverage. The food that is served up to the chiefs, is generally laid upon plantain-leaves.

Though female chastity seemed to be held in little estimation, not a single breach of conjugal fidelity happened, to our knowledge, during our whole continuance at these islands; nor were the unmarried women of rank more liberal of their favours. But there were great numbers of a very different character.

The concern shewn by these islanders for the dead, is a strong proof of their humanity. Besides burnt circles and scars, they strike a shark's tooth into their heads till the blood flows considerably, beat their teeth with stones, and thrust spears not only through their cheeks into their mouths, but also into the inner part of their thighs, and into their sides. The more painful operations, however, are only practised when they mourn the death of those who were most nearly connected with them. When one of them dies, he is wrapped up in mats and cloth, and then interred. When Captain Cook, during his second voyage, first visited these islands, he observed that many of the natives had one or both of their little fingers cut off; of the reason of which mutilation he could not then obtain a satisfactory account. But he was now informed, that they perform this operation when they are afflicted with some dangerous disorder, which they imagine may bring them to the grave. They suppose, that the little finger will be

accepted of by the Deity, as a kind of propitiatory ſacrifice ſufficiently efficacious to procure their recovery. In cutting it off, they make uſe of a ſtone hatchet. There was ſcarcely one perſon in ten who was not thus mutilated; and they ſometimes cut ſo cloſe, as to encroach upon that bone of the hand which joins the amputated finger. It is alſo common for the lower claſs of people to cut off a joint of their little finger, on account of the ſickneſs of the chiefs to whom they reſpectively belong.

They admit a plurality of deities, all of them inferior to *Kallafootonga*, who they ſay is a female, and the ſupreme author of moſt things, reſiding in the heavens, and directing the wind, rain, thunder, &c. They are of opinion, that when ſhe is much diſpleaſed with them, the productions of the earth are blaſted, many things conſumed by lightning, and themſelves afflicted with ſickneſs and death; but that when her anger abates, every thing is immediately reſtored to its former ſtate.

They do not worſhip any viſible part of the creation, or any thing made by their own hands. They make no offerings of dogs, hogs, and fruit (as is the cuſtom at Otaheite) unleſs emblematically. But there ſeems to be no reaſon to doubt of their offering up human ſacrifices.

We are very little acquainted with their form of government. A ſubordination, reſembling the feudal ſyſtem of our anceſtors in Europe, is eſtabliſhed among them; but of its ſubdiviſions, and the conſtituent parts, we are ignorant. Though ſome of them informed us, that the king's power is unbounded, and that he has the abſolute diſpoſal of the lives and properties of his ſubjects; yet the few circumſtances that offered themſelves to our obſervation, contradicted, rather than confirmed, the idea of deſpotic ſway.

The iſland of Tongataboo is divided into numerous diſtricts, each of which has its peculiar chief, who diſtributes juſtice, and decides diſputes, within his own territory. Moſt of theſe chieftains have eſtates in other iſlands, whence they procure ſupplies. The

king, at ſtated times, receives the product of his diſtant domains at Tongataboo, which is not only the uſual place of his reſidence, but the abode of moſt perſons of diſtinction among theſe iſlands. The chiefs are ſtyled by the people lords of the earth, and alſo of the ſun and ſky.

None of the moſt civilized nations have ever exceeded theſe iſlanders in the great order and regularity maintained on every occaſion, in ready and ſubmiſſive compliance with the commands of their chiefs, and in the perfect harmony that ſubſiſts among all ranks. Such a behaviour manifeſts itſelf in a remarkable manner, whenever their chiefs harangue a body of them aſſembled together, which frequently happens. The greateſt attention and moſt profound ſilence are obſerved during the harangue; and whatever might have been the purport of the oration, we never ſaw a ſingle inſtance, when any one of thoſe who were preſent ſhewed ſigns of his being diſpleaſed, or ſeemed in the leaſt inclined to diſpute the declared will of the ſpeaker.

When we take into conſideration the number of iſlands of which this ſtate conſiſts, and the diſtance at which ſome of them are removed from the ſeat of government, attempts to throw off the yoke of ſubjection might be apprehended. But they informed us, that this circumſtance never happens.

The different claſſes of their chiefs ſeemed to be nearly as numerous as among us; but there are few, comparatively ſpeaking, that are lords of extenſive diſtricts of territory. It is ſaid, that, when a perſon of property dies, all his poſſeſſions devolve on the ſovereign; but that it is cuſtomary to give them to the eldeſt ſon of the deceaſed, with this condition annexed, that he ſhould provide, out of the eſtate, for the other children. The crown is hereditary; and we know, from a particular circumſtance, that the Futtafaihes, of which family is Poulaho, have reigned, in a direct line, for the ſpace of at leaſt one hundred and thirty-five years, which have elapſed between our preſent viſit to theſe iſlands, and Taſman's diſcovery of them.

The

The language of these islands bears a striking resemblance to that of New Zealand, of Otaheite, and the Society Isles. The pronunciation of these people differs, indeed, in many instances, from that both of Otaheite and New Zealand; but, notwithstanding that, a great number of words are either very little changed, or exactly the same. The language, as spoken by the Friendly Islanders, is sufficiently copious to express all their ideas; and, besides being tolerably harmonious in common conversation, is easily adapted to the purposes of music. They have terms to signify numbers as far as a hundred thousand, beyond which they either would not, or could not, reckon.

The latitude of that part of Tongataboo where our observatory was erected, which was near the middle of the north-side of the island, was, according to the most accurate observations, 21° 8′ 19″ south; and its longitude was 184° 55′ 18″ east.

BOOK III.

OCCURRENCES AT OTAHEITE AND THE SOCIETY ISLES, AND PROSECUTION OF THE VOYAGE TO THE COAST OF NORTH AMERICA.

WE had now taken our final leave of the Friendly Islands. On the 17th of July, at eight o'clock in the evening, Eooa bore north-east by north, distant three or four leagues. The wind blew a fresh gale at east. We stood to the south till after six o'clock the next morning, when, from the same direction, a sudden squall took our ship aback; and before we could trim the ships on the other tack, the main sail and topgallant sails were considerably torn.

We stretched to the east-south-east, without meeting with any thing remarkable, till the 29th, at seven o'clock in the evening, when we had a very heavy squall of

of wind from the north. We were at this time under ſingle-reefed top ſails, courſes, and ſtay ſails. Two of the latter were almoſt demoliſhed by the wind, and it was with the utmoſt difficulty that we ſaved the other ſails. This ſquall being over, we ſaw ſeveral lights moving about on board the Diſcovery, whence we conjectured that ſomething had given way; and the next morning we perceived that her main-topmaſt had been loſt. Both wind and weather remained very unſettled till noon, when the latter cleared up, and the former ſettled in the north-weſt quarter. We were now in the latitude of 28° 6′ ſouth, and our longitude was 198° 23′ eaſt.

At noon, on the 31ſt, Captain Clerke made a ſignal to ſpeak with Captain Cook; and afterwards informed him, that the head of the mainmaſt had ſprung, and in ſuch a manner, as to render the rigging of another topmaſt extremely dangerous; that he muſt therefore rig ſomething lighter in its place. He farther informed him, that he had loſt his main-top-gallant yard, and had not another on board, nor a ſpar to make one. Captain Cook ſent him the Reſolution's ſprit-ſail topſail yard, which ſupplied this want for the preſent. The next day, by getting up a jury topmaſt, on which he ſet a mizen topſail, he was enabled to keep way with the Reſolution.

We ſteered eaſt-north-eaſt and north-eaſt, without meeting with any remarkable occurrence, till the morning of the 8th of Auguſt, at eleven o'clock, when land was obſerved about nine or ten leagues diſtant. At firſt it appeared like ſo many ſeparate iſlands: but as we approached we found it was all connected, and formed one and the ſame iſland.

At day break, the next morning, we ſteered for the north-weſt ſide of the iſland, and as we ſtood round its ſouth-weſt part, we ſaw it guarded by a reef of coral rock, extending in ſome places at leaſt a mile from the land, and a high ſurf breaking upon it. As we drew near, we ſaw people walking or running along aſhore on ſeveral parts of the coaſt, and in a ſhort time

after

after, we ſaw two canoes launched, in which were about a dozen men, who paddled towards us.

In order to give theſe canoes time to come up with us, we ſhortened ſail, and the canoes, after having advanced within piſtol ſhot of the ſhips, ſuddenly ſtopped. The natives often pointed eagerly to the ſhore with their paddles, at the ſame time calling to us to go thither; and many of their people, who were ſtanding upon the beach, held up ſomething white in their hands, which we conſtrued as an invitation for us to land: the Captain, however, did not chuſe to riſk the advantage of a fair wind, in order to examine an iſland that appeared to be but of little conſequence; and therefore, after making ſeveral unſucceſsful attempts to prevail upon theſe people to come near us, we made ſail to the north, and left them, having firſt learned that the name of their iſland was Toobouai. It is ſituated in the latitude of 23° 25′ ſouth, and 210° 37′ eaſt longitude.

The greateſt extent of this iſland in any direction is not above five or ſix miles. Small, however, as it appears, there are hills in it of a conſiderable elevation; at the foot of which is a narrow border of flat land, extending almoſt all round it, bordered with a white ſand beach. The hills were covered with herbage, except a few rocky cliffs, with patches of trees interſperſed on their ſummits. This iſland, as we were informed by the men in the canoes, is plentifully ſtocked with hogs and fowls, and produces the ſeveral kinds of fruits and roots that are to be met with at the other iſlands in this neighbourhood.

Leaving the iſland, we ſteered to the north with a freſh gale, and at day break, on the 12th, we perceived the iſland of Maitea.

As we drew near the iſland, we were attended by ſeveral canoes, each conducted by two or three men. But as they were of the lower claſs, Omai ſeemed to take no particular notice of them, nor they of him. At length a chief, whom Captain Cook had known before, named Ootee, and Omai's brother-in-law, who happened

happened to be at this corner of the iſland, and three or four others, all of whom knew Omai, before he embarked with Captain Furneaux, came on board. Yet there was nothing in the leaſt tender or ſtriking in their meeting; but, on the contrary, a perfect indifference on both ſides, till Omai, conducting his brother into the cabin, opened a drawer, and gave him a few red feathers. This circumſtance being ſoon communicated to the reſt of the natives on deck, Ootee, who before would hardly ſpeak to him, now begged that they might be *tayos* (friends) and exchange names. Omai accepted of the honour, and a preſent of red feathers ratified the agreement; Ootee, by way of recompence, ſent aſhore for a hog. It was evident, however, to all of us, that it was not the man but his property that they eſteemed.

We underſtood from the natives who came off to us, that ſince Captain Cook laſt viſited this iſland in 1774, two other ſhips had twice been in Oheitepeha Bay, and had left animals there like thoſe we had on board. But on inquiry into the particulars, we found that they conſiſted only of hogs, dogs, goats, a bull, and the male of another, which they ſo imperfectly deſcribed, that we could not conjecture what it was. Theſe ſhips, they informed us, had come from a place called Reema; which we ſuppoſed to be Lima, the capital of Peru, and that theſe late viſitors were conſequently Spaniards. They told us, that the firſt time they arrived, they built a houſe, and left behind them two prieſts, a boy or ſervant, and a perſon called Mateema; taking away with them when they ſailed, four of the natives; that about ten months afterwards, the ſame ſhips returned, bringing back only two of the natives, the other two having died at Lima; and that after a ſhort ſtay, they took away the people they had left; but that the houſe which they erected was left ſtanding.

We had not long anchored, before Omai's ſiſter came on board, to congratulate him on his arrival. It was pleaſing to obſerve, that to the honour of each of

of them, their meeting was marked with expreſſions of the tendereſt affection.

When this affecting ſcene was cloſed, and the ſhip properly moored, Omai attended Captain Cook on ſhore. The Captain then left Omai, ſurrounded by a number of people, and went to take a ſurvey of the houſe ſaid to have been erected by the ſtrangers who had lately landed there. He found it ſtill ſtanding, at a ſmall diſtance from the beach: it was compoſed of wooden materials, which appeared to have been brought hither ready prepared, in order to ſet up as occaſion might require; for the planks were all numbered. It conſiſted of two ſmall rooms, in the inner of which were a bedſtead, a bench, a table, ſome old hats, and other trifles, of which the natives ſeemed to be remarkably careful, as well as of the building itſelf, which had received no injury from the weather, a kind of ſhed having been erected over it. Scuttles, ſerving as air holes, appeared all round the building; and, perhaps, they were alſo meant for the additional purpoſe of firing from with muſkets, if neceſſity ſhould require it. A wooden croſs was placed at a little diſtance from the front, on the tranſverſe part of which appeared the following inſcription: *Chriſtus vincit.* On the perpendicular part (which confirmed our conjecture that the two ſhips were Spaniſh) was engraved, *Carolus* III. *imperat.* 1774. And on the other ſide of the poſt, Captain Cook very properly preſerved the memory of the prior viſits of the Engliſh, by inſcribing, *Georgius tertius, rex, Annis* 1767, 1769, 1773, 1774, *et* 1777.

Near the foot of the croſs the iſlanders pointed out to us the grave of the Commodore of the two ſhips, who died here, while they lay in the bay on their firſt arrival. His name, as near as we could gather from their pronunciation, was Oreede. The Spaniards, whatever their intentions might be in viſiting this iſland, ſeemed to have taken infinite pains to have ingratiated themſelves with the natives; who, upon all occa-

occaſions, mentioned them with the ſtrongeſt terms of eſteem and veneration.

When Captain Cook returned from the houſe erected by the Spaniards, he found Omai harranguing a very large company, and could with difficulty diſengage him to accompany him on board, where he had to ſettle a matter of importance.

Knowing that Otaheite, and the neighbouring iſlands, could ſupply us plentifully with cocoa nuts, the liquor of which is a moſt excellent beverage, he wiſhed to prevail upon his people to conſent to be abridged, for a ſhort time, of their ſtated allowance of ſpirits to mix with water.

This propoſal did not remain a moment under conſideration, and Captain Cook had the ſatisfaction to find that it was unanimouſly approved of. He ordered Captain Clerke to make a ſimilar propoſal to his people, which they alſo readily agreed to. The ſerving of grog was therefore immediately ſtopped, except on Saturday nights, when all the men had a full allowance of it, to enable them to drink the healths of their female friends in England; leſt amidſt the pretty girls of Otaheite they ſhould be totally forgotten.

Waheiadooa, king of this part of the iſland, though at a conſiderable diſtance, had been informed of our arrival; and in the afternoon of the 16th, a chief named Etorea, his tutor, brought Captain Cook two hogs as a preſent from him; acquainting him at the ſame time, that he himſelf would attend him the day after. He was punctual to his promiſe; for the Captain received a meſſage from him early the next morning, notifying his arrival, and requeſting he would go aſhore to meet him. In conſequence of this invitation, Omai and he prepared to make him a formal viſit. Omai, on this occaſion, took ſome pains to dreſs himſelf, not after the manner of the Engliſh, nor that of Otaheite, or Tongataboo, or in the dreſs of any other country upon earth; but in a ſtrange medley of all the habiliments and ornaments he was poſſeſſed of.

Thus

Thus equipped, they got aſhore, and firſt paid a viſit to Etary; who, carried on a hand-barrow, accompanied them to a large building where he was ſet down; Omai ſeated himſelf on one ſide of him, and Captain Cook on the other. The Captain cauſed a piece of Tongataboo cloth to be ſpread, on which were placed the preſents he intended to make. The young chief ſoon after arrived, attended by his mother and ſeveral principal men, who all ſeated themſelves oppoſite to us. A man who ſat near the Captain made a ſhort ſpeech, conſiſting of ſeparate ſentences, part of which was dictated by thoſe about him. Another, on the oppoſite ſide near the chief ſpoke next; Etary after him, and then Omai, &c. The ſubjects of theſe orations were Captain Cook's arrival, and his connections with them.

The young chief at length was directed by his attendants to embrace Captain Cook; and as a confirmation of this treaty of friendſhip, they exchanged names. After theſe ceremonies were over, he and his friends accompanied the Captain, to dine with him on board.

On the 19th, Captain Cook received from the young chief, a preſent of ten or a dozen hogs, ſome cloth, and a quantity of fruit. In the evening we exhibited ſome fireworks, which both pleaſed and aſtoniſhed the numerous ſpectators.

Having provided a freſh ſupply of water, and finiſhed all our neceſſary operations, on the 22d we made ready for ſea. While the ſhips were unmooring, Omai and Captain Cook landed in the morning of the 23d, to take leave of the young chief.

Soon after the Captain got on board, a light breeze ſpringing up at eaſt, we got under ſail, and the Reſolution anchored the ſame evening at Matavai Bay; but the Diſcovery did not get in till the next morning.

On Sunday the 24th, in the morning, Otoo, the king of the whole iſland, accompanied by a great number of the natives in their canoes, came from Oparre, his place of reſidence, and having landed on Matavai point,

Point, ſent a meſſenger on board, intimating his deſire to ſee Captain Cook there. He accordingly went aſhore, attended by Omai, and ſome of the officers. They found a vaſt number of people aſſembled on this occaſion, in the midſt of whom was the king, with his father, his two brothers, and three ſiſters. The Captain went towards him and ſaluted him, being followed by Omai, who kneeled and embraced his legs. Though Omai had prepared himſelf for this ceremony, by dreſſing himſelf in his beſt apparel, and behaved with great reſpect and modeſty, yet very little notice was taken of him. He made the king a preſent of two or three yards of gold cloth, and a large piece of red feathers, and the Captain gave him a gold-laced hat, a ſuit of fine linen, ſome tools, a quantity of red feathers, and one of the bonnets worn at the Friendly Iſlands.

This viſit being over, the king, and all the royal family, accompanied Captain Cook on board, followed by ſeveral canoes, plentifully laden with all kind of proviſions. Not long after, the king's mother came on board, bringing with her ſome proviſions and cloth, which ſhe divided between the Commodore and Omai. Though the latter was but little noticed at firſt by his countrymen, they no ſooner gained information of his wealth, than they began to court his friendſhip. Captain Cook encouraged this as far as lay in his power, being deſirous of fixing him with Otoo. Intending to leave all his European animals at this iſland, he thought Omai would be able to give the natives ſome inſtruction with regard to their uſe, and the management of them. Beſides, the Captain was convinced, that the farther he was removed from his native iſland, the more he would be reſpected. But, unfortunately, Omai rejected his advice, and behaved in ſo imprudent a manner, that he ſoon loſt the friendſhip of Otoo, and of all the moſt conſiderable perſons at Otaheite. He aſſociated with none but ſtrangers and vagabonds, whoſe ſole intention was to plunder him: and, if the Captain had not interfered, they would not have left him a ſingle

gle article of any conſequence. This conduct drew upon him the ill-will of the principal chiefs; who found that they could not obtain, from any one in either ſhip, ſuch valuable preſents as were beſtowed by Omai on the loweſt of the people. After dinner, a party of us accompanied Otoo to Oparre, taking with us ſome poultry, conſiſting of a peacock and hen, a turkey-cock and hen, three geeſe, one gander, four ducks and a drake. All theſe we left at Oparre, in the poſſeſſion of Otoo; and the geeſe and ducks began to breed before we ſailed. We found there a gander, that Captain Wallis had given to Oberea ten years before; we alſo met with ſeveral goats, and the Spaniſh bull, whom they kept tied to a tree, near the habitation of Otoo. We never beheld a finer animal of his kind. The next day the Commodore ſent to this bull the three cows that he had on board; and the bull, which he had brought, the horſe, and mare, and ſheep, were now put aſhore at Matavai. Having thus diſpoſed of theſe animals, he found himſelf eaſed of the extrordinary trouble and vexation that attended the bringing this living cargo to ſuch a diſtance.

While we remained here, the crews of both ſhips were occupied in many neceſſary operations. The Diſcovery's main-maſt was carried aſhore, and made as good as it had ever been before. Our ſails and water-caſks were repaired; both our ſhips were caulked; and the rigging was completely overhauled. We likewiſe inſpected the bread that we had on board in caſks, and found that but little of it was damaged.

On the 26th, a piece of ground was cleared for a garden, and planted with ſeveral articles; very few of which will, probably, be looked after by the natives. Some potatoes, melons, and pine-apple plants, were in a fair way of ſucceeding before we quitted the place.

In the evening of the 29th, the iſlanders made a precipitate retreat, both from our land ſtation, and from on board the ſhips. We conjectured that this aroſe from their knowing that ſome theft had been committed, and apprehending puniſhment upon that account. At length,

we

we became acquainted with the whole affair. One of the Surgeon's mates had made an excurſion into the country to purchaſe curioſities, and had taken with him four hatchets for the purpoſe of exchange. Having been ſo imprudent as to employ a native to carry them, the fellow took an opportunity of running off with ſo valuable a prize. This was the reaſon of the ſudden flight, in which Otoo himſelf, and all his family, had joined; and it was with difficulty that the Captain ſtopped them, after following them for the ſpace of two or three miles. As he had determined to take no meaſures for the recovery of the hatchets, that his people for the future might be more upon their guard againſt ſuch negligence, every thing quickly reſumed its former tranquillity.

The next morning, ſome meſſengers arrived from Eimeo, with intelligence, that the people of that iſland were in arms; and that Otoo's partizans there had been obliged by the oppoſite party to retreat to the mountains. The quarrel between the two iſlands, which began in 1774, had partly ſubſiſted ever ſince. A formidable armament had failed ſoon after Captain Cook left Otaheite in his laſt voyage; but the malecontents of Eimeo had made ſo gallant a reſiſtance, that the fleet had returned without ſucceſs; and now another expedition was deemed neceſſary. On the arrival of theſe meſſengers, the chiefs aſſembled at Otoo's houſe, where the Captain actually was at that time, and had the honour of being admitted into their council. One of the meſſengers opened the buſineſs with a ſpeech of conſiderable length, the purport of which was to explain the ſituation of affairs in Eimeo, and to excite the Otaheitean chiefs to arm on the occaſion. This opinion was oppoſed by others who were againſt commencing hoſtilities; and the debate was carried on with great order and decorum. At length, however, the party for war prevailed; and it was reſolved, though not unanimouſly, that a ſtrong force ſhould be ſent to Eimeo. Otoo ſaid very little during the whole debate. Thoſe of the council, who were inclinable for war,

applied

applied to the Captain for his assistance; and all of them were desirous of knowing what part he would take. Omai was sent for to act as his interpreter; but, as he could not be found, the Captain, being under a necessity of speaking for himself, told them, as well as he could, that, as he was not perfectly acquainted with the dispute, and as the natives of Eimeo had never given him the least cause of offence, he could not think of engaging in hostilities against them. With this declaration they either were, or appeared to be, satisfied. The council was then dissolved; but, before the Captain retired, Otoo desired him to come again in the afternoon, and bring Omai with him.

A party of us accordingly waited upon him at the appointed time; and he conducted us to his father, in whose presence the dispute with Eimeo was again discussed. The Commodore being very desirous of effecting an accommodation, sounded the old chief on that subject; but he was deaf to any such proposal, and fully determined to carry on hostilities. On our inquiry into the cause of the war, we were informed, that, several years ago, a brother of Waheiadooa, of Tiaraboo, was sent to Eimeo, at the desire of Maheine, a popular chief of that island, to be their king; but had not been there many days before Maheine, having caused him to be put to death, set up for himself, in opposition to Tierataboonooe, nephew of the deceased, who now became the lawful heir, or perhaps had been appointed, by the people of Otaheite, to succeed to the government on the death of the other.

Our gentlemen being now at Oparre, Otoo solicited them to pass the night there. They had here an opportunity of observing how these people amuse themselves, in their private *heevas*. They saw about a hundred of them sitting in a house; in the midst of whom were two women, and an old man behind each of them, beating gently upon a drum; and the women, at intervals, singing with great softness and delicacy. The assembly were very attentive, and seemed, as it were, absorbed in the pleasure the music gave

Webber del. Hinds sculp.

A DANCE in OTAHITE.

gave
ſtrang
the pa
Here
hervas
the pl
and
where
the ro
this o
they
ner;
were
tainm
Capta
ing to
ther,
Capta
Or
work
were
much
they
ſee th
the b
and d
moſt
A
on fi
thirt
withi
peare
full?
along
atten
ple e
ter a
of cl
the
ped

gave them; few of them taking any notice of the ſtrangers, and the performers never once ceaſing. When the party arrived at Otoo's houſe, it was almoſt dark. Here they were entertained with one of their public *heevas*, or plays, in which his three ſiſters repreſented the principal characters. This they call a *heeva raä*, and no perſon is ſuffered to enter the houſe or area where it is exhibited. This is always the caſe, when the royal ſiſters are the performers. Their dreſs, on this occaſion, was truly elegant and pictureſque, and they acquitted themſelves in a very diſtinguiſhed manner; though ſome comic interludes, wherein four men were the performers, ſeemed to afford greater entertainment to the audience, which was numerous. The Captain and his companions proceeded the next morning to Matavai, leaving Otoo at Oparre; but his mother, ſiſters, and many other women, attended the Captain on board, and Otoo followed a ſhort time after.

On the 7th, in the evening, we exhibited ſome fireworks before a vaſt concourſe of people, ſome of whom were highly entertained, but the greater number were much terrified with the exhibition; inſomuch, that they could hardly be prevailed on to keep together, to ſee the whole of the entertainment. What concluded the buſineſs was a table rocket. It flew off the table, and diſperſed the whole crowd in an inſtant; even the moſt reſolute amongſt them now fled with precipitation.

A party of us dined, the next day, with Oedidee, on fiſh and pork. The hog, which weighed about thirty pounds, was alive, dreſſed, and upon the table, within the hour. Soon after we had dined, Otoo appeared, and enquired of Captain Cook, if his belly was full? who anſwered in the affirmative. "Then come along with me," ſaid Otoo. The Captain accordingly attended him to his father's, where he ſaw ſeveral people employed in dreſſing two girls, with fine cloth, after a very ſingular faſhion. There were ſeveral pieces of cloth, and the one end of each piece was held over the heads of the girls, while the remainder was wrapped round their bodies under the arm-pits. The upper

 ends

ends were then suffered to fall down, and hang in folds to the ground, over the other. Round the outside of all, were then wrapped several pieces of cloth of various colours, which considerably increased the size, it being five or six yards in circuit; and the weight of this singular attire was as much as the poor girls could well support. To each were hung two *taames*, or breast-plates, in order to embellish the whole, and give it a picturesque appearance. Thus equipped, they were taken on board the ship, together with several hogs, and a quantity of fruit, which, together with this cloth, was a present to Captain Cook from Otoo's father.

On the 10th, Otoo treated a party of us at Oparre with a play. His three sisters were the performers, and their dresses were new and elegant, much more so than we had met with in any of these islands.

The principal object, however, that the Captain had now in view, in going to Oparre, was to see an embalmed corpse, near the residence of Otoo. On inquiry, he found it to be the remains of Tee, a chief whom he well knew when he last visited this island. It was lying in an elegant *toopapaoo*, in all respects similar to that at Oheitepeha, in which the remains of Waheiadooa are deposited. We found the body was under cover, within the *toopapaoo*, and wrapped up in cloth. At the Captain's desire, the person who had the care of it, brought it out, and placed it on a kind of bier, so as to give a perfect view of it; but we were not admitted within the pales that inclosed the *toopapaoo*. The corpse having been thus exhibited, he ornamented the place with mats and cloths, disposed in such a manner as to produce a pleasing effect. The body was intire in every part; and putrefaction seemed hardly to be begun, not the least disagreeable smell proceeding from it; though this is one of the hottest climates, and Tee had been above four months dead. There was, indeed, a shrinking of the muscular parts and eyes, but the hair and nails were in their original state, and the several joints were pliable. On inquiry

 into

into their method of preſerving their dead bodies, we were informed, that, ſoon after they are dead, they are diſembowelled, by drawing the inteſtines, and other *viſcera*, out at the *anus*, and the whole cavity is ſtuffed with cloth; that when any moiſture appeared, it was immediately dried up, and the bodies rubbed all over with perfumed cocoa-nut oil; which, frequently repeated, preſerved them ſeveral months; after which they moulder away gradually. Omai informed us, that the bodies of all their great men, who die a natural death, are thus preſerved; and are expoſed to public view for a very conſiderable time after. At firſt, they are exhibited every fine day; afterwards, the intervals become greater and greater; and, at laſt, they are very ſeldom to be ſeen. We quitted Oparre in the evening, leaving Otoo and all the royal family.

The next day, the Captains Cook and Clerke, being honoured with Otoo's company, mounted on horſeback, and rode round the plain of Matavai, to the aſtoniſhment of a vaſt train of ſpectators. Once or twice, before this, Omai had, indeed, attempted to get on a horſe; but he had as often fallen off, before he could contrive to ſeat himſelf properly; this was, therefore, the firſt time they had ſeen any body on horſeback. What the Captains had begun, was repeated daily, by one or another of our people; and yet the curioſity of the natives continued unabated. After they had ſeen the uſe that was made of theſe animals, they were exceedingly delighted with them; and we were of opinion, that they conveyed to them a better idea of the greatneſs of other nations, than all the novelties that their European viſitors had carried among them.

Otoo acquainted Captain Cook, that his preſence was required at Oparre, where an audience was to be given to the great perſonage from Bolabola, and begged he would accompany him thither. The Captain readily conſented, expecting to meet with ſomething deſerving his notice. Accordingly, they ſet out on the 16th, attended by Mr. Anderſon. Nothing, however, occurred, that was intereſting or curious.

Captain Cook, Mr. Anderſon, and Omai, in the morning of the 18th, went again to Oparre, accompanied by Otoo; taking with them the ſheep which the Captain intended to leave upon the iſland. They conſiſted of an Engliſh ram and ewe, and three Cape ewes; all which he made a preſent of to Otoo. All the three cows having been with the bull, he thought it adviſeable to divide them, and carry ſome to Ulietea. With this view, he ordered them to be brought before him, and propoſed to Etary, that if he would leave his bull with Otoo, he ſhould have this and one of the cows. To this propoſal, Etary, at firſt, ſtarted ſome objections; but, at laſt, agreed to it; however, as the cattle were putting into the boat, one of Etary's followers oppoſed the making any exchange whatever.

The Captain, upon this, ſuſpecting that Etary had agreed to the arrangement, for the preſent, only to pleaſe him, dropped the idea of an exchange; and finally determined to leave them all with Otoo, whom he ſtrictly enjoined not to ſuffer them to be removed from Oparre, till he ſhould have got a ſtock of young ones; which he might then diſpoſe of to his friends, or ſend to the neighbouring iſlands.

This matter being ſettled, our gentlemen left Etary and his party, and attended Otoo to another place, not far diſtant, where they found the ſervants of a chief, waiting with a hog, a pig, and a dog, as a preſent from their maſter to the king. Theſe were delivered with the uſual ceremonies, and an harangue, in which the ſpeaker inquired after the health of Otoo, and of all his principal people.

This day, and the 19th, we were very ſparingly ſupplied with fruit. Otoo being informed of this, he and his brother, who had particularly attached himſelf to Captain Clerke, came from Oparre, with a large ſupply for both ſhips. All the royal family came the next day with preſents, ſo that we now had more proviſions than we could conſume.

Our water being all on board, and every thing put in order, the Captain began to think of quitting the iſland, that

that he might have a ſufficient time for viſiting others in this neighbourhood. We therefore removed our obſervatories and inſtruments from the ſhore, and bent the ſails.

Early the next morning, Otoo came on board to inform Captain Cook, that the war canoes of Matavai, and of three other diſtricts, were going to join thoſe belonging to Oparre, and that part of the iſland; and that there would be a general review there. The ſquadron of Matavai was ſoon after in motion; and after parading for ſome time about the bay, aſſembled aſhore, near the middle of it. Captain Cook now went in his boat to take a ſurvey of them.

What they call their war canoes, which are thoſe with ſtages, on which they fight, amount to about ſixty in number; there are nearly as many more of a ſmaller ſize. The Captain was ready to have attended them to Oparre; but the chiefs ſoon after formed a reſolution, that they would not move till the next day. This appeared to be a fortunate delay, as it afforded him ſome opportunity of getting ſome inſight into their manner of fighting. He therefore deſired Otoo to give orders, that ſome of them ſhould go through the neceſſary manœuvres. Accordingly, two of them were ordered out into the bay; in one of which Otoo, Captain Cook, and Mr. King, embarked, and Omai went on board the other. As ſoon as they had got ſufficient ſea-room, they faced, advanced, and retreated by turns, as quick as their rowers could paddle. In the mean time, the warriors on the ſtages flouriſhed their weapons, and played a variety of anticks, which could anſwer no other purpoſe than that of rouſing their paſſions, to prepare them for the onſet. Otoo ſtood by the ſide of one ſtage, giving the neceſſary orders, when to advance, and when to retreat. Great judgment, and a very quick eye, ſeemed requiſite in this department, to ſeize every advantage, and to avoid every diſadvantage. At length, after ſeveral times advancing to, and retreating from each other, the two canoes cloſed, ſtage to ſtage; and after a ſevere, though ſhort conflict, all

the troops on Otoo's ſtage were ſuppoſed to be killed, and Omai and his aſſociates boarded them, when inſtantly Otoo, and all the padlers in his canoe, leaped into the ſea, as if reduced to the neceſſity of preſerving their lives by ſwimming.

According to Omai's information, their naval engagements are not always conducted in this manner. They ſometimes laſh the two veſſels together, head to head, and fight till all the warriors on one ſide or the other are killed. But this cloſe combat is never practiſed, except when the contending parties are determined to conquer or die. Indeed, one or the other muſt infallibly happen; for they never give quarters, unleſs it be to reſerve their priſoners for a more cruel death the day following.

All the power and ſtrength of theſe iſlands lie ſolely in their navies. A general engagement on land we never heard of here; and all their deciſive battles are fought on the water.

When the time and place of battle [illegible] fixed upon by both parties, the preceding day and night are ſpent in feaſting and diverſions. When the morning approaches, they launch the canoes, make every neceſſary preparation, and, with the day, begin the battle; the fate of which, in general, decides the diſpute. The vanquiſhed endeavour to ſave themſelves by a precipitate flight; and thoſe who reach the ſhore fly, with their friends, to the mountains; for the victors, before their fury abates, ſpare neither the aged, nor women, nor children. They aſſemble the next day, at the *morai*, to return thanks to the *eatooa* for the victory, and offer up the ſlain and the priſoners as ſacrifices. A treaty is then ſet on foot; and the conquerors uſually obtain their own terms; by which large diſtricts of land, and even whole iſlands, ſometimes change their owners. Omai ſaid he was once taken a priſoner by the men of Bolabola, and conducted to that iſland, where he and many others would have ſuffered death the next day, had they not been fortunate enough to eſcape in the night.

This

This mock fight being over, Omai put on his ſuit of armour, mounted a ſtage in one of the canoes, and, thus equipped, was paddled all along the ſhore of the bay, that every one might have a perfect view of him. His coat of mail, however, did not engage the attention of the multitude ſo much as was expected. The novelty was in a great degree loſt upon ſome of them, who had ſeen a part of it before; and there were others, who had conceived ſuch a diſlike to Omai, from his folly and imprudence at this place, that they would hardly look at any thing that was exhibited by him, however ſingular and new.

Otoo and his father came on board in the morning of the 22d, to know when Captain Cook propoſed ſailing. For, hearing that there was a good harbour at Eimeo, he had informed them that he ſhould viſit that iſland on his paſſage to Huaheine; and they propoſed to accompany him, and that their fleet ſhould ſail at the ſame time, to reinforce Towha. Being ready to take his departure, he ſubmitted to them the appointment of the day, and the Wedneſday following was determined upon; when he was to receive on board Otoo, his father, mother, and the whole family. Theſe points being agreed on, the Captain propoſed immediately ſetting out for Oparre, where all the fleet was to aſſemble this day, and to be reviewed.

As Captain Cook was getting into his boat, news arrived that a treaty had been concluded between Towha and Maheine, and Towha's fleet had returned to Attahooroo. From this unexpected event, the war canoes inſtead of rendezvouſing at Oparre, were ordered to their reſpective diſtricts. Captain Cook, however, followed Otoo to Oparre, accompanied by Mr. King and Omai. Soon after their arrival, a meſſenger arrived from Eimeo, and related the conditions of the peace. The terms being diſadvantageous to Otaheite, Otoo was ſeverely cenſured, whoſe delay, in ſending reinforcements, had obliged Towha to ſubmit to a diſgraceful accommodation. It was even currently reported, that Towha, reſenting the treatment he had

received, had declared, that immediately after Captain Cook's departure, he would joing his forces to those of Tiaraboo, and attack Otoo. This called upon the Captain to declare, that he was determined to espouse the interest of his friend; and that whoever presumed to attack him, should experience the weight of his displeasure when he returned to their island.

This declaration probably had the desired effect, and if Towha did entertain any such hostile intention at first, we heard no more of the report. Whappai, the father of Otoo, highly disapproved of the peace, and censured Towha for concluding it. This old man wisely considered that Captain Cook's going with them to Eimeo, might have been of singular service to their cause, though he should not interfere in the quarrel. He therefore concluded, that Otoo had acted prudently in waiting for the Captain, though it prevented his giving that early assistance to Towha which he expected.

As our friends knew that we were upon the point of sailing, they all paid us a visit the 26th, and brought more hogs with them than we wanted; for having no salt left to preserve any, we had fully sufficient for our present use.

Captain Cook accompanied Otoo the next day to Oparre; and before he left it took a survey of the cattle, and poultry which he had consigned to his friend's care. Every thing was in a promising way, and seemed properly attended to. Two of the geese, as well as two of the ducks, were sitting, but the peahen and turkey-hen had neither of them begun to lay. He took four goats from Otoo, two of which he intended to leave at Ulietea; and to reserve the other two for the use of any other islands he might touch at in his passage to the north.

The following circumstance concerning Otoo will shew, that the people of this island are capable of much address and art to accomplish their purposes. Amongst other things which Captain Cook had at different times given to this chief, was a spying glass. Having been

two

two or three days poſſeſſed of it, he perhaps grew tired of its novelty, or diſcovered that it could not be of any uſe to him; he therefore carried it privately to Captain Clerke, telling him, that as he had ſhewn great friendſhip for him, he had got a preſent for him which he ſuppoſed would be agreeable to him. "But, ſays Otoo, Toote muſt not be informed of this, becauſe he wanted it, and I refuſed to let him have it." Accordingly, he put the glaſs into Captain Clerke's hands, aſſuring him at the ſame time, that he came honeſtly by it. Captain Clerke, at firſt, wiſhed to be excuſed accepting it; but Otoo inſiſted upon it that he ſhould, and left it with him. A few days after he reminded Captain Clerke of the glaſs; who, though he did not wiſh to have it, was yet deſirous of obliging Otoo; and thinking that a few axes would be more acceptable, produced four to give him in exchange. Otoo immediately exclaimed, "Toote offered me five for it." "Well (ſays Captain Clerke) if that be the caſe, you ſhall not be a loſer by your friendſhip for me; you ſhall have ſix axes." He readily accepted them; but again deſired, that Captain Cook might not be made acquainted with the tranſaction. For the many valuable things which Omai had given away he received one good thing in return, this was a very fine double-ſailing canoe, completely equipped. Some time before the Captain had made up a ſuit of Engliſh colours for him, but he conſidered them as too valuable to be uſed at this time, and therefore patched up a parcel of flags and pendants, to the number of ten or a dozen, which he ſpread on different parts of his canoe. This, as might be expected, drew together a great number of people to look at her. Omai's ſtreamers were a mixture of Engliſh, French, Spaniſh, and Dutch, being all the European colours he had ſeen. He had completely ſtocked himſelf with cloth and cocoa-nut oil, which are better, and more plentiful at Otaheite than at any of the Society Iſlands; inſomuch, that they are conſidered as articles of trade. Omai would not have behaved ſo incon-

ſiſtently, as he did in many inſtances, had it not been for his ſiſter and brother-in-law, who, together with a few ſelect acquaintances, engroſſed him to themſelves, in order to ſtrip him of every article he poſſeſſed. And they would certainly have ſucceeded, if Captain Cook had not taken the moſt uſeful articles of his property into his poſſeſſion. This, however, would not have ſaved Omai from ruin, if he had permitted theſe relations of his to have accompanied him to his intended place of ſettlement at Huaheine. This, indeed, was their intention, but the Captain diſappointed their farther views of plunder, by forbidding them to appear in that iſland while he continued in that part of the world; and they knew him too well not to comply.

By calms, and gentle breezes from the weſt, we were detained here ſome days longer than we expected. All this time the ſhips were crowded with our friends, and ſurrounded by canoes; for none of them would quit the place till we departed. At length, on the 29th, at three o'clock in the afternoon, the wind came at eaſt, and we weighed anchor. The ſhips being under ſail, to oblige Otoo, and to gratify the curioſity of his people, we fired ſeven guns, after which all our friends, except him and two or three more, took leave of us with ſuch lively marks of ſorrow and affection, as ſufficiently teſtified how much they regretted our departure. Otoo expreſſing a deſire of ſeeing the ſhips ſail, we made a ſtretch out to ſea, and then in again immediately; when he alſo took his laſt farewel, and went aſhore in his canoe.

Captain Cook would not have quitted Otaheite ſo ſoon as he did, if he could have prevailed upon Omai to fix himſelf there. There was not even a probability of our being better ſupplied with proviſions elſewhere than we continued to be here, even at the time of our leaving it. Beſides, ſuch a friendſhip and confidence ſubſiſted between us and the inhabitants, as could hardly be expected at any other place, and, it was rather extraordinary, had never been once interrupted or ſuſpended by any accident or miſunderſtanding,

ing, nor had there been a theft committed worthy of notice.

It may appear extraordinary, that we could never get any diſtinct account of the time when the Spaniards arrived, the time they ſtayed, and when they departed. The more we made inquiry into this matter, the more we were convinced of the incapability of moſt of theſe people to remember, calculate, or note the time, when paſt events happened, eſpecially if for a longer period than eighteen or twenty months. It, however, appeared, by the inſcription upon the croſs, and by the information of the moſt intelligent of the natives, that two ſhips came to Oheitepeha in 1774, not long after Captain Cook left Matavai, which was in May the ſame year. The live ſtock they left here conſiſted of one bull, ſome goats, hogs, and dogs, and the male of another animal, which we were afterwards informed was a ram, and was at this time at Bolabola.

The hogs are large; have already much improved the breed originally found by us upon the iſland, and, on our late arrival, were very numerous. Goats are alſo in plenty, there being hardly a chief without ſome. The dogs that the Spaniards put aſhore are of two or three ſorts: if they had been all hanged, inſtead of being left upon the iſland, it would have been better for the natives. Captain Cook's young ram fell a victim to one of theſe animals. Four Spaniards remained on ſhore when theſe ſhips left the iſland; two of whom were prieſts, one a ſervant, and the other was much careſſed among the natives, who diſtinguiſh him by the name of Mateema. He ſeems to have ſo far ſtudied their language, as to have been able to ſpeak it tolerably, and to have been indefatigable in impreſſing the minds of the iſlanders with exalted ideas of the greatneſs of the Spaniſh nation, and inducing them to think meanly of that of the Engliſh.

On the 30th of September, at day break, after leaving Otaheite, we ſtood for the north end of the iſland of Eimeo, and anchored in ten fathoms water. Taloo is the name of this harbour: it is on the north

ſide of the iſland, and in the diſtrict of Oboonohoo, or Poonohoo. It runs above two miles between the hills, ſouth, or ſouth by eaſt. It is not inferior to any harbour we have met with in this ocean, both for ſecurity and goodneſs of bottom.

The harbour of Parowroah, on the ſame ſide of the iſland, is about two miles to the eaſtward, and is much larger within than that of Taloo; but the opening in the reef lies to leeward of the harbour, and is conſiderably narrower. Theſe ſtriking defects muſt give the harbour of Taloo a decided preference.

As ſoon as we had anchored, great numbers of the inhabitants came aboard our ſhips from mere motives of curioſity, for they brought nothing with them for the purpoſes of barter: but ſeveral canoes arrived the next morning from more diſtant parts, bringing with them an abundant ſupply of bread fruit, cocoa nuts, and a few hogs, which were exchanged for beads, nails, and hatchets; red feathers being not ſo much demanded here as at Otaheite.

On Thurſday the 2d of October, in the morning, Captain Cook received a viſit from Maheine, the chief of the iſland, accompanied by his wife. He approached the ſhip with as great caution and deliberation, as if he apprehended miſchief from us, as friends of the Otaheiteans; theſe people having no idea that we can be in friendſhip with any one, without adopting his cauſe againſt his enemies. Captain Cook made them preſents of ſuch articles as ſeemed moſt to ſtrike their fancy, and, after ſtaying about half an hour, they went on ſhore. They returned ſoon after with a large hog, meaning it as a return for the Captain's favour; but he made them an additional preſent to the full value of it: after which they went on board the Diſcovery, to viſit Captain Clerke.

Towards the evening, Captain Cook and Omai mounted on horſeback and rode along the ſhore. Omai having forbade the natives to follow us, our train was not very numerous; the fear of giving offence having got the better of their curioſity.

Having

Having made every preparation for ſailing, we hauled the ſhip off into the ſtream, in the morning of the 6th, intending to put to ſea the next day, but a diſagreeable accident prevented it.

We had in the day time ſent our goats aſhore to graze, and, notwithſtanding two men had been appointed to look after them, one of them had been ſtolen this evening. This was a conſiderable loſs, as it interfered with the Captain's views of ſtocking other iſlands with theſe animals; he therefore was determined, if poſſible, to recover it. We received intelligence the next morning, that it had been conveyed to Maheine, who was at that time in Parowroah harbour. Two elderly men offered their ſervices to conduct any of our people to him, in order to bring back the goat. Accordingly, the Captain diſpatched ſome of his people in a boat, charged with a meſſage to that chief, and inſiſted on both the goat and the thief being immediately given up. The goat was brought back in the evening, but in the interim another was ſtolen, which was with much difficulty recovered, and not till Captain Cook had actually burnt ſome houſes and canoes, and threatened other acts of hoſtility.

At Eimeo the ſhips were abundantly ſupplied with fire wood. We did not ſupply ourſelves with this article at Otaheite, as there is not a tree at Matavai but what is uſeful to the inhabitants. We alſo received here a large ſupply of refreſhments in hogs, bread fruit, and cocoa nuts.

There is very little difference between the produce of this iſland and that of Otaheite; but the difference in their women is remarkable. Thoſe of Eimeo have a dark hue, are low in ſtature, and have forbidding features.

The appearance of Eimeo bears not the leaſt reſemblance to that of Otaheite. The latter being a hilly country, has little low land, except ſome deep vallies, and the flat border that ſurrounds it near the ſea. Eimeo has ſteep rugged hills, running in different directions, leaving large vallies, and gently riſing grounds about

about their ſides. The hills, though rocky, are generally covered with trees, almoſt to the tops. At the bottom of the harbour of Taloo, the ground gradually riſes to the foot of the hills; but the flat border on the ſides becomes quite ſteep at a ſmall diſtance from the ſea. This renders it a proſpect ſuperior to any thing we ſaw at Otaheite. Near the place where our ſhips were ſtationed are two large ſtones, concerning which ſome ſuperſtitious notions are entertained by the natives. They conſider them as brother and ſiſter; that they are Eatooas, or divinities, and that they came from Ulietea by ſome ſupernatural means.

On the morning that ſucceeded our departure from Eimeo, we ſaw Huaheine. At twelve o'clock we anchored at the northern entrance of Owharre harbour, ſituate on the weſt ſide of the iſland.

The next morning, which was the 13th of October, all the principal people of the iſland came to our ſhips. This was juſt what the Commodore wiſhed, as it was now high time to ſettle Omai; and he ſuppoſed, that the preſence of theſe chiefs would enable him to effect it in a ſatisfactory manner. Omai now ſeemed inclined to eſtabliſh himſelf at Ulietea; and if he and Captain Cook could have agreed with reſpect to the mode of accompliſhing that deſign, the latter would have conſented to adopt it. His father had been deprived by the inhabitants of Bolabola, when they ſubdued Ulietea, of ſome land in that iſland, and the Captain hoped he ſhould be able to get it reſtored to the ſon without difficulty. For this purpoſe it was neceſſary that Omai ſhould be upon amicable terms with thoſe who had become maſters of the iſland; but he would not liſten to any ſuch propoſal, and was vain enough to imagine, that the Captain would make uſe of force to re-inſtate him in his forfeited lands. This preventing his being fixed at Ulietea, the Captain began to conſider Huaheine as the more proper place, and therefore determined to avail himſelf of the preſence of the chief men of that iſland, and propoſe the affair to them.

The Captain now prepared to make a formal viſit to Tairee-

gene-
t the
ually
n the
the
thing
ships
which
e na-
that
came

from
e an-
bour,

ober,
hips.
was
that
effect
lined
btain
le of
con-
d by
Julie-
oped
hout
that
who
not
n to
e to
ting
con-
fore
hief

t to
ree-

A VIEW of TIMAHOE.

Taire
with
was t
on th
the c
landi
with
Capt
that
easily
ten y
ing t
&c.
giver
sever
diffe
of t
spok
meal
not
cond
offer
of t
sent
T
feat
sent
turn
lati
twe
out
the
sion
to t
tha
wa
(ch
wi
bee
by

Taireetareea, the *Earee rahie*, or King of the iſland, with a view of introducing this buſineſs. Omai, who was to accompany him, dreſſed himſelf very properly on the occaſion, and provided a handſome preſent for the chief himſelf, and another for his *Eatooa*. Their landing drew moſt of the viſitors from our ſhips, who, with many others, aſſembled in a large houſe. The Captain waited ſome time for Taireetareea: but when that chief appeared, he found that his preſence might eaſily have been diſpenſed with, as he did not exceed ten years of age. Omai began with making his offering to the gods, which conſiſted of cloth, red feathers, &c. Another offering ſucceeded, which was to be given to the gods by the young chief; and, after that, ſeveral other tufts of red feathers were preſented. The different articles were laid before a prieſt, being each of them delivered with a kind of prayer, which was ſpoken by one of Omai's friends, though in a great meaſure dictated by himſelf. In theſe prayers he did not forget his friends in England, nor thoſe who had conducted him ſafe back to his native country. Theſe offerings and prayers being ended, the prieſt took each of the articles in order, and, after repeating a prayer, ſent every one to the *morai*.

Theſe religious rites having been performed, Omai ſeated himſelf by the Captain, who beſtowed a preſent on the young chief, and received another in return. Some arrangements were next agreed upon, relative to the mode of carrying on the intercourſe between us and the iſlanders; and the Captain pointed out the miſchievous conſequences that would attend their plundering us, as they had done on former occaſions. The eſtabliſhment of Omai was then propoſed to the chiefs who were aſſembled. He informed them, that we had conveyed him into our country, where he was well received by the great King and his *Earees*, (chiefs or nobles) and treated during his whole ſtay with all the marks of regard and affection; that he had been brought back again, after having been enriched, by our generoſity, with a variety of articles which would

would be highly beneficial to his countrymen; and that, besides the two horses which were to continue with him, many other new and useful animals had been left at Otaheite, which would speedily multiply, and furnish a sufficient number for the use of all the neighbouring islands. He then gave them to understand, that it was Captain Cook's earnest request, that they would give his friend a piece of land, upon which he might build a house, and raise provisions for himself and servants; adding, that if he could not obtain this at Huaheine, either by donation or purchase, the Captoin was resolved to carry him to Ulietea, and establish him there. These topics were dictated to Omai by Captain Cook, who observed, that what he concluded with, about going to Ulietea, seemed to gain the approbation of all the chiefs, and he immediately perceived the reason. Omai had vainly flattered himself, that the Captain would use force in restoring him to his father's lands in Ulietea, and he had talked at random on this subject to some of the assembly, who now expected that the Captain would assist them in invading Ulietea, and driving the Bolabolans out of that island. It being proper, therefore, that he should undeceive them, he signified, in the most decisive manner, that he would neither give them any assistance in such an enterprize, nor would suffer it to be put in execution while he remained in their seas; and that, if Omai established himself in Ulietea, he ought to be introduced as a friend, and not forced upon the people of Bolabola as their conqueror.

This peremptory declaration immediately gave a new turn to the sentiments of the council, one of whom expressed himself to this effect: that the whole island of Huaheine, and whatever it contained, were Captain Cook's; and that, consequently, he might dispose of what portion he pleased to his friend. Omai was pleased at hearing this; thinking that he would be very liberal, and give him what was perfectly sufficient. But to make an offer of what it would have been improper to accept, the Captain considered as offering

fering nothing; and therefore desired that they would mark out the particular spot, and likewise the exact quantity of land which they intended to allot for the settlement. Upon this, some chiefs, who had already retired from the assembly, were sent for, and, after a short consultation, the Commodore's request was unanimously granted, and the ground immediately fixed upon, adjoining to the house where the present meeting was held. It extended along the shore of the harbour about two hundred yards; its depth to the bottom of the hill was somewhat more; and a proportional part of the hill was comprehended in the grant. This affair being settled, a tent was pitched on shore, a post established, and the observatories erected. The carpenters of each ship were also now employed in building a small house for Omai, in which he might secure the various European commodities that he had in his possession; at the same time some of our people were occupied in making a garden for his use, planting vines, shaddocks, melons, pine apples, and the seeds of other vegetable articles; all which were in a flourishing state before our departure from the island.

Omai began now to pay a serious attention to his own affairs, and heartily repented of his ill-judged prodigality at Otaheite. He found at Huaheine, a brother, a sister, and a brother-in-law, the sister having been married: but these did not plunder him, as his other relations had lately done. It appeared, however, that though they had too much honesty and good nature to do him any injury, they were of two little consequence in the island to do him any real services, having neither authority nor influence to protect his person. Thus circumstanced, he ran great risque of being stripped of every thing he had received from us, as soon as he should cease to be within the reach of our powerful protection.

He was now on the point of being placed in the very singular situation, of being the only rich man in the community of which he was to be a member. And as he had, by his connection with us, made himself

master

maſter of an accumulated quantity of a ſpecies of treaſure which his countrymen could not create by any art or induſtry of their own, it was natural to imagine, that while all were deſirous of ſharing in this envied wealth, all would be ready to join in attempts to ſtrip its ſole proprietor. As the moſt likely means of preventing this, Captain Cook adviſed him to diſtribute ſome of his moveables among two or three of the principal chiefs, who, on being thus gratified themſelves, might be induced to favour him with their patronage, and ſhield him from the injuries of others: he promiſed to follow this advice; and we heard before we ſailed, that this prudent ſtep had been taken. The Captain, however, not confiding entirely to the operations of gratitude, had recourſe to the more forcible and effectual mode of intimidation, taking every opportunity of notifying to the inhabitants, that it was his intention to make another viſit to their iſland, after being abſent the uſual time; and that, if he did not find his friend in the ſame ſtate of ſecurity in which he ſhould leave him at preſent, all thoſe who ſhould then appear to have been his enemies, might expect to become the objects of his reſentment.

While we remained in this harbour, we carried the bread on ſhore to clear it of vermin. The number of cockroaches that infeſted the ſhip at this time is almoſt incredible. The damage we ſuſtained from them was very conſiderable, and every attempt to deſtroy them proved fruitleſs. If any kind of food was expoſed for a few minutes, it was covered with theſe noxious inſects, who ſoon pierced it full of holes, ſo that it reſembled an honeycomb. They proved ſufficiently deſtructive to birds, which had been ſtuffed for curioſities, and were ſo fond of ink, that they eat out the writings on the labels, faſtened to different articles; and the only thing which preſerved books from their ravages was the cloſeneſs of the binding, which prevented theſe devourers from inſinuating themſelves between the leaves.

Omai's houſe being now almoſt finiſhed, many of his moveables

moveables were carried aſhore on the 26th; amongſt other articles was a box of toys, which greatly pleaſed the gazing multitude: but as to his plates, diſhes, drinking mugs, glaſſes, pots, kettles, and the whole train of domeſtic apparatus, ſcarce one of his countrymen would even look at them. Omai himſelf began to think that they would be of no ſervice to him; that a baked hog was more ſavory eating than a boiled one; that a plantain leaf made as good a plate or diſh as pewter; and that a cocoa-nut ſhell was as convenient a goblet as one of our mugs. He therefore diſpoſed of moſt of theſe articles of Engliſh furniture among the crew of our ſhips; and received from them, in return, hatchets, and other iron implements, which had a more intrinſic value in this part of the world. Among the numerous preſents beſtowed upon him in England, fireworks had not been omitted; ſome of which we exhited in the evening of the 28th, before a great multitude of people, who beheld them with a mixture of pleaſure and apprehenſion. Thoſe which remained were put in order, and left with Omai, purſuant to their original deſtination.

Omai was no ſooner ſettled in his new habitation, than Captain Cook began to think of departing from Huaheine, and got every thing off from the ſhore this evening, except a goat big with kid, and a horſe and mare, which were left in poſſeſſion of our friend, who was now to be finally ſeparated from us. We alſo gave him a boar and two ſows of the Engliſh breed, and he had got two or three ſows of his own. The horſe had been with the mare during our continuance at Otaheite; ſo that the introduction of a breed of horſes into theſe iſlands has probably ſucceeded by this valuable preſent.

With regard to Omai's domeſtic eſtabliſhment, he had procured at Otaheite four or five *toutous*, or people of the lower claſs; two young New Zealanders remained with him; and his brother, and ſeveral others, joined him at Huaheine; ſo that his family now conſiſted of ten or eleven perſons, if that can juſtly be denominated

nominated a family to which not one female belonged. The houſe which our people erected for him was twenty-four feet by eighteen, and about ten feet in height. It was compoſed of boards, which were the ſpoils of our military operations at Eimeo; and, in the conſtruction of it, as few nails as poſſible were uſed, leſt there might be an inducement, from the deſire of iron, to pull it down. It was agreed upon, that, immediately after our departure, he ſhould erect a ſpacious houſe after the mode of his own country; one end of which was to be brought over that which we had built, ſo as entirely to encloſe it for greater ſecurity. In this work ſome of the chiefs of the iſland promiſed to contribute their aſſiſtance; and if the intended building ſhould cover the ground which was marked out for it, few of the houſes in Huaheine will exceed it in magnitude.

Omai's European weapons conſiſted of a fowling piece, two pair of piſtols, ſeveral ſwords or cutlaſſes, a muſquet, bayonet, and a cartouch box. After he had got on ſhore whatever appertained to him, he had the two Captains, and moſt of the officers of both our ſhips, two or three times to dinner; on which occaſions, his table was plentifully ſupplied with the beſt proviſions that the iſland could afford. Before we ſet ſail, the Commodore cauſed the following inſcription to be cut upon the outſide of his houſe:

Georgius Tertius, Rex, 2 Novembris, 1777.

Naves { *Reſolution, Jac. Cook, Pr.*
Diſcovery, Car. Clerke, Pr.

On Sunday, the 2d of November, at four o'clock, we took the advantage of an eaſterly breeze, and ſailed out of Owharre harbour. Moſt of our friends continued on board till our veſſels were under ſail, when Captain Cook, to gratify their curioſity, ordered five guns to be fired; then they all left us, except Omai, who remained till we were out at ſea. We had come to ſail by a hawſer faſtened to the ſhore, which, in caſting the ſhip, parted, being cut by the rocks, and

its

its outer end was left behind; it therefore became necessary to dispatch a boat to bring it on board. In this boat, our friend Omai went ashore, after having taken a very affectionate farewel of all the officers. He sustained this parting with a manly fortitude, till he came to Captain Cook, when, notwithstanding all his efforts, he was unable to suppress his tears; and he wept all the time in going ashore, as Mr. King, who accompanied him in the boat, afterwards informed the Captain.

Omai's return, and the substantial proofs he carried back with him of British liberality, encouraged many to offer themselves as volunteers to accompany us to *Pretane*. Captain Cook took every opportunity of expressing his fixed determination to reject all applications of that kind. Omai, who was ambitious of remaining the only great traveller among them, being afraid lest the Captain might be prevailed upon to place others in a situation of rivalling him, frequently reminded him of the declaration of the Earl of Sandwich, that no others of his countrymen were to come to England.

As soon as the boat in which Omai was conveyed on shore had returned with the remainder of the hawser to the ship, we hoisted her in, and stood over for Ulietea without delay. The next morning, which was the 3d of November, we made sail round the southern end of that island, for the harbour of Ohamaneno. We were no sooner within the harbour, than our ships were surrounded with canoes, filled with the natives, who brought a supply of fruit and hogs, which they exchanged for our commodities.

About a fortnight after we had arrived at Ulietea, Omai dispatched two of his people in a canoe with intelligence, that he continued undisturbed by the inhabitants of Huaheine, and that every thing succeeded with him, except that his goat had died in kidding. This information was accompanied with a request, that Captain Cook would send him another goat, and also two axes. Pleased with this additional opportu-

nity

nity of ſerving his friend, the Captain ſent back the meſſengers to Huaheine, on the 18th, with the axes, and a male and female kid.

On Wedneſday the 19th, the Commodore delivered to Captain Clerke his inſtructions how to proceed in caſe of ſeparation after quitting theſe iſlands. The purport of theſe inſtructions was as follows: that whereas the paſſage from the Society Iſles to the northern coaſt of America was of conſiderable length, and as a part of it muſt be performed in the depth of winter, when boiſterous weather muſt be expected, which might perhaps occaſion a ſeparation, Captain Clerke ſhould take all poſſible care to prevent this; but if the two ſhips ſhould chance to be ſeparated, he, after ſearching for Captain Cook, and not finding him in five days, was to proceed towards the coaſt of New Albion, and endeavour to fall in with it in the latitude of 45°, where he was to cruize for him ten days; and not ſeeing him in that time, he was to put into the firſt convenient harbour in or to the north of that latitude, to obtain refreſhments and to take in wood and water: that, during his continuance in port, he was conſtantly to look out for Captain Cook, and if the latter did not join him before the 1ſt of April following, he was to proceed northward to the latitude of 56°, where, at ſuch a diſtance from the coaſt as did not exceed fifteen leagues, he was to cruize for him till the 10th of May, and not finding him, was to proceed on a northerly courſe, and attempt to diſcover a paſſage into the Atlanc Ocean, either through Hudſon's or Baffin's Bays, as directed by the inſtructions of the Board of Admiralty: that if he ſhould fail in thoſe endeavours, he was to repair to the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul in Kamtſchatka, and paſs the winter there; but that if he could not procure refreſhments at that port, he was at liberty to go where he ſhould think proper, leaving with the Governor, before his departure, an account of his deſtination, to be delivered to Captain Cook on his arrival; and that in the ſpring of the year following (1779) he

he was to return to the port above mentioned: that if he then received no farther orders from Captain Cook, so as to justify his pursuing any other measures than those which were pointed out in the instructions of the Lords of the Admiralty, his future proceedings were to be directed by them; and that in case of being prevented by illness or any other cause, from carrying these, and the instructions of their Lordships into execution, he was to leave them with the officer who was next in command.

While we lay moored to the shore, we scrubbed both the sides and bottoms, &c. of our vessels, and also fixed some plates of tin under the binds. These plates Captain Cook received from the ingenious Mr. Pelham, Secretary to the Commissioners for victualling the royal navy, for the purpose of trying whether tin would succeed as well as copper, in sheathing the bottoms of ships.

On Thursday the 27th, we took down our observatories, and carried on board whatever we had on shore; we then unmoored the ships, and moved a little way down the harbour, where we anchored again. In the succeeding night, the wind blew in hard squalls, which were accompanied with heavy showers of rain. In one of these squalls, the cable by which the Resolution was riding at anchor, parted; but as we had another anchor ready to let go, the ship was quickly brought up again.

The wind continuing constantly between the north and west, kept us in the harbour till Sunday the 7th of December; when, at eight o'clock in the morning, we weighed and made sail with a light breeze at the north-east point. During the preceding week we had been visited by persons from all quarters of the island, who afforded us a plentiful supply of hogs and green plantains; so that the time we remained wind bound in the harbour was not totally lost; for green plantains are an excellent succedaneum for bread, and will keep good for two or three weeks. Besides being furnished

nished with these provsions, we also took in plenty of wood and water.

The Ulieteans appeared to be, in general, smaller and more black than the natives of the adjacent islands, and seemed also less orderly, which may, perhaps, be owing to their having become subject to the inhabitants of Bolabola. Oreo, their chief, is only a kind of deputy of the Bolabolan monarch; and the conquest seems to have diminished the number of subordinate chiefs resident among them; they are, therefore, less immediately under the eye of those whose interest it is to enforce a proper obedience. Though Ulietea is now reduced to this state of humiliating dependence, it was formerly, as we were informed, the most eminent of this group of islands, and was probably the first seat of government; for we were told, that the present royal family of Otaheite derives its descent from that which ruled here before the late revolution. The dethroned king of Ulietea, whose name is Ooroo, resides at Huaheine, furnishing in his own person, an instance not only of the instability of power, but also of the respect paid by these islanders to particular families of princely rank; for they allow Ooroo to retain all the ensigns which are appropriated by them to royalty, notwithstanding his having been deprived of his dominions. We observed a similar instance of this during our stay at Ulietea, where one of our occasional visitants was Captain Cook's old friend Oree, late chief of Huaheine. He still maintained his consequence, and was constantly attended by a numerous retinue.

Having taken our leave of Ulietea, we steered for Bolabola. Our pincipal reason for visiting this island, was to procure one of the anchors which had been lost at Otaheite by Monsieur de Bougainville. Capt. Cook having obtained this anchor by means of presents, he returned on board, hoisted in the boats, and made sail to the north. Had we remained there till the next day, we would probably have been supplied with plenty of provisions; and the natives would, doubt-

doubtleſs, be diſappointed when they we found were gone: but having already a good ſtock of hogs and fruit onboard, and not many articles left to purchaſe more, we had no inducement to defer the proſecution of our voyage.

Oteavanooa, the harbour of Bolabola, ſituated on the weſt ſide of the iſland, is very capacious; and though we did not enter it, Captain Cook had the ſatisfaction of being informed, by perſons employed by him for that purpoſe, that it was a very proper place for the reception of ſhips.

Conſidering the ſmall extent of Bolabola, being only eight leagues in circumference, it is remarkable that its people ſhould have been able to conquer Ulietea and Otaha; the former of which iſlands is more than double its ſize.

When the inhabitants are not diſturbed by inteſtine broils, which has been the caſe for ſeveral years paſt, their productions are numerous and plentiful. If we had poſſeſſed a greater aſſortment of goods, and a proper quantity of ſalt, we might have ſalted as much pork as would have been ſufficient to laſt both ſhips almoſt a year. But we quite exhauſted our trading commodities at the Friendly Iſlands, Otaheite, and its neighbourhood. Our axes, in particular, were nearly gone, with which alone, hogs were in general, to be purchaſed. The ſalt that remained on board, was not more than was requiſite for curing fifteen puncheons of meat.

It is, in a manner, incumbent on the Europeans to pay them occaſional viſits (once in three or four years) to ſupply them with thoſe articles, which we, by introducing, have given them a predilection for. The want of ſuch ſupplies may be ſeverely felt when it is too late to return to their old imperfect contrivances, which they now deſpiſe and diſcard. When the iron tools, with which we have furniſhed them, are worn out, their own will be almoſt forgotten. A ſtone hatchet is now as great a curioſity among them, as an iron one was ſeven or eight years ago; and a chiſſel

made of bone or ſtone is no where to be ſeen. Spike nails have been ſubſtituted in the room of the latter articles, and they are weak enough to imagine, that their ſtore of them is inexhauſtible, for they were no longer ſought after.

Knives happened at this time to be in high eſtimation at Ulietea; and axes and hatchets bore unrivalled ſway at all the iſlands. Reſpecting articles merely ornamental, theſe iſlanders are as changeable as the moſt poliſhed European nations; for, an article which may be prized by them to-day, may, perhaps, be rejected to-morrow, as a faſhion or whim may alter. But our iron implements are ſo evidently uſeful, that they muſt continue to be high in their eſtimation. They would indeed be miſerable, if they ſhould ceaſe to receive ſupplies of what appears neceſſary to their comfortable exiſtence; as they are deſtitute of the materials, and ignorant of the art of fabricating them.

Mr. Anderſon relates, that the greateſt part of the year, the wind blows from between eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, and eaſt-north-eaſt. It ſometimes blows with conſiderable force, and is called by the natives *maaraee*.

The ſouth-eaſt part of Otaheite affords one of the moſt luxuriant proſpects in the univerſe. The hills are high, ſteep, and craggy, but they are covered to the very ſummits with trees and ſhrubs; the rocks ſeeming to poſſeſs the property of producing their verdant clothing. The lower land and vallies teem with various productions, that grow with exuberant vigour, and convey to the mind of the beholders, an idea, that no country upon earth can vie with this in the ſtrength and beauty of vegetation; nature has been equally liberal in diſtributing rivulets, which glide through every valley, dividing, as they approach the ſea into ſeveral branches, fertilizing the lands through which they run.

The habitations of the natives are irregularly ſcattered upon the flat land; and many of them, along the ſhore, afforded us a delightful ſcene from our ſhips, eſpecially as the ſea within the reef is perfectly ſtill, and

and affords at all times a ſafe navigation for the inhabitants, who are often ſeen paſſing and repaſſing in their canoes.

The bread-fruit tree is never planted, but ſprings from the roots of the old ones, which ſpread themſelves near the ſurface of the ground. The principal trees are the cocoa nut and plantain; the firſt of which requires no attention after it appears a foot or two above the ground: but the plantain requires ſome care in the cultivation; for about three months after it ſhoots up, it begins to bear fruit, during which time it puts forth young ſhoots, which ſupply a ſucceſſion of fruit; the old ſtocks being cut down as the fruit is taken off.

On our arrival here, we were ſtruck with the remarkable contraſt between the inhabitants of Tongataboo, and thoſe of Otaheite; the former being of a robuſt make, and dark colour, and the latter having a diſtinguiſhed delicacy and whiteneſs. That difference, however, did not immediately preponderate in favour of the Otaheitans; and when it did, it was, perhaps, occaſioned more by our becoming accuſtomed to them; the marks, which had recommended the others, beginning now to be forgotten.

The women, however, of Otaheite, poſſeſs all thoſe delicate characteriſtics, which in many countries diſtinguiſh them from the other ſex. The men wear their beards long here, and their hair conſiderably longer than at Tongataboo, which gave them a very different appearance. The Otaheitans are timid and fickle; they are not ſo muſcular and robuſt as the Friendly Iſlanders, ariſing, perhaps, from their being accuſtomed to leſs action; the ſuperior fertility of their country enabling them to lead a more indolent life.

As perſonal endowments are in high eſtimation among them, they have various methods of improving them, according to their ideas of beauty. Among the *Erreoes*, or unmarried men, eſpecially thoſe of ſome conſequence, it is cuſtomary to undergo a kind of phy-

ſical operation, to render them fair; which is done by continuing a month or two in the houſe, wearing a great quantity of cloaths the whole time, and eating nothing but bread fruit, which they ſay is remarkably efficacious in whitening the ſkin.

Nine-tenths, at leaſt of their common diet, conſiſt of vegetable food, and the *mahee*, or fermented bread-fruit. To this temperate courſe of life, may, perhaps, be attributed their having ſo few diſeaſes among them.

They ſhew an openneſs and generoſity of diſpoſition upon all occaſions. Omai, indeed, has frequently ſaid, that they exerciſe cruelty in puniſhing their enemies, and torment them with great deliberation; ſometimes tearing out ſmall pieces of fleſh from different parts of the body; at other times plucking out the eyes; then cutting off the noſe; and laſtly, completing the buſineſs, by opening the belly. But this is only on very extraordinary occaſions.

Under any misfortune, after the critical moment is paſt, they never labour under the appearance of anxiety. Care never produces a wrinkle on their brow; even the approach of death does not deprive them of their vivacity. I have ſeen them, when on the brink of the grave by diſeaſe, and when preparing to attack the enemy; but, in neither of theſe caſes have I ever obſerved their countenances overclouded with melancholy or dread.

Diſpoſed, as they naturally are, to direct their aims to what will afford them eaſe or pleaſure, all their amuſements tend to excite their amorous paſſions; and their ſongs, with which they are greatly delighted, are directed to the ſame purpoſe. A conſtant ſucceſſion of ſenſual enjoyments muſt, however, cloy; and they occaſionally varied them to more refined ſubjects; they chanted their triumphs in war, and their amuſements in peace: their travels and adventures, and the peculiar advantages of their own iſland.

Though the language of Otaheite ſeems radically the ſame as that of New Zealand and the Friendly Iſlands, it has not that guttural pronunciation, and is pruned

pruned of ſome of the conſonants, with which thoſe dialects abound; which has rendered it like the manners of the inhabitants, ſoft and ſoothing. It abounds with beautiful and figurative expreſſions; and is ſo copious, that they have above twenty different names for the bread fruit, as many for the *taro* root, and half that number for the cocoa nut.

They have one expreſſion correſponding exactly with the phraſeology of the Scriptures, viz. "Yearning of the bowels." They uſe it upon every occaſion, when affected by the paſſions; conſtantly referring pain from grief, deſire, and other affections, to the bowels, as the ſeat of it; where they imagine all operations of the mind are alſo performed.

In the arts they are extremely deficient; yet they pretend to perform cures in ſurgery, which our knowledge in that branch has not enabled us to imitate. Simple fractures are bound up with ſplints; but, if a part of the bone be loſt, they inſert, between the fractured ends, a piece of wood made hollow to ſupply its place. The *rapaoo*, or ſurgeon, inſpects the wound in about five or ſix days, when he finds the wood is partly covered by the growing fleſh; and, in as many more days, viſits the patient a ſecond time, when it is generally completely covered; and when he has acquired ſome ſtrength, he bathes in the water and is reſtored.

Fractures of the ſpine, they know, are mortal; and they alſo know, from experience, in what particular parts of the body wounds prove fatal. Their phyſical knowledge ſeems yet more limited, becauſe, perhaps, their diſeaſes are fewer than their accidents.

A famine frequently happens in this iſland, notwithſtanding its extreme fertility, in which many people are ſaid to periſh. Whether this calamity be owing to the ſcanty produce of ſome ſeaſons, to over population, or to wars, I have not been ſufficiently informed; but it has taught them to exerciſe the ſtricteſt œconomy even in the times of plenty.

A very ſmall portion of animal food is enjoyed by the lower claſs of people; and if, at any time, they obtain any, it is either fiſh, ſea-eggs, or other marine productions; for pork hardly ever falls to their ſhare. Only the *Eree de hoi* is able to afford pork every day; and the inferior chiefs, according to their riches, perhaps once a week, a fortnight, or a month.

The *ava* is chiefly uſed among the better ſort of people, but this beverage is differently prepared, from that which we ſaw in the Friendly Iſlands. Here they pour a ſmall quantity of water upon the root, and often bake, roaſt, or bruiſe the ſtalks, without chewing it before it is infuſed. They alſo bruiſe the leaves of the plant here, and pour water upon them, as upon the root. It is not drank in large companies, in that ſociable way which is practiſed among the people at Tongataboo; but it has more pernicious effects here, owing, perhaps, to the manner of its preparation; as we ſaw frequent inſtances of its intoxicating powers.

Many of us, who had viſited theſe iſlands before, were ſurprized to find ſeveral of the natives, who were remarkable for their ſize and corpulency, when we ſaw them laſt, now almoſt reduced to ſkeletons; and the cauſe of this alteration was univerſally attributed to the uſe of the *ava*. Their ſkins were dry, rough, and covered with ſcales; which, they ſay, occaſionally fall off, and their ſkin becomes, in ſome degree, renewed. As an excuſe for ſo deſtructive a practice, they alledge, it is to prevent their growing too corpulent; but it enervates them exceedingly, and probably ſhortens the duration of their lives.

Their meals at Otaheite are very frequent. The firſt is about two o'clock in the morning, after which they go to ſleep; the next is at eight; they dine at eleven, and again, as Omai expreſſed it, at two, and at five; and they go to ſupper at eight. They have adopted ſome very whimſical cuſtoms, in this article of domeſtic life. The women are not only obliged to eat by themſelves, but are even excluded from partaking of moſt of the better ſorts of food. Turtle, or

fiſh

fish of the tunny kind, they dare not touch, though it is high in esteem; some particular sorts of the best plantains are also forbidden them; and even those of the first rank are seldom permitted to eat pork. The children, of both sexes, also eat apart; and the women usually serve up their own provisions.

They are not so obscure and mysterious in their other customs respecting the females, especially with regard to their connections with the men. When a young man and woman, from mutual choice, agree to cohabit, the man makes a present to the father of the girl, of the common necessaries of life, as hogs, cloth, or canoes; and if he supposes he has not received a valuable consideration for his daughter, he compels her to leave her former friend, and to cohabit with a person who may be more liberal. The man, indeed, is always at full liberty to make a new choice; or, should his consort become a mother, he may destroy the child; and afterwards either leave the woman, or continue his connection with her. But, if he adopts the child, and permits it to live, the man and woman are then considered as in the married state; and, after that, they seldom separate. A man may, however, without being censured, join a more youthful partner to his first wife, and live with both of them.

Their religious system abounds in singularities, and few of the common people have a competent knowledge of it, that being principally confined to their priests, who, indeed, are numerous, They pay no particular respect to one god, as possessing pre-eminence; but believe in a plurality of divinities, who have each a plenitude of power.

As different parts of the island, and the other neighbouring islands, have different gods, the respective inhabitants imagine they have chosen the most eminent, or one who is, at least, sufficiently powerful to protect them, and to supply their necessities. If he should not give them satisfaction, they think it no impiety to change. An instance of this kind has lately happened in Tiaraboo, where two divinities have been discarded,

and Oraa, god of Bolabola, has been adopted in their room.

In ſerving their gods, their aſſiduity is remarkably conſpicuous. The *whattas*, or offering-places of the *morais* are, in general, loaded with fruits and animals; and almoſt every houſe has a portion of it ſet apart for a ſimilar purpoſe.

As in other caſes, ſo in religion, the women are obliged to ſhew their inferiority. When they paſs the *morais*, they muſt partly uncover themſelves, or take an extenſive circuit to avoid them. Though they do not entertain an opinion, that their god muſt be continually conferring benefits, without ſometimes forſaking them; they are leſs concerned at this, than at the attempts of ſome inauſpicious being to injure them. *Etee*, they ſay, is an evil ſpirit, who delights in miſchief; to whom they make offerings, as well as to their divinity. But all the miſchiefs they apprehend from inviſible beings are merely temporal.

As to the ſoul, they believe it to be both immortal and immaterial; that, during the pangs of death, it keeps fluttering about the lips; and that it aſcends, and is eaten by the deity: that it continues in this ſtate for ſome time; after which it takes its paſſage to a certain place, deſtined to receive the ſouls of men, and has exiſtence in eternal night; or rather in a kind of dawn, or twilight. They expect no permanent puniſhment hereafter, for crimes committed upon earth; the ſouls of good and bad men being indiſcriminately eaten by the deity.

If the huſband departs this life firſt, they ſuppoſe, that the ſoul of his wife is no ſtranger to him, on its arrival in the land of ſpirits. They renew their former intimacy, in a capacious building, called *Tourooa*, where departed ſouls aſſemble to recreate themſelves with the gods. The huſband then conducts her to his ſeparate habitation, where they eternally reſide, and have an offſpring, which, however, is purely ſpiritual.

Many

Many of their notions respecting the Deity are extravagantly absurd. They suppose him to be under the influence of those spirits, who derive their existence from him; and that they frequently eat him, though he has power to re-create himself. They cannot converse about immaterial things, without referring to material objects to convey their meaning, and therefore, perhaps, they use this mode of expression. They are of opinion, that those who are drowned in the sea continue there, and enjoy a delightful country, sumptuous habitations, and every thing that can contribute to their happiness. They even maintain that all other animals have souls; and even trees, fruit, and stones; which, at their decease, or upon their being consumed or broken, ascend to the deity, from whom they pass into their destined mansion.

They have implicit confidence in dreams, supposing them to be communications from their Deity, or from the spirits of their friends who have departed this life; and that those who are favoured with them can foretel future events: but this kind of knowledge is limited to particular persons. Omai pretended to have these communications. He assured us, that, on the 26th of July, 1776, his father's soul had intimated to him in a dream, that he should land somewhere in three days; but he was unfortunate in his first prophetic attempt, for we did not get into Teneriffe till the first of August.

They have strange obscure traditions concerning the creation. Some goddess, they say, had a lump of earth suspended in a cord, and, by giving it a swing round, scattered about several pieces of land, which constituted Otaheite and the adjacent islands; and that they were all peopled by one of each sex, who originally fixed at Otaheite; but this only respects their own immediate creation; for they admit of an universal one before this.

They have many religious and historical legends; one of which, relative to eating human flesh, is, in substance, as follows: A very long time ago, there

lived at Otaheite two men, who were called *Taheeai*; a name which is now given to cannibals. They inhabited the mountains, whence they iſſued forth, and murdered the natives, whom they afterwards devoured, and thus prevented the progreſs of population. Two brothers, anxious to rid the country of ſuch enemies, ſucceſsfully put in practice a ſtratagem for their deſtruction. They lived farther upward than the *Taheeai*, and were ſo ſituated, that they could converſe with them without hazarding their own ſafety. They invited them to partake of an entertainment, to which they readily conſented. The brothers then heated ſome ſtones in a fire, and thruſting them into pieces of *mahee*, requeſted one of the *Taheeai* to open his mouth; when one of thoſe pieces was immediately dropped in, and ſome water poured after it, which, in quenching the ſtone, made a hiſſing noiſe and killed him. The other was entreated to do the ſame, but at firſt declined it, mentioning the conſequences of his companion's eating: but, upon being aſſured that the food was excellent, that theſe effects were only temporary, and that his companion would ſoon recover, he was ſo credulous as to ſwallow the bait, and was alſo killed.

Their bodies were then cut to pieces, and buried by the natives, who rewarded the brothers with the government of the iſland, for delivering them from ſuch monſters.

The principal characteriſtics of the ſovereign, are, the being inveſted with the *maro*, the preſiding at human ſacrifices, and the blowing of the conch-ſhell. On hearing the latter, every ſubject is obliged to bring food, in proportion to his circumſtances, to his royal reſidence. Their veneration for his name, on ſome occaſions, they carry to a moſt extravagant height. When he accedes to the *maro*, if any words in the language are found to have a reſemblance to it in ſound, they are immediately changed for others; and, if any man ſhould be preſumptuous enough to continue the uſe of thoſe words, not only he, but his whole family, are put to death.

The ſovereign never deigns to enter the habitation of any of his ſubjects; in every diſtrict, where he viſits, he has houſes belonging to himſelf, And if, by accident, he ſhould ever be obliged to deviate from this rule, the habitation thus honoured with his preſence, together with its furniture, is entirely burnt. When preſent, his ſubjects uncover to him as low as the waiſt; and, when he is at any particular place, a pole, with a piece of cloth affixed to it, is ſet up in ſome conſpicuous part near, on which the ſame honours are beſtowed.

Otaheite is divided into ſeveral diſtricts, the boundaries of which are generally rivulets or low hills; but the ſubdiviſions, by which particular property is aſcertained, are pointed out by large ſtones, which have continued from generation to generation. Quarrels are ſometimes produced, by the removal of theſe ſtones, which are decided by battle; each party claiming the aſſiſtance of his friends. But, upon a complaint being properly made to the *Erce de hoi*, he determines the difference in an amicable manner.

Beſides the number or cluſter of iſlands, extending from Mataia to Mouroa, we were informed by the people at Otaheite, that there was a low uninhabited iſland, called Mopeeha; and alſo ſeveral low iſlands, to the north-eaſtward, at the diſtance of about two days ſail with a fair wind.

At Mataeeva, it is ſaid to be cuſtomary, for men to preſent their daughters to ſtrangers who viſit that iſland. The pairs, however, muſt lie near each other for the ſpace of five nights, without preſuming to take any liberties. On the ſixth evening, the father entertains his gueſt with food, and orders the daughter to receive him, that night, as her huſband. Though the bedfellow be ever ſo diſagreeable to the ſtranger, he muſt not dare to expreſs the leaſt diſlike; for that is an unpardonable affront, and puniſhable with death. Forty men of Bolabola, whom curioſity had incited to go to Mataeeva, were treated in this manner: one of them having declared his averſion to the female who fell to

his lot, in the hearing of a boy, who mentioned it to the father. Fired with this information, the Mataeevans fell upon them; but the Bolabolans killed thrice their own number, though with the loſs of the whole party except five. Theſe, at firſt, concealed themſelves in the woods, and afterwards effected their eſcape in a canoe.

Upon our quitting Bolabola, and taking leave of the Society Iſlands, on Monday the 8th of December, we ſteered to the northward, with the wind between north-eaſt and eaſt; ſcarce ever having it in the ſouth-eaſt point, till after we had croſſed the equator.

In the night between the 22d and 23d, we croſſed the equinoctial line; and on the 24th, ſoon after day-break, we diſcovered land bearing north-eaſt by eaſt. Capt. Cook being of opinion, that this iſland would prove a convenient place for procuring turtle, reſolved to anchor here. We accordingly dropped our anchors in thirty fathoms water. Early the next morning, which was Chriſtmas-day, two boats were ſent, one from each ſhip, to examine more accurately whether it was practicable to land; and, at the ſame time, two others were ordered out, to fiſh at a grappling near the ſhore. Theſe laſt returned about eight, with as many fiſh as weighed upwards of two hundred pounds. Encouraged by this ſucceſs, the Commodore diſpatched them again after breakfaſt; and he then went himſelf in another boat, to view the coaſt, and attempt landing, which, however, he found to be impracticable. The two boats which had been ſent out on the ſame ſearch returned about twelve o'clock; and the maſter, who was in that belonging to the Reſolution, reported to Captain Cook, that, about four or five miles to the northward, there being a break in the land, and a channel into the lagoon, there was conſequently a proper place for landing. In conſequence of this report we weighed, and, after two or three trips, anchored again over a bottom of fine dark ſand, before a little iſland lying at the entrance of the lagoon.

On Friday the 26th, in the morning, the Commodore

dore ordered Captain Clerke to ſend out a boat, with an officer in it, to the ſouth-eaſt part of the lagoon, in queſt of turtle; and went himſelf with Mr. King, each in a boat, to the north-eaſt part. It was his intention to have gone to the eaſtern extremity; but the wind not permitting it, he and Mr. King landed more to leeward, on a ſandy flat, where they caught one turtle, which was the only one they ſaw in the lagoon. Though ſo few turtles were obſerved by theſe two gentlemen, we did not deſpair of a ſupply; for ſome of the officers of the Diſcovery, who had been aſhore to the ſouthward of the channel leading into the lagoon, had more ſucceſs, and caught ſeveral.

Having ſome yams and cocoa-nuts on board, in a ſtate of vegetation, we planted them by Captain Cook's order, and ſome ſeeds of melons were ſown. The Captain alſo left a bottle, containing the following inſcription:

Georgius Tertius, Rex, 31 *Decembris,* 1777.

Naves { *Reſolution, Jac. Cook, Pr.*
Diſcovery, Car. Clerke, Pr.

On Thurſday, the 1ſt of January, 1778, the Commodore ſent out ſeveral boats to bring on board our different parties employed aſhore, with the turtle which they had caught. It being late before this buſineſs was completed, he thought proper to defer ſailing till the next morning. We procured at this iſland, for both ſhips, about three hundred turtles, which weighed, one with another, about ninety pounds: they were all of the green ſort, and, perhaps, not inferior in goodneſs to any in the world.

The ſoil of this iſland (to which Captain Cook gave the name of Chriſtmas Iſland, as we kept that feſtival here) is, in ſome places, light and blackiſh, compoſed of ſand, the dung of birds, and rotten vegetables. In other parts it is formed of broken coral-ſtones, decayed ſhells, and other marine productions. We could not diſcover the ſmalleſt traces of any human creature having

ing ever been here before us; and, indeed, ſhould any one be accidentally driven on the iſland, or left there, he would hardly be able to prolong his exiſtence. For, though there are birds and fiſh in abundance, there are no viſible means of allaying thirſt, nor any vegetable that would ſerve as a ſubſtitute for bread, or correct the bad effects of an animal diet. On the few cocoa-nut trees upon the iſland, we found very little fruit, and that little not good.

Chriſtmas Iſland is ſuppoſed by Captain Cook to be between fifteen and twenty leagues in circuit. Its form is ſemicircular, or like the moon in her laſt quarter, the two horns being the north and ſouth points. The weſt ſide, or the ſmall iſland ſituate at the entrance into the lagoon, lies in the longitude of 202° 30′ eaſt, and in the latitude of 1° 59′ north.

Weighing anchor at day-break, on Friday the 2d of January, 1778, we reſumed our northerly courſe, with a gentle breeze at eaſt, and eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, which continued till we arrived in the latitude of 7° 45′ north, and the longitude of 205° eaſt, where we had a day of perfect calm. A north-eaſt-by-eaſt wind then ſucceeded, which blew faintly at firſt, but freſhened as we proceeded northward. Early in the morning of Sunday the 18th, an iſland appeared, bearing north-eaſt-by-eaſt. Not long after, more land was ſeen, which bore north, and was totally detached from the former. At noon, the firſt was ſuppoſed to be eight or nine leagues diſtant. Our longitude, at this time, was 200° 41′ eaſt, and our latitude, 21° 12′ north. The next day, at ſun-riſe, the iſland firſt ſeen bore eaſt, at the diſtance of ſeveral leagues. Not being able to reach this, we ſhaped our courſe for the other; and ſoon after, obſerved a third iſland, bearing weſt-north-weſt.

We had now a fine breeze at eaſt-by-north; and, at noon, the ſecond iſland, named Atooi, for the eaſt end of which we were ſteering, was about two leagues diſtant. As we made a nearer approach, many of the inhabitants put off from the ſhore in their canoes, and very

very readily came along-ſide the ſhips. We were agreeably ſurprized to find, that they ſpoke a dialect of the Otaheitan language. They could not be prevailed upon by any intreaties to come on board. Captain Cook tied ſome braſs medals to a rope, which he gave to thoſe who were in one of the canoes; and they in return, faſtened ſome mackarel to the rope, by way of equivalent. This was repeated; and ſome ſmall nails, or pieces of iron, were given them; for which they gave in exchange ſome more fiſh, and a ſweet potatoe; a ſure indication of their having ſome notion of bartering, or, at leaſt, of returning one preſent for another.

As we perceived no ſigns of an anchoring place at this eaſtern extremity of the iſland, we bore away to leeward, and ranged along the ſouth-eaſt ſide, at the diſtance of about a mile and a half from the ſhore. The canoes left us when we made ſail; but others came off, as we proceeded along the coaſt, and brought with them pigs and ſome excellent potatoes, which they exchanged for whatever we offered to them; and ſeveral ſmall pigs were purchaſed by us for a ſixpenny nail.

We ſpent the night in ſtanding off and on, and the next morning ſtood in for the land. We were met by ſeveral canoes filled with natives, ſome of whom ventured to come on board.

None of the inhabitants we ever met with before in any other iſland or country were ſo aſtoniſhed as theſe people were upon entering the ſhip. Their eyes were inceſſantly roving from one object to another; and the wildeſs of their looks and geſtures fully indicated their perfect ignorance with reſpect to every thing they ſaw, and ſtrongly marked to us, that they had never till the preſent time been viſited by Europeans, nor been acquainted with any of our commodities, except iron. This metal, however, they had in all probability only heard of, or had perhaps known it in ſome inconſiderable quantity, brought to them at a remote period.

The natives were, in many reſpects, naturally polite; or, at leaſt, cautious of giving offence. On their firſt entering the ſhip, they attempted to ſteal every thing

thing that they could lay their hands on, or rather to take it openly, as if they ſuppoſed that we either ſhould not reſent ſuch behaviour, or not hinder it: but we ſoon convinced them of their error; and when they obſerved that we kept a watchful eye over them, they became leſs active in appropriating to themſelves what did not belong to them.

About nine o'clock Captain Cook diſpatched Lieutenant Williamſon, with three armed boats, to look out for a proper landing place, and for freſh water; with orders, that if he ſhould find it neceſſary to land in ſearch of the latter, he ſhould not allow more than one man to accompany him out of the boats.

Waiting for the return of our boats, which had been ſent out to reconnoitre the coaſt, we ſtood off and on with the ſhips. Towards mid-day, Mr. Williamſon came back, and reported, that he had obſerved behind a beach, near one of the villages, a large pond, which was ſaid by the natives to contain freſh water; and that there was tolerable anchoring ground before it.

Captain Cook then bore down with the ſhips, and caſt anchor in twenty-five fathoms water, over a ſandy bottom. The ſhips being thus ſtationed, between three and four in the afternoon, the Captain went aſhore with three armed boats and twelve of the marines, with a view of examining the water, and trying the diſpoſition of the inhabitants, who had aſſembled in conſiderable numbers on a ſandy beach before the village; behind it was a valley, in which was the piece of water. The moment he leaped on ſhore all the iſlanders fell proſtrate upon their faces, and continued in that poſture of humiliation till by ſigns he prevailed on them to riſe. They then preſented to him many ſmall pigs, with plantain trees, making uſe of nearly the ſame ceremonies which we had ſeen practiſed on ſimilar occaſions at the Society and other iſles; and a long oration or prayer being pronounced by an individual, in which others of the aſſembly occaſionally joined. Captain Cook ſignified his acceptance of their proffered friendſhip, by beſtowing on them, in return, ſuch

ſuch preſents as he had brought aſhore. This introductory buſineſs being ended, he ſtationed a guard upon the beach, and was then conducted by ſome of the natives to the water, which he found extremely good, and ſo conſiderable, that it might be denominated a lake. After this, he returned on board, and iſſued orders, that preparations ſhould be made for filling our water caſks in the morning; at which time he went aſhore with ſome of his people, having a party of marines for a guard.

They had no ſooner landed, than a trade was entered into for potatoes and hogs, which the iſlanders gave in exchange for nails and pieces of iron. Far from giving any obſtruction to our men who were occupied in watering, they even aſſiſted them in rolling the caſks to and from the pool, and performed with alacrity whatever was required of them.

Among the various articles which they brought to barter, we were particularly ſtruck with a ſort of cloak and cap, which, even in more poliſhed countries, might be eſteemed elegant. Theſe cloaks are nearly of the ſhape and ſize of the ſhort ones worn by the men in Spain, and by the women in England, tied looſely before, and reaching to the middle of the back. The ground of them is a net work, with the moſt beautiful read and yellow feathers ſo cloſely fixed upon it, that the ſurface, both in point of ſmoothneſs and gloſſineſs, reſembles the richeſt velvet. The method of varying the mixture is very different; ſome of them having triangular ſpaces of yellow and red alternately; others, a ſort of creſcent; while ſome are entirely red, except that they had a broad yellow border. The brilliant colours of the feathers, in thoſe cloaks that were new, had a very fine effect. The natives, at firſt, refuſed to part with one of theſe cloaks for any thing that we offered in exchange, demanding no leſs a price than one of our muſquets: they afterwards, however, ſuffered us to purchaſe ſome of them for very large nails. Thoſe of the beſt ſort were ſcarce, and, it is

is probable, that they are uſed only on particular occaſions.

The caps are made in the form of a helmet, with the middle part, or creſt, frequently of a hand's breadth. They fit very cloſe upon the head, and have notches to admit the ears. They conſiſt of twigs and oſiers, covered with a net work, into which feathers are wrought, as upon the cloaks, but ſomewhat cloſer, and leſs diverſified; the major part being red, with ſome yellow, green, or black ſtripes on the ſides. Theſe caps, in all probability, complete the dreſs with the cloaks; for the iſlanders appeared ſometimes in both together.

On Thurſday the 22d, we had almoſt continual rain for the whole morning; and the ſurf broke ſo high upon the ſhore, that our boats were prevented from landing. The Reſolution was not in a very ſecure ſituation, there being breakers within the length of little more than two cables from her ſtern. The natives, notwithſtanding the ſurf, ventured out in their canoes, bringing off to our ſhips hogs and vegetables, which they exchanged, as before, for our commodities. One of their number, who offered ſome fiſh hooks for ſale, was obſerved to have a very ſmall parcel faſtened to the ſtring of one of them, which he carefully ſeparated, and reſerved for himſelf, when he diſpoſed of the hook. When aſked what it was, he pointed to his belly, and intimated ſomething of its being dead; ſaying, at the ſame time, that it was bad. He was requeſted to open the parcel, which he did with great reluctance; and we found, that it contained a ſmall thin piece of fleſh, which had to all appearance been dried, but was at preſent wet with ſalt water. Imagining that it might be human fleſh, we put the queſtion to the producer of it, who anſwered, that the fleſh was part of a man. Another of the iſlanders, who ſtood near him, was then aſked, whether it was a cuſtom among them to eat their enemies who had been ſlain in battle, and he immediately replied in the affirmative.

In

In the afternoon we had ſome intervals of fair weather. The wind then changed to the eaſt and north-eſt; but, towards the evening, it veered back again to ſouth-ſouth-eaſt. The rain alſo returning, continued the whole night, but was not accompanied with much wind. At ſeven the next morning, a north-eaſterly breeze ſpringing up, Captain Cook ordered the anchors of his ſhip to be taken up, with a view of removing her farther out. As ſoon as the laſt anchor was up, the wind veering to the eaſt, rendered it neceſſary to make all the ſail he could, for the purpoſe of clearing the ſhore; ſo that, before he had good ſea room, he was driven conſiderably to leeward. He endeavoured to regain the road; but having a ſtrong current againſt him, and very little wind, he could not accompliſh that deſign. He therefore diſpatched Meſſrs. King and Williamſon aſhore, with three boats, to procure water and refreſhments, ſending, at the ſame time, an order to Captain Clerke, to put to ſea after him, if he ſhould find that the Reſolution was unable to recover the road.

The Commodore having hopes of finding a road, perhaps a harbour, at the weſt end of the iſland, was the leſs anxious about regaining his former ſtation: but as he had ſent the boats thither, he kept as much as poſſible to the windward; notwithſtanding which, at noon our ſhip was three leagues to leeward. As we approached the weſt end, we found that the coaſt rounded gradually to the north-eaſt, without forming a cove, or creek, wherein a veſſel might be ſheltered from the violence of the ſwell, which, rolling in from the northward, broke againſt the ſhore in an amazing ſurf: all hopes, therefore, of meeting with a harbour here ſoon vaniſhed. Many of the natives in their canoes followed us as we ſtood out to ſea, bartering various articles.

On Saturday the 24th, at day break, we found that our ſhip had been carried by the currents to the north-weſt and north; ſo that the weſtern extremity of Atooi bore eaſt, at the diſtance of one league. A northerly

therly breeze ſprung up ſoon after, and Captain Cook expecting that this would bring the Diſcovery to ſea, ſteered for Oneeheow, a neighbouring iſland, which then bore ſouth-weſt, with a view of anchoring there. He continued to ſteer for it till paſt eleven, at which time he was at the diſtance of about ſix miles from it: but not ſeeing the Diſcovery, he was apprehenſive leſt ſome ill conſequence might ariſe from our ſeparating ſo far; he therefore relinquiſhed the deſign of viſiting Oneeheow for the preſent, and ſtood back to Atooi, intending to caſt anchor again in the road, in order to complete our ſupply of water. We ſtretched to the ſouth-eaſt till early in the morning of the 25th, when we tacked and ſtood in for Atooi road, and not long after, we were joined by the Diſcovery.

Captain Cook being informed by ſome of the natives, who had come off to the ſhips, that freſh water might be obtained at a village which we ſaw at a little diſtance, ran down, and caſt anchor before it, about ſix furlongs from the ſhore; the depth of water being twenty-ſix fathoms. The Diſcovery anchored at a greater diſtance from the ſhore in twenty-three fathoms.

The curious inquiry, whether theſe iſlanders were cannibals, was this day renewed; and the ſubject did not ariſe from any queſtions put by us, but from a circumſtance that ſeemed to remove all doubt. One of the natives, who wiſhed to get in at the gun-room port, was refuſed; and he then aſked, whether we ſhould kill and eat him if he ſhould come in? accompanying this queſtion with ſigns ſo expreſſive, that we did not entertain a doubt with reſpect to his meaning. We had now an opportunity of retorting the queſtion as to this practice; and a man behind the other in the canoe, inſtantly replied, that if we were killed on ſhore they would not ſcruple to eat us: not that he meant that he would deſtroy us for that purpoſe, but that their devouring us would be the conſequence of our being at enmity with them.

Mr. Gore was ſent in the afternoon, with three armed

armed boats, in ſearch of the moſt commodious landing place, being alſo directed to look for freſh water when he ſhould get on ſhore. He returned in the evening, and reported to Captain Cook, that he had landed at the village above mentioned, and had been conducted to a well about half a mile up the country; but that the water which it contained was in too ſmall a quantity for our purpoſe, and the road that led to it was extremely bad.

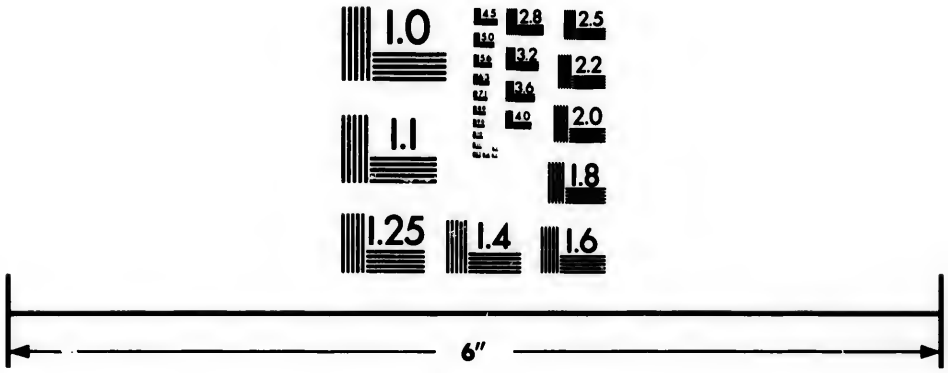
Towards the evening of the next day, the Commodore ſent the Maſter in a boat to the ſouth-eaſt point of the iſland, to try whether he could land in that quarter. He returned with a favourable report; but it was now too late to ſend for our party till the following morning, ſo that they were obliged to ſtay on ſhore.

Our party on ſhore found, in thoſe parts of the iſland which they had traverſed, ſeveral ſalt ponds, ſome of which had a ſmall quantity of water remaining, but others had none. They ſaw no appearance of a running ſtream; and though in ſome ſmall wells which they met with, the freſh water was pretty good, it ſeemed to be ſcarce. The houſes of the natives were thinly ſcattered about; and it was ſuppoſed, that there were not more than five hundred perſons in the whole iſland. The method of living among theſe people was decent and cleanly. No inſtance was obſerved of the men and women eating together; and the latter ſeemed, in general, to be aſſociated in companies by themſelves. The oily nuts of the *dooe dooe* are burned by theſe iſlanders for lights during the night; and they dreſs their hogs by baking them in ovens, ſplittling the carcaſes through the whole length.

About ſeven in the evening, the anchor of the Reſolution ſtarted, ſo that ſhe drove off the bank. By this accident we found ourſelves at day break the next morning, which was the 2d of February, nine miles to the leeward of our laſt ſtation; and the Captain foreſeeing that it would require more time to regain it than he choſe to employ, made the ſignal for the Diſcovery

to

IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503


2.8
3.2
3.6
4.0
2.5
2.2
2.0
1.8
1.0

to weigh anchor and join us. This junction was effected about noon, and both ſhips immediately directed their courſe to the northward, in proſecution of their voyage. Thus, after we had ſpent more time in the neighbourhood of theſe iſlands than was neceſſary to have anſwered all our purpoſes, we were obliged to quit them before we had completed our ſtock of water, or procured from them ſuch a plentiful ſupply of refreſhments as the natives were both able and willing to have furniſhed us with. Our ſhip, however, obtained from them proviſions that laſted at leaſt three weeks; and Captain Clerke, more fortunate than we were, acquired ſuch a quantity of vegetables, as ſufficed the Diſcovery's people upwards of two months.

The iſlands in the Pacific Ocean, which have been diſcovered in the courſe of our late voyages, have been generally found ſituate in groups; the ſingle intermediate iſles hitherto met with being few in proportion to the reſt; though, in all probability, there are many more of them yet unknown, which ſerve as gradations or ſteps between the ſeveral cluſters. Of what number this new-diſcovered Archipelago is compoſed muſt be left to the deciſion of future navigators. We obſerved five of them, whoſe names are Woahoo, Atooi, Oneeheow, Oreehoua, and Tahoora. The laſt of theſe is a ſmall elevated iſland, at the diſtance of four or five leagues from the ſouth-eaſt point of Oneeheow. We were informed that it abounds with birds, which are its ſole inhabitants. We alſo gained ſome intelligence with regard to the exiſtence of a low uninhabited iſland in the neighbourhood, named Tammata-pappa. Beſides theſe ſix, we were told that there were ſome other iſlands both to the eaſtward and weſtward. Captain Cook diſtiguiſhed the whole group by the name of the Sandwich Iſlands, in honour of the Earl of Sandwich. Thoſe which he ſaw are ſituated between the latitude of 21° 30′, and 22° 15′ north, and between the longitude of 199° 20′, and 201° 30′, eaſt.

With reſpect to Woahoo, the moſt eaſterly of theſe iſlands

iſlands ſeen by us, we could get no other information, but that it is high land, and is inhabited.

Oneeheow lies ſeven leagues to the weſtward of our anchoring place at Atooi, and does not exceed fifteen leagues in circumference. Yams are its principal vegetable production.

Of Oreehoua we know no other particulars than that it is an elevated iſland, of ſmall extent, lying cloſe to the north ſide of Oneeheow.

Atooi is the largeſt of thoſe we ſaw. From what we obſerved of it, it is, at leaſt, ten leagues in length from eaſt to weſt; for whence its circumference may nearly be gueſſed, though it appears to be much broader at the eaſt than at the weſt point.

The land does not in the leaſt reſemble, in its general appearance, any of the iſlands we have viſited within the tropic of Capricorn; if we except its hills near the center, which are high, but ſlope gradually towards the ſea, or lower lands. Though it preſents not to the view the delightful borders of Otaheite, or the luxuriant plains of Tongataboo, covered with trees, which at once afford a ſhelter from the ſcorching rays of the ſun, a beautiful proſpect to the eye, and food for the natives; yet its poſſeſſing a greater portion of gently-riſing land, renders it, in ſome degree, ſuperior to the above-mentioned favourite iſlands, as being more capable of improvement.

Were we to judge of the climate from our experience, it might be ſaid to be very variable; for, according to the general opinion, it was, at this time, the ſeaſon of the year when the weather is ſuppoſed to be moſt ſettled, the ſun being at his greateſt annual diſtance. The heat was now very moderate; and few of thoſe inconveniencies to which many countries lying within the tropics are ſubject, either from heat or moiſture, ſeem to be experienced here.

Beſides the vegetables purchaſed by us as refreſhments, among which were, at leaſt, five or ſix varieties of plantains, the iſland produces bread fruit; this, however, ſeems to be ſcarce, as we only ſaw one tree

of

of that ſpecies. There are alſo a few cocoa palms; ſome yams; the *kappe* of the Friendly Iſlands, or Virginian *arum*; the *etooa* tree, and odoriferous *gardenia*, or *cape jaſmine*.

The ſcarlet birds, which were brought for ſale, were never met with alive; but we ſaw one ſmall one, about the ſize of a canary bird, of a deep crimſon colour. We alſo ſaw a large owl, two brown hawks, or kites, and a wild duck. It is probable that the ſpecies of birds are numerous, if we may judge by the quantity of fine yellow, green, and ſmall, velvet-like, blackiſh feathers uſed upon the cloaks, and other ornaments, worn by theſe people.

Fiſh, and other productions of the ſea, were, to appearance, not various; as, beſides the ſmall mackerel, we only ſaw common mullets; a ſpecies of a chalky colour; a ſmall browniſh rock fiſh, adorned with blue ſpots; a turtle, which was penned up in a pond; and three or four ſorts of fiſh ſalted. The few ſhell fiſh ſeen by us were chiefly converted into ornaments, though they were deſtitute of the recommendation either of beauty or novelty.

The only tame or domeſtic animals that we found here were hogs, dogs, and fowls, which were all of the ſame kind that we met with at the iſlands of the South Pacific. There were alſo ſmall lizards; and ſome rats, reſembling thoſe of every iſland which we had hitherto viſited.

The inhabitants of Atooi are of the middle ſize, and, in general, ſtoutly made. They are neither remarkable for a beautiful ſhape, nor for ſtriking features. Their viſage, particularly that of the women, is ſometimes round, but others have it long; nor can it juſtly be ſaid, that they are diſtinguiſhed as a nation by any general caſt of countenance.

They appear to be of a frank, chearful diſpoſition; and are equally free from the fickle levity which characterizes the inhabitants of Otaheite, and the ſedate caſt which is obſervable among many of thoſe of Tongataboo. They ſeem to cultivate a ſociable intercourſe with

with each other; and, except the propenſity to thieving, which is, as it were, innate in moſt of the people we have viſited in theſe ſeas, they were extremely friendly to us.

From the numbers that we ſaw aſſembled at every village, as we coaſted along, it may be conjectured, that the inhabitants of this iſland are pretty numerous. Including the ſtraggling houſes, there might, perhaps, be in the whole iſland, ſixty ſuch villages as that near which our ſhips anchored; and if we allow five perſons to each houſe, there would be in every village five hundred, or thirty thouſand upon the iſland. This number is by no means exaggerated, for there were ſometimes three thouſand people, at leaſt, collected upon the beach; when it could not be ſuppoſed, that above a tenth part of the natives were preſent.

There is no appearance of defence or fortification near any of the villages, and the houſes are ſcattered about, without the leaſt order. Some of theſe habitations are large and commodious, from forty to fifty feet in length, and twenty or thirty in breadth, while others of them are contemptible hovels. Their figure reſembles that of hayſtacks; or, perhaps, a better idea may be conceived of them, by ſuppoſing the roof of a barn placed on the ground, in ſuch a manner as to form a high, acute ridge, with two low ſides. The gable at each end, correſponding to the ſides, makes theſe dwelling places cloſe all round; and they are well thatched with long graſs, which is laid on ſlender poles.

From what we ſaw growing, and from what was brought to market, we have no doubt that ſweet potatoes, *taro*, and plantains, conſtitute the principal part of their vegetable diet; and that yams and bread fruit are rather to be conſidered as rarities. Of animal food they appear to be in no want, as they have great numbers of hogs, which run, without reſtraint, about the houſes; and if they eat dogs, which is not altogether improbable, their ſtock of theſe ſeemed very conſiderable. The quantities of fiſhing hooks found among

them, indicated that they procure a tolerable ſupply of animal food from the ſea.

They bake their vegetable articles of food with heated ſtones; and, from the great quantity which we ſaw dreſſed at one time, we imagined that all the inhabitants of a village, or, at leaſt, a conſiderable number of people, joined in the uſe of a common oven.

The amuſements of theſe people are various. We did not ſee the dances at which they uſe the feathered cloaks and caps; but, from the motions which they made with their hands, on other occaſions, when they ſung, we judged that they were ſomewhat ſimilar to thoſe we had met with at the ſouthern iſlands, though not ſo ſkilfully performed.

In the different manufactures of theſe people, there appears to be an extraordinary degree of ingenuity and neatneſs. Their cloth is made from the *morus papyrifera*, and, doubtleſs, in the ſame manner as at Tongataboo and Otaheite; for we bought ſome of the grooved ſticks with which they beat it. Its texture, however, though thicker, is inferior to that of the cloth of either of the places juſt mentioned: but in colouring or ſtaining it, the inhabitants of Atooi diſplay a ſuperiority of taſte, by the infinite variety of figures which they execute.

The only iron tools ſeen among them, and which they poſſeſſed before our arrival, were a piece of iron hoop, about the length of two inches, fitted into a wooden handle; and another edged tool, which we ſuppoſed to have been made of the point of a broad ſword. Their having the actual poſſeſſion of theſe, and their being well acquainted with the uſe of this metal, inclined ſome of our people to imagine that we were not the firſt European viſitors of theſe iſlands. But the very great ſurprize which they teſtified on ſeeing our ſhips, and their perfect ignorance of the uſe of firearms, cannot be reconciled to ſuch an opinion.

The canoes of theſe people are commonly about four and twenty feet in length, and have the bottom, in general, formed of a ſingle piece of wood, hollowed out

to

to the thickneſs of an inch, or more, and brought to a point at each end. The ſides are compoſed of three boards, each about an inch thick, neatly fitted and laſhed to the bottom. The extremities, both at head and ſtern, are a little elevated, and both are made ſharp, ſomewhat reſembling a wedge, but they flatten more abruptly, ſo that the two ſide boards join each other, ſide by ſide, for upwards of a foot. As they ſeldom exceed a foot and a half in breadth, thoſe that go ſingle (for they ſometimes join them) have outriggers, which are ſhaped and fitted with more judgement than any we had before ſeen. They are rowed by paddles, ſuch as we had generally obſerved at other iſlands; and ſome of them have a light triangular ſail, extended to a maſt and boom. The ropes which they uſe for their boats, and the ſmaller cords for their fiſhing tackle, are ſtrong and neatly made.

They are by no means novices in the art of agriculture. The vale ground is one continued plantation of *taro*, and ſome other articles, which have all the appearance of being carefully attended to. The potatoe fields, and ſpots of ſugar cane, or plantains, on the higher grounds, are planted with great regularity: but neither theſe, nor the others, are encloſed with any fence, unleſs we conſider the ditches in the low grounds as ſuch; which, it is more probable, are deſigned to convey water to the *taro*.

The ſhort and imperfect intercourſe we had with the natives did not enable us to form any accurate judgement of the form of government eſtabliſhed amongſt them; but, from the general ſimilarity of cuſtoms, and particularly from what we obſerved of the honours paid to their chiefs, it ſeems reaſonable to imagine, that it is of the ſame nature with that which prevails in all the iſlands we had hitherto viſited; and, in all probability, their wars among themſelves are equally frequent. This, indeed, might be inferred, from the number of weapons we found in their poſſeſſion, and from the excellent order in which they kept them. But we had proofs of the fact from their own con-

ſeſſion; and as we were informed, theſe wars are carried on between the different diſtricts of their own iſland, as well as between it and the neighbouring inhabitants of the iſles of Oneeheow and Oreehoua. We ſcarcely need aſſign any other cauſe beſides this, to account for the appearance before mentioned, of their population not being proportioned to the extent of their ground that is capable of cultivation.

Beſides their ſpears, formed of a fine browniſh wood, beautifully poliſhed, ſome of which are barbed at one end, and flattened to a point at the other, they have a kind of weapon which we had never met with before: it ſomewhat reſembles a dagger, and is in general about eighteen inches in length; ſharpened at one or both ends, and ſecured to the hand by a ſtring. Its uſe is to ſtab in cloſe combat, and it ſeems well adapted to that purpoſe. Some of theſe may be denominated double daggers, having a handle in the middle, with which they are the better enabled to ſtrike different ways. They have likewiſe bows and arrows; but both from their ſlender conſtruction, and their apparent ſcarcity, it is probable that they never uſe them in battle. The knife or ſaw already mentioned, with which they diſſect the dead bodies of their enemies, may alſo be ranked among their weapons, as they both ſtrike and cut with it when engaged in cloſe fight.

The inhabitants of Tongataboo bury their dead with great decency, and they alſo inter their human ſacrifices; but they do not, to our knowledge, offer any other animal, or even vegetable, to their deities.

If the Sandwich Iſlands had been diſcovered at an early period, by the Spaniards, they would doubtleſs have availed themſelves of ſo excellent a ſituation, and have made uſe of Atooi, or ſome other of the iſlands, as a place of refreſhment for the ſhips that ſail annually between Manilla and Acapulco. They lie almoſt midway between the laſt-mentioned place and Guam, one of the Ladrones, which is at preſent their only port in traverſing this vaſt ocean; and it would not

have

have been a week's ſail out of their route to have touched at them. An acquaintance with the Sandwich Iſles would alſo have been equally favourable to our Buccaneers; who have ſometimes paſſed from the coaſt of America to the Ladrones, with a ſtock of proviſions and water ſcarcely adequate to the ſupport of life. Here they might always have met with a plentiful ſupply, and have been within a month's ſail of the very part of California, which the Manilla ſhip is obliged to make.

The Diſcovery having joined us, we ſtood away to the northward, with a gentle gale from the eaſt.

On Saturday the 7th of February, we were in the latitude of 29° north, and in the longitude of 200° eaſt, the wind veering to ſouth-eaſt. We ſteered north-eaſt and eaſt till the 12th; we then tacked and ſtood to the northward, being in the latitude of 30° north, and in the longitude of 206° 15′ eaſt. In this advanced latitude, and even in the winter ſeaſon, we had only begun to feel a ſenſation of cold in the mornings and evenings; a proof of the equal anddurable influence of the heat of the ſun at all times to 30° on each ſide the line. After that, the diſproportion is known to become very great. On the 25th, we reached the latitude of 42° 30′, and the longitude of 219°; when we began to meet with the rock weed mentioned in Lord Anſon's voyage, by the name of ſea leek, which is generally ſeen by the Manilla ſhips.

On the firſt of March we had a calm day, which was ſucceeded by a wind from the north, with which we ſtood to the eaſt, intending to make land.

On the morning of the 2d, during a calm, part of the ſea appeared to be covered with a kind of ſlime, and ſome ſmall ſea animals were ſeen ſwimming about. Thoſe which were moſt conſpicuous, were of the gelatinous kind, almoſt globular; a ſmaller ſort had a white or ſhining appearance, and were in great abundance. Some of the latter were put into a glaſs cup, with ſome ſalt water: and, when in a prone ſituation, they appeared like ſmall ſcales or pieces of ſilver.

When they ſwam about, which they did with equal eaſe in various directions, they emitted the brighteſt colours of the moſt valuable gems, according to their poſition reſpecting the light. At one time they appeared pellucid, at another diſplaying the various tints of blue, from a ſapphirine to a violet, mixed with a kind of ruby, and glowing with ſufficient ſtrength to illuminate the glaſs and water. When the veſſel was held to the ſtrongeſt light, the tints appeared moſt vivid; but almoſt vaniſhed when the animals ſubſided to the bottom, they had then a brownish appearance. By candle light, the colour was principally a beautiful pale green, with a kind of burniſhed gloſs; and in the dark, it faintly exhibited a glowing fire.

About noon, on the 6th, we beheld two ſeals, and ſeveral whales; and early the next morning, the long-expected coaſt of New Albion was ſeen, at the diſtance of ten or twelve leagues, extending from north-eaſt to ſouth-eaſt. At noon we were in the latitude of 44° north, and in the longitude of 235° 20′ eaſt, and the land about eight leagues diſtant.

We had now ſeventy-three fathoms water, over a muddy bottom, and found ninety fathoms about a league farther off. The land, which was of a moderate height, appeared to be diverſified with hills and vallies, and principally covered with wood. No very ſtriking object, however, preſented itſelf, except an high hill with a flat ſummit. The land formed a point at the northern extreme, which Captain Cook named Cape Foulweather, from the exceeding bad weather we afterwards met with.

In the evening of the 8th, the wind veered to the north-weſt, with ſqualls, hail, and ſleet; and the weather being hazy and thick, we ſtood out to ſea till about noon the next day, when we ſtood in again for the land, which we ſaw at two in the afternoon, bearing eaſt-north-eaſt. From this time to the 29th, we were continually encountering various winds; but now got to an anchor in eighty fathoms water, and ſo near the land as to be able to reach it with a hawſer.

The

The Discovery was becalmed before she got within the arm, where she anchored in seventy fathoms water.

As soon as we had anchored, three canoes came off to the ship, in one of which were two men, in another six, and in the other ten. Advancing pretty near us, a person stood up in one of the two last, and spoke for a considerable time, inviting us, as we supposed by his gestures, to go ashore; and at the same time, continued strewing handfuls of feathers towards us. Some of his companions also threw a red powder in the same manner.

A breeze springing up soon after, brought us close to the shore, when the canoes began to visit us in great numbers; having had at one time no less than thirty-two of them about the ship, containing from three to seven or eight persons each, and of both sexes. One canoe particularly attracted our observation, by a peculiar head, which had a bird's eye, and an enormous large beak painted on it. The person who was in it, and who appeared to be a chief, was equally remarkable for his singular appearance; having a large quantity of feathers hanging from his head, and being painted or smeared in a very extraordinary manner. In his hand he had a carved bird of wood, of the size of a pigeon, with which he often rattled, and was equally vociferous in his harrangue, which was accompanied with many expressive gestures. Though our visitors were so peaceable, that they could not be suspected of any hostile intention, not any of them could be prevailed on to come on board. They were very ready, however to part with any thing they had, and received whatever we offered them in exchange; but were more solicitous after iron, than any of our other articles of commerce, appearing to be no strangers to the use of that valuable metal.

We were followed, by many of the canoes to our anchoring place; and a group, consisting of about ten or a dozen of them, continued along-side the Resolution the greatest part of the night. Hence, we flat-

tered ourſelves, that we were ſo comfortably ſituated, as to be able to get all our wants ſupplied, and forget the delays and hardſhips we had experienced, in almoſt a conſtant ſucceſſion of adverſe winds and tempeſtuous weather, ever ſince our arrival upon this coaſt.

BOOK IV.

TRANSACTIONS WITH THE NATIVES OF NORTH AMERICA; DISCOVERIES ON THAT COAST AND THE EASTERN EXTREMITY OF ASIA, AND RETURN SOUTHWARD TO THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

HAVING happily found ſuch excellent ſhelter for our ſhips, in an inlet whoſe coaſts appeared to be inhabited by an inoffenſive race of people, we loſt no time after coming to an anchor, in ſearching for a commodious harbour, where we might be ſtationed during our continuance in the Sound. Upon this ſervice Captain Cook ſent three armed boats, under the command of Mr. King, and went himſelf in a ſmall boat on the ſame buſineſs. He had no difficulty in finding what he wanted; for, on the north-weſt of the arm, and at a ſmall diſtance from the ſhips, he found a convenient ſnug cove, perfectly adapted to our purpoſe.

Plenty of canoes, filled with the inhabitants, were about the ſhips the whole day; and a reciprocal trade was commenced between us, which was conducted with the ſtricteſt harmony and integrity on both ſides. Their articles of commerce were the ſkins of various animals; ſuch as bears, ſea otters, wolves, foxes, deer, racoons, martins, and pole cats.

Among all the articles, however, which they expoſed to ſale, the moſt extraordinary were human ſkulls, and hands, with ſome of the fleſh remaining on them, which

which they acknowledged they had been feeding on; and ſome of them, indeed, bore evident marks of their having been upon the fire. From this circumſtance, it was but too apparent, that the horrid practice of devouring their enemies is practiſed here, as much as at New Zealand, and other South-Sea iſlands.

The next day was employed in hauling our ſhips into the cove, where they were moored. We found, on heaving up the anchor, notwithſtanding the great depth of water, that rocks were at the bottom. Theſe had greatly injured the cable, as well as the hauſers that were carried out to warp the ſhip into the cove; conſequently the whole bottom was ſtrewed with rocks. The ſhip was now become very leaky in her upper works; the carpenters were therefore ordered to caulk her, and to repair any other defects they might diſcover.

In the courſe of this day (the 31ſt of March) the news of our arrival brought vaſt numbers of the natives about our ſhips. At one time we counted above a hundred canoes, each of which, on an average, had five people on board; few containing leſs than three; many having ſeven, eight, or nine; and one was manned with ſeventeen.

We found, however, that they were as fond of pilfering as any we had met with during our voyage; and they were much more miſchievous than any of the other thieves we had found; for, having ſharp inſtruments in their poſſeſſion, they could, the inſtant that our backs were turned, cut a hook from a tackle, or a piece of iron from a rope.

Beſides other articles, we loſt ſeveral hooks in this manner, one of which weighed between twenty and thirty pounds. They ſtripped our boats of every morſel of iron that was worth taking away, though ſome of our men were always left in them as a guard. They were indeed ſo dexterous in effecting their purpoſes, that one fellow would contrive to amuſe our people at one end of the boat, while another was forcing off the iron work at the other end. If an article that

had been ſtolen, was immediately miſſed, the thief was eaſily detected, as they were fond of impeaching each other. But the prize was always reluctantly given up by the guilty perſon, and ſometimes compulſive means were obliged to be exerciſed for that purpoſe.

Our ſhips being ſafely moored, we proceeded the next day to other neceſſary buſineſs. The obſervatories were taken aſhore, and placed upon a rock, on one ſide of the cove, not far from the Reſolution. A party of men was ordered to cut wood, and clear a place for watering. Having plenty of pine trees here, others were employed in brewing ſpruce beer. The forge was alſo erected, to make the neceſſary iron work for repairing the foremaſt, which had one of the bibs defective, and was otherwiſe incomplete.

We were daily viſited by a conſiderable number of the natives, and among them we frequently ſaw new faces. They had a ſingular mode of introducing themſelves on their firſt appearance. They paddled with their utmoſt ſtrength and activity round both the ſhips; a chief all this time ſtanding up with a ſpear in his hand, and ſpeaking, or rather bawling, moſt vociferouſly.

In the afternoon we reſumed our work, and, the next day, rigged the foremaſt; the head of which not being large enough for the cap, the carpenter was ordered to fill up the vancant ſpace. In examining the ſtate of the maſt-head for this purpoſe, both cheeks were diſcovered to be rotten, inſomuch that there was not a poſſibility of repairing them. We were therefore obliged to get the maſt out, and to ſupply it with a new one.

In the morning of the 7th of April, having got the foremaſt out, we hauled it aſhore, and the carpenters were ſet to work upon it. Some of our lower ſtanding rigging being much decayed, the Commodore embraced the opportunity, while the foremaſt was repairing, of ordering a new ſet of main-rigging to be fitted, and the fore-rigging to be improved.

From

From our putting into the Sound, till the 7th of April, the weather had been remarkably fine; but, in the morning of the eighth, the wind blew freſh at ſouth-eaſt, accompanied with hazy weather and rain; it increaſed in the afternoon, and in the evening it blew extremely hard. It came in heavy ſqualls, right into the cove from over the high land on the oppoſite ſhore; and though the ſhips were well moored, they were in a dangerous ſituation.

The natives were not diſcouraged, by this bad weather from making us daily viſits; and, in our ſituation, ſuch viſits were very acceptable to us. They frequently brought us a ſupply of fiſh, when we were unable to catch any with a hook and line, and we had not a convenient place to draw a net. The fiſh they brought us were ſmall cod, and a ſmall kind of bream, or ſardine. On the 11th the main rigging was fixed and got over head notwithſtanding the rainy weather; and the next day we took down the mizen-maſt, the head of which was ſo rotten, that it dropped off in the ſlings.

We received a viſit in the evening from a tribe of natives whom we had not ſeen before, and who, in general, made a better appearance than our old friends. The Commodore conducted them into the cabin, but there was not an object that demanded their attention; all our novelties were looked on with indifference, except by a very few, who ſhewed a certain degree of curioſity. The next day a party of our men went into the woods, and cut down a tree, of which a mizen-maſt was to be made. The day after, it was conveyed to the place where the carpenters were at work upon the foremaſt. The wind in the evening veered to the ſouth-eaſt, and blew a very hard gale, attended with rain till eight o'clock the next morning; at which time it abated and veered to the weſt.

The foremaſt being now finiſhed, we hauled it alongſide; but on account of the bad weather, could not get it in till the afternoon. We were expeditious in rig-

ging it, while the carpenters were employed on the mizenmaſt on ſhore. On the 16th, when they had made conſiderable progreſs in it, they diſcovered that the tree on which they were at work was wounded; owing, it was imagined, to ſome accident in cutting it down. It therefore became neceſſary to procure another tree out of the woods, on which occaſion all hands were employed above half a day.

During theſe operations, many of the natives were about the ſhips, gazing with an expreſſive ſurpriſe, which, from their general inattention, we did not expect. A party of ſtrangers, in ſeven or eight canoes, came into the cove on the 18th, and after looking at us for ſome time, retired. We apprehended that our old friends, who, at this time, were more numerous about us than our new viſitors, would not ſuffer them to have any dealings with us. It was evident, indeed, that the neighbouring inhabitants engroſſed us entirely to themſelves; and that they carried on a traffic with more diſtant tribes, in thoſe articles they had received from us; for they frequently diſappeared for four or five days together, and returned with freſh cargoes of curioſities and ſkins.

Such of the natives as viſited us daily, were the moſt beneficial to us; for, after diſpoſing of their trifles, they employed themſelves in fiſhing, and we always partook of what they caught. We alſo procured from them a conſiderable quantity of good animal oil, which they brought to us in bladders. Some, indeed, attempted to cheat us, by mixing water with the oil; and once or twice they ſo far impoſed upon us, as to fill their bladders with water only. But, it was better for us to wink at theſe impoſitions, than ſuffer them to produce a quarrel.

Moſt of our heavy work being now finiſhed, the Commodore ſet out next morning to ſurvey the Sound; and, going firſt to the weſt point, he diſcovered a large village, and before it a very ſnug harbour, with from nine to four fathoms water.

The

d on the
they had
ered that
rounded;
cutting
ure ano-
ll hands

ves were
surprise,
not ex-
canoes,
oking at
hat our
umerous
er them
ent, in-
ossed us
ed on a
es they
ppeared
th fresh

ere the
their
nd we
so pro-
od ani-
Some,
r with
upon
But,
than

d, the
ound;
red a
with

The

F. Cary sculp.

A VIEW of the HABITATIONS in NOOTKA SOUND.

The inhabitants of this village, who were numerous, many of whom the Commodore was no ſtranger to, received him with great courteſy, every one preſſing him to enter his apartment; for ſeveral families have habitations under the ſame roof. He politely accepted the invitations, and the hoſpitable friends whom he viſited, teſtified every mark of civility and reſpect.

On the 21ſt, the mizenmaſt was got in and rigged, and the carpenters ordered to make a new fore-topmaſt, to replace that which had been carried away.

The 23d, 24th, and 25th of April were employed in preparing to put to ſea; the ſails were bent; the obſervatories and other articles removed from the ſhore; and both ſhips put into a proper condition for ſailing.

Thus prepared, we intended to have put to ſea on the morning of the 26th, but having both wind and tide againſt us, we were under a neceſſity of waiting till noon; when a calm ſucceeded the ſouth-weſt wind, and the tide at the ſame time turning in our favour, we towed the ſhips out of the cove. We had variable airs and calms till about four in the afternoon, when a breeze ſprung up, attended with thick hazy weather.

The mercury in the barometer ſunk uncommonly low, and we had every appearance of an approaching ſtorm from the ſouthward. In this ſituation Captain Cook heſitated for a ſhort time (as night was then approaching) whether he ſhould ſail immediately, or ſtay till the next morning. But his anxiety to proceed upon the voyage, and the fear of loſing ſo good an opportunity of getting out of the Sound, operated more ſtrongly upon his mind than the apprehenſion of danger, and he reſolved to put to ſea.

King George's Sound was the appellation given by the Commodore to this inlet, on our firſt arrival; but he was afterwards informed that the natives called it Nootka. Its latitude is 49° 33′ north, its longitude 233° 12′ eaſt.

The trees, of which the woods are principally compoſed

poſed are the Canadian pine, white cypreſs, and two or three other ſorts of pine. The two firſt are in the greateſt abundance, and, at a diſtance, reſemble each other, though they are eaſily diſtinguiſhed on a nearer view, the cypreſs being of a paler green than the other. In general, the trees grow here with great vigour, and are of a large ſize.

About the rocks and borders of the woods, we ſaw ſome ſtrawberry plants, and raſberry, currant, and gooſeberry buſhes, all in a flouriſhing ſtate.

Lying in a cove on an iſland, all the animals that we ſaw alive, were two or three racoons, martins, and ſquirrels: ſome of our people, indeed, who landed on the continent, on the ſouth-eaſt ſide of the Sound, ſaw the prints of a bear's feet not far from the ſhore.

Birds are far from being numerous here, and thoſe that are to be ſeen are remarkably ſhy, owing, perhaps, to their being continually harraſſed by the natives, either to eat them, or to become poſſeſſed of their feathers to be worn as ornaments. There are crows and ravens, not differing in the leaſt from thoſe in England; alſo a jay or magpie; the common wren, which is the only ſinging bird we heard; the Canadian thruſh; the brown eagle, with a white head and tail; a ſmall ſpecies of hawk; a heron, and the large creſted American king fiſher.

The quebrantahueſſos, ſhags, and gulls, were ſeen off the coaſt; and the two laſt were alſo frequent in the Sound. There are two ſorts of wild ducks, one of which was black with a white head, the other was white, and had a red bill. Some ſwans too were once or twice ſeen flying to the northward, but we are unacquainted with their haunts.

Though the variety of fiſh is not very great here, they are more plentiful in quantity than birds. The principal ſorts are the common herring, which are very numerous, though not exceeding ſeven inches in length; a ſmaller ſort, which, though larger than the anchovy, or ſardine, is of the ſame kind; a ſilver-

coloured

coloured bream, and another of a gold brown colour, with narrow blue ſtripes.

The only reptiles obſerved here were brown ſnakes, about two feet in length, having whitiſh ſtripes on the back and ſides; and browniſh water lizards. The former are ſo harmleſs, that we have ſeen the natives carry them alive in their hands. The inſect tribe ſeem to be more numerous: for, though the ſeaſon for their appearance was only beginning, we ſaw ſeveral different ſorts of butterflies, all of which were common: we alſo found ſome humble bees; gooſeberry moths, a few beetles, two or three ſorts of flies, and ſome muſquitoes.

Though we found both iron and copper here, we did not imagine that either of them belonged to this place. We did not even ſee the ores of any metal, except a coarſe red ochry ſubſtance, uſed by the natives in painting or ſtaining themſelves.

The ſtature of the natives is in general below the common ſtandard; but their perſons are not proportionably ſlender, being uſually pretty plump, though not muſcular. Moſt of the natives have round full viſages, which are ſometimes broad, with high prominent cheeks. Above theſe, the face frequently appears fallen in quite acroſs between the temples: the noſe flattens at its baſe, has wide noſtrils, and a rounded point. The forehead is low, the eyes ſmall, black and languiſhing; the mouth round, the lips thick, and the teeth regular and well ſet, but not remarkable for their whiteneſs.

Their beards and eye-brows are ſcanty and narrow; but they have abundance of hair on the head, which is ſtrong, black, ſtraight, and lank. Their necks are ſhort, and their arms are rather clumſy, having nothing of beauty or elegance in their formation. The limbs, in all of them, are ſmall in proportion to the other parts; beſides, they are crooked and ill-formed, having projecting ancles, and large feet, aukwardly ſhaped. The latter defect ſeems to be occaſioned, in a great meaſure, by their ſitting ſo continually on their hams or knees.

The women in general are of the ſame ſize, colour, and

and form, with the men; nor is it easy to distinguish them, as they possess no natural feminine delicacies. Nor was there a single one to be found, even among those who were in their prime, who had the least pretensions to beauty or comelineſs.

Their dreſs, in common, is a flaxen kind of mantle, ornamented with a narrow ſtripe of fur on the upper edge, and fringes at the lower edge. Paſſing under the left arm, it is tied over the right ſhoulder, leaving both arms perfectly free. Sometimes the mantle is faſtened round the waiſt by a girdle of coarſe matting. Over this is worn a ſmall cloak of the ſame ſubſtance, reaching to the waiſt, alſo fringed at the bottom. They wear a cap like a truncated cone, or a flower pot, made of very fine matting, ornamented with a round knob, or a bunch of leathern taſſels, having a ſtring paſſing under the chin, to prevent its blowing off.

Their bodies are always covered with red paint, but their faces are ornamented with variety of colours; a black, a brighter red, or a white colour: the laſt of theſe gives them a ghaſtly horrible appearance. Many of their ears are perforated in the lobe, where they make a large hole, and two ſmaller ones higher up on the outer edge. In theſe holes are hung bits of bone, quills faſtened upon a leathern thong, ſhells, bunches of taſſels, or thin pieces of copper. In ſome, the *ſeptum* of the noſe is alſo perforated, and a piece of cord drawn through it. Others wear, at the ſame place, pieces of copper, braſs, or iron, ſhaped ſomewhat like a horſe-ſhoe, the narrow opening receiving the *ſeptum*, ſo that it may be pinched gently by the two points, and thus the ornament hangs over the upper lip.

Among the people of Nootka, one of the dreſſes ſeems peculiarly adapted to war. It is a thick tanned leathern mantle doubled, and appears to be the ſkin of an elk, or buffalo. This is faſtened on in the ordinary manner, and is ſo contrived as to cover the breaſt quite up to the throat; part of it, at the ſame time, falling down to their heels. This garment is, ſometimes,

times, very curiouſly painted, and is not only ſtrong enough to reſiſt arrows, but, as we underſtood from them, even ſpears cannot pierce it; ſo that it may be conſidered as their completeſt defenſive armour.

From their exhibiting human ſkulls and bones to ſale, there is little reaſon to doubt of their treating their enemies with a degree of brutal cruelty; but, as this circumſtance rather marks a general agreement of character among almoſt every uncivilized tribe, in every age and country, they are not to be reproached with any charge of peculiar inhumanity. Their diſpoſition, in this reſpect, we had not any reaſon to judge unfavourably of. They appear to be docile, courteous, and good natured; but they are quick in reſenting injuries, notwithſtanding the predominancy of their phlegm; and, like all other paſſionate people, as quickly forgetting them.

A rattle, and a ſmall whiſtle, are the only inſtruments of muſic which we have ſeen among them. The rattle is uſed when they ſing; but upon what occaſions the whiſtle is uſed, we never knew.

The only inhabited parts of the Sound ſeem to be the two villages already mentioned. A pretty exact computation of the number of inhabitants in both, might be made from the canoes that viſited our ſhips, the ſecond day after our arrival. They conſiſted of about a hundred, which, upon an average, contained at leaſt five perſons each. But, as there were very few women, old men, children, or youths, then among them, we may reaſonably ſuppoſe, that the number of the inhabitants of the two villages could not be leſs than four times the number of our viſitors; being two thouſand in the whole.

Their houſes conſiſt of very long broad planks, reſting upon the edges of each other, tied, in different parts, with withes of pine-bark. They have only ſlender poſts on the outſide, at conſiderable diſtances from each other, to which they are alſo faſtened; but there are ſome larger poles within, placed aſlant. The ſides and ends of theſe habitations are about ſeven or eight

feet

feet in height, but the back part is ſomewhat higher. The planks, therefore, which compoſe the roof, ſlant forward, and, being looſe, may be moved at pleaſure. They may either be put cloſe to exclude the rain, or ſeparated to admit the light in fine weather.

The furniture of their houſes conſiſts principally of cheſts and boxes of various ſizes, piled upon each other, at the ſides or ends of the houſe; in which are depoſited their garments, ſkins, maſks, and other articles that are deemed valuable. Many of them are double, or the upper one ſerves as a lid to the other: ſome have a lid faſtened with thongs; others, that are very large, have a ſquare hole cut in the upper part, for the convenience of putting things in, or taking them out. They are frequently painted black, ſtudded with the teeth of animals, or rudely carved with figures of birds, &c. as decorations. They have alſo ſquare and oblong pails; round wooden cups and bowls; wooden troughs, of about two feet in length, out of which they eat their food; bags of matting, baſkets of twigs, &c.

The irregularity and confuſion of their houſes is, however, far exceeded by their naſtineſs and ſtench. They not only dry their fiſh within doors, but they alſo gut them there; which, together with their bones and fragments thrown upon the ground at meals, occaſions ſeveral heaps of filth, which are never removed, till it becomes troubleſome, from their bulk, to paſs over them. Every thing about the houſe ſtinks of train-oil, fiſh, and ſmoke; and every part of it is as filthy as can be imagined.

The men ſeem to be chiefly employed in fiſhing, and killing animals for the ſuſtenance of their families, few of them being ſeen engaged in any buſineſs in the houſes; but the women were occupied in manufacturing their garments, and in curing their ſardines, which they alſo carry from the canoes to their houſes. The women alſo go in the ſmall canoes, to gather muſcles and other ſhell-fiſh. They are as dexterous as the men in the management of theſe canoes; and when

there

there are men in the canoes with them, they are paid very little attention to on account of their sex, none of the men offering to relieve them from the labour of the paddle. Nor do they shew them any particular respect or tenderness on other occasions.

The young men are remarkably indolent; being generally sitting about, in scattered companies, basking themselves in the sun, or wallowing in the sand upon the beach, like so many hogs, without any kind of covering. This disregard of decency was, however, confined solely to the men. The women were always decently cloathed, and behaved with great propriety; justly meriting all commendation for a modest bashfulness, so becoming in their sex. In them it is the more meritorious, as the men have not even a sense of shame.

Their greatest reliance for food seems to be upon the sea, as affording fish and sea-animals. The principal of the first are herrings and sardines, two species of bream, and some small cod. The large muscle is an essential article of their food, which is found in great abundance in the Sound. The land animals, at this time, appeared also to be scarce, as we saw no flesh belonging to any of them; and, though their skins were to be had in plenty, they might, perhaps, have been procured by traffic from other tribes. It plainly appears, therefore, from a variety of circumstances, that these people are furnished with the principal part of their animal food by the sea; if we except a few gulls, and some other birds, which they shoot with their arrows.

Their only winter vegetables seem to be the Canadian pine-branches, and sea-grass; but, as the spring advances, they use others as they come in season.

Small marine animals, in their fresh state, are sometimes eaten raw; though it is their ordinary practice to roast or broil their food; for they are absolute strangers to our method of boiling, as appears from their manner of preparing porpoise broth; besides, as they have only wooden vessels, it is impossible for them to perform such an operation. Their manner of eating corresponds with

with the naſtineſs of their houſes and perſons; for the platters and troughs, out of which they eat their food, ſeem never to have been waſhed ſince their original formation; the dirty remains of a former meal, being only ſwept away by a ſucceeding one. Every thing ſolid and tough they tear to pieces with their hands and teeth; for, though their knives are employed in cutting off the large portions, they have not yet endeavoured to reduce theſe to mouthfuls by the ſame means, though ſo much more cleanly and convenient. But they do not poſſeſs even an idea of cleanlineſs, and conſtantly eat the roots which are dug from the ground, without attempting to ſhake off the ſoil that adheres to them.

They have bows and arrows, ſp rs, ſlings, ſhort truncheons made of bone, and a ſma pick-axe, ſomewhat reſembling the common American tomahawk. Some of the arrows are pointed with iron, and others with indented bone; the ſpear has uſually a long point made of bone. The tomahawk is a ſtone of the length of ſeven or eight inches, one end terminating in a point, and the other fixed into a wooden handle.

The deſign and execution of their manufactures and mechanic arts, are more extenſive and ingenious than could poſſibly have been expected, from the natural diſpoſition of the people, and what little progreſs they had made in civilization. The flaxen and woollen garments engage their firſt care, as being the moſt material of thoſe that may be claſſed under the head of manufactures. The former are fabricated from the bark of the pine tree, beat into a maſs reſembling hemp.

Their fondneſs for carving on all their wooden articles, correſponds with their taſte in working figures upon their garments. Nothing is to be ſeen without a kind of frize-work, or a repreſentation of ſome animal upon it; but the moſt general figure is that of the human face.

Though the ſtructure of their canoes is ſimple, they appear well calculated for every uſeful purpoſe. The largeſt, which contain upwards of twenty people, are

are formed of a ſingle tree. The length of many of them is forty feet, the breadth ſeven, and the depth three. They become gradually narrower from the middle towards each end, the ſtern ending perpendicularly, with a knob at the top. The fore-part ſtretches forwards and upwards, and ends in a point or prow, much higher than the ſides of the canoe, which are nearly ſtraight. The greateſt part of them are without any ornament; ſome have a little carving, and are ſtudded with ſeal's teeth on the ſurface. Some have alſo a kind of additional prow, uſually painted with the figure of ſome animal. They have neither ſeats nor any other ſupporters, on the inſide, except ſome ſmall round ſticks, about the ſize of a walking cane, placed acroſs, about half the depth of a canoe. They are very light, and, on account of the breadth and flatneſs, ſwim firmly, without an out-rigger, of which they are all deſtitute. Their paddles, which are ſmall and light, reſemble a large leaf in ſhape, being pointed at the bottom, broad in the middle, and gradually becoming narrower in the ſhaft; the whole length being about five feet. By conſtant uſe, they have acquired great dexterity in the management of theſe paddles; but they never make uſe of any ſails.

For fiſhing and hunting, their inſtruments are ingeniouſly contrived, and completely made. They conſiſt of nets, hooks, and lines, harpoons, gigs, and an inſtrument reſembling an oar. The aſſiſtance they receive from iron tools, contributes to their dexterity in wooden performances. Their implements are almoſt wholly made of iron; at leaſt, we ſaw but one chiſſel that was not made of that metal, and that was only of bone. The knife and the chiſſel are the principal forms that iron aſſumes amongſt them. The chiſſel conſiſts of a flat long piece, faſtened into a wooden handle. A ſtone is their mallet, and a bit of fiſh-ſkin their poliſher.

Little knowledge can we be ſuppoſed to have acquired of the political and religious inſtitutions eſtabliſhed among theſe people. We diſcovered, however, that there

there were ſuch men as chiefs, diſtinguiſhed by the title of *Acweek*, to whom the others are, in ſome degree, ſubordinate. But the authority of each of theſe great men ſeems to extend no farther than to his own family, who acknowledge him as their head. As they were not all elderly men, it is poſſible this title may be hereditary.

Their language is neither harſh nor diſagreeable, farther than proceeds from their pronouncing the *k* and *h* with leſs ſoftneſs than we do. As to the compoſition of their language, we are enabled to ſay but little.

We put to ſea, in the evening of the 26th of April, with manifeſt indications of an approaching ſtorm; and theſe ſigns did not deceive us. We had ſcarce ſailed out of the Sound, when the wind ſhifted from north-eaſt to ſouth-eaſt by eaſt, and blew a ſtrong gale, with ſqualls and rain, the ſky being at the ſame time uncommonly dark. Between one and two o'clock in the afternoon, there was a perfect hurricane; ſo that the Commodore deemed it exceedingly dangerous to run any longer before it: he therefore brought the ſhips to, with their heads to the ſouth. In this ſituation, the Reſolution ſprung a leak in her ſtarboard quarter, which, at firſt, alarmed us extremely; but, after the water was baled out, which kept us employed till midnight, it was kept under by means of one pump. The wind having, in the evening, veered to the ſouthward, its fury in ſome meaſure abated; upon which we ſtretched to the weſt; but about eleven, the gale again increaſed, and continued till five the next morning, when the ſtorm began to moderate.

On Friday the 1ſt of May, not ſeeing land, we ſteered to the north-eaſt, having a freſh breeze at ſouth ſouth-eaſt and ſouth, with ſqualls and ſhowers of hail and rain. About ſeven o'clock in the evening we deſcried the land, at the diſtance of twelve or fourteen leagues. At four the next morning, the coaſt was ſeen from ſouth-eaſt to north by weſt, the neareſt part of it being five or ſix leagues diſtant. At this time, the north-

northern point of an inlet, or, at leaſt, what appeared to be one, bore eaſt by ſouth; and from it to the northward, there ſeemed to be many bays and harbours along the coaſt. Between eleven and twelve, we paſſed a cluſter of little iſlands ſituate near the continent, to the northward of the ſouthern point of an extenſive bay. An arm of this bay ſeemed to extend in towards the north, behind a round lofty mountain that ſtands between it and the ſea. To this mountain Captain Cook gave the name of Mount Edgecumbe; and the point of land projecting from it, he called Cape Edgecumbe. The latitude of this cape is 57° 3′ north, and its longitude 224° 7′ eaſt.

We had now light breezes from the north-weſt, which continued ſeveral days. We ſteered to the ſouth-weſt and weſt-ſouth-weſt, till the morning of the 4th, when we tacked and ſtood towards the ſhore.

On the 6th, at mid-day, the neareſt land was at the diſtance of about eight leagues. In a north-eaſterly direction, there appeared to be a bay, and an iſland near its ſouthern point, covered with wood. In the afternoon we ſounded, and found a muddy bottom at the depth of about ſeven fathoms. Soon afterwards, having a light northerly breeze, we ſteered to the weſtward; and at noon, the next day, we were at the diſtance of four or five leagues from the ſhore.

On Sunday the 10th, at twelve o'clock, we were about three leagues diſtant from the coaſt of the continent. To the weſtward of the latter direction was an iſland, at the diſtance of ſix leagues. A point, which the Commodore named Cape Suckling, projects towards the north-eaſtern end of this iſland.

On the 12th, at noon, the eaſtern point of a ſpacious inlet bore weſt-north-weſt, about three leagues diſtant. From Comptroller's Bay to this point, which the Commodore named Cape Hinchingbroke, the direction of the coaſt is nearly eaſt and weſt. The wind was now ſouth-eaſterly, and we were menaced with a fog and a ſtorm; and Captain Cook was deſirous of getting into ſome place to ſtop the leak, before we had

another

another gale to encounter. We therefore ſteered for the inlet, which we had no ſooner reached, than the weather became exceedingly foggy, and it was deemed neceſſary that the ſhips ſhould be ſecured in ſome place or other, till the ſky ſhould clear up. With this view we hauled cloſe under Cape Hinchingbroke, and caſt anchor before a ſmall cove, over a clayey bottom, in eight fathoms water, at the diſtance of about two furlongs from the ſhore.

Mr. Gore was ſent on ſhore, in order to ſhoot ſome birds that might ſerve for food. He had ſcarcely reached them, when about twenty natives appeared, in two large canoes; upon which he returned to the ſhips, and they followed him. They were unwilling, however, to venture along-ſide, but kept at a little diſtance, ſhouting aloud, and claſping and extending their arms alternately. They then began a kind of ſong, much after the manner of the inhabitants of King George's or Nootka Sound. Their heads were ſtrewed with feathers, and one of them held out a white garment, which we ſuppoſed was intended as a token of friendſhip; while another, for near a quarter of an hour, ſtood up in the canoe, entirely naked, with his arms extended like a croſs, and motionleſs. Though we returned their ſigns of amity, and endeavoured, by the moſt expreſſive geſtures, to encourage them to come along-ſide, we were unable to prevail upon them. Though ſome of our people repeated ſeveral of the moſt common words of the language of Nootka, they did not appear to underſtand them. After they had received ſome preſents that were thrown to them, they retired towards the ſhore, intimating, by ſigns, that they would pay us another viſit the next morning. Two of them, however, came off to us in the night, each in a ſmall canoe; hoping, perhaps, that they might find us all aſleep, and might have an opportunity of pilfering; for they went away as ſoon as they perceived themſelves diſcovered.

We now got up our anchors and made ſail, and ſoon diſcovered an excellent bay or harbour; but the weather

ther proving very tempeſtuous, we were obliged to drop our anchors much ſooner than we intended. During our ſtay here, the natives behaved with great inſolence, attempting to ſteal our boats, and even to plunder the Diſcovery. As we were on the point of weighing anchor in order to proceed farther up the bay, the wind began to blow as violently as before, and was attended with rain; inſomuch that we were obliged to bear away the cable again, and lie faſt. In the evening, perceiving that the gale did not abate, and thinking that it might be ſome time before an opportunity of getting higher up preſented itſelf, the Commodore was determined to heel the ſhip in our preſent ſtation; and, with that view, cauſed her to be moored with a kedge-anchor and hawſer. One of the ſailors, in heaving the anchor out of the boat, was carried overboard by the buoy-rope, and accompanied the anchor to the bottom. In this very hazardous ſituation, he had ſufficient preſence of mind to diſengage himſelf, and come up to the ſurface of the water, where he was immediately taken up, with a dangerous fracture in one of his legs. Early the following morning, we heeled the ſhip, in order to ſtop the leak, which, on ripping off the ſheathing, was found to be in the ſeams. While the carpenters were employed in this buſineſs, others of our people filled the water-caſks at a ſtream not far from our ſtation. The wind had, by this time, conſiderably abated; but the weather was hazy, with rain.

On Saturday the 16th, towards the evening, the weather cleared up, and we then found ourſelves encompaſſed with land. Our ſtation was on the eaſtern ſide of the Sound, in a place diſtinguiſhed by the appellation of Snug-corner Bay. Captain Cook, accompanied by ſome of his officers, went to take a ſurvey of the head of it, and they found that it was ſheltered from all winds, and had a muddy bottom at the depth of from ſeven to three fathoms. The land near the ſhore is low, and well wooded. The clear ground was covered with ſnow, but very little remained in the woods. The ſummits of the hills in the neigh-

bourhood were covered with wood; but those that were at a greater distance inland, had the appearance of naked rocks involved with snow.

The leak of the Resolution being at length stopped, we weighed anchor on the 17th, at four in the morning, and steered a north-west course. When we had reached the north-western point of the arm wherein we had anchored, we observed that the flood tide came into the inlet by the same channel through which we had entered. This circumstance did not much contribute to the probability of a passage to the north through the inlet, though it did not make entirely against it. After we had passed the point above mentioned, we met with much foul ground, and many sunken rocks. The wind now failed us, and was succeeded by calms and variable light airs, so that we had some difficulty in extricating ourselves from the danger that threatened us. At last, however, about one o'clock, we cast anchor in about thirteen fathoms water, under the eastern shore, about four leagues to the northward of our last station. Though the weather in the morning had been very hazy, it cleared up afterwards, so as to afford us a distinct view of all the surrounding land, particularly towards the north, where it appeared too close. This gave us but little hope of meeting with a passage that way. That he might be enabled to form a better judgement, Captain Cook sent Mr. Gore, with two armed boats, to examine the northern arm; and at the same time dispatched the Master, with two other boats, to survey another arm that seemed to incline towards the east. Both of them returned at night. The Master informed the Commodore, that the arm to which he had been sent communicated with that we had last quitted, and that one side of it was formed by a cluster of islands. Mr. Gore reported, that he had seen the entrance of an arm, which, he thought, extended a very considerable way to the north-eastward, and by which a passage might probably be found. On the other hand, Mr. Roberts, one of the Mates, who had accompanied Mr. Gore

Gore on this occaſion, gave it as his opinion, that they ſaw the head of this arm. The variation of theſe two opinions, and the circumſtance before mentioned of the flood tide entering the inlet from the ſouthward, rendered the exiſtence of a paſſage this way extremely uncertain. Captain Cook therefore determined to employ no more time in ſeeking a paſſage in a place that afforded ſo ſmall a proſpect of ſucceſs, particularly as the wind was now become favourable for getting out to ſea.

The next morning, about three o'clock, we weighed and made ſail to the ſouthward down the inlet, with a light northerly breeze. We met with the ſame broken ground as on the preceding day, but ſoon extricated ourſelves from it. We were enabled to ſhorten our way out to ſea, by diſcovering another paſſage into this inlet, to the ſouth-weſt of that by which we entered. It is ſeparated from the other by an iſland that extends eighteen leagues in the direction of ſouth-weſt and north-eaſt, to which Captain Cook gave the appellation of Montagu Iſland.

The inlet which we had now quitted was diſtinguiſhed by Captain Cook with the name of Prince William's Sound. From what we ſaw of it, it ſeems to occupy, at leaſt, one degree and an half of latitude, and two degrees of longitude, excluſive of the branches or arms, with whoſe extent we were unacquainted. The natives whom we ſaw were, in general, of a middling ſtature, though many of them were under it. They were ſquare, or ſtrong cheſted, with ſhort, thick necks, and large broad viſages, which were for the moſt part rather flat. The moſt diſproportioned part of their body appeared to be their heads, which were of great magnitude. Their teeth were of a tolerable whiteneſs, broad, well ſet, and equal in ſize. Their noſes had full, round points, turned up at the tip; and their eyes, though not ſmall, were ſcarcely proportioned to the largeneſs of their faces. They had black hair, which was ſtrong, ſtraight, and thick. Their beards were, in general, thin, or deficient: but the

hairs growing about the lips of those who have them, were briſtly or ſtiff, and often of a browniſh colour; and ſome of the elderly men had large, thick, ſtraight beards.

The men, women, and children of this Sound are all clothed in the ſame manner. Their ordinary dreſs is a ſort of cloſe frock, or rather robe, which ſometimes reaches only to the knees, but generally down to the ancles. It has, at the upper part, a hole juſt ſufficient to admit the head, with ſleeves reaching to the wriſt. Theſe frocks are compoſed of the ſkins of various animals, ſuch as the gray fox, racoon, pine martin, ſea otter, ſeal, bear, &c. and they are commonly worn with the hairy ſide outwards. Some of the natives have their frocks made of the ſkins of fowls, with only the down left on them, which they glue upon other ſubſtances: we alſo ſaw one or two woollen garments, reſembling thoſe of the inhabitants of King George's Sound. At the ſeams, where the different ſkins are ſewed together, they are uſually adorned with fringes or taſſels of narrow thongs, cut out of the ſame ſkins. There is a ſort of cape or collar to a few of them, and ſome have a hood; but the other is the moſt cuſtomary form, and appears to conſtitute their whole dreſs in fair weather. They put over this, when it is rainy, another frock, made with ſome degree of ingenuity from the inteſtines of whales, or of ſome other large animal, prepared with ſuch ſkill, as to reſemble, in a great meaſure, our goldbeaters' leaf. It is formed ſo as to be drawn tight round the neck; and its ſleeves extend down to the wriſt, round which they are faſtened with a ſtring.

Though the inhabitants of this inlet, in general, do not cover their legs or feet, yet ſome of them wear a kind of ſkin ſtockings, reaching half way up their thighs. Few of them are without mittens for their hands, formed from the ſkins of a bear's paws. Both the men and women perforate their ears with ſeveral holes, about the outer and lower part of the edge, wherein they ſuſpend ſmall bunches of beads. They

alſo

alſo perforate the *ſeptum* of the noſe, through which they alſo thruſt the quill feathers of birds, or little bending ornaments, made of a tubulous ſhelly ſubſtance, ſtrung on a ſtiff cord, of the length of three or four inches, which give them a ridiculous and groteſque appearance. But the moſt extraordinary ornamental faſhion, adopted by ſome of the natives of both ſexes, is, their having the under lip cut quite through lengthwiſe, rather below the ſwelling part. This inciſion frequently exceeds two inches in length, and either by its natural retraction while the wound is ſtill freſh, or by the repetition of ſome artificial management, aſſumes the appearance and ſhape of lips, and becomes ſufficiently large to admit the tongue through. This happened to be the caſe, when a perſon with his under lip thus ſlit was firſt ſeen by one of our ſailors, who immediately exclaimed, that the man had two mouths; which, indeed, it greatly reſembles. They fix in this artificial mouth a flat, narrow kind of ornament, made principally out of a ſolid ſhell or bone, cut into ſmall narrow pieces, like teeth, almoſt down to the baſe, or thick part, which has at each end a projecting bit, that ſerves to ſupport it when put into the divided lip, the cut part then appearing outwards. Some of them only perforate the lower lip into ſeparate holes; on which occaſion the ornament conſiſts of the ſame number of diſtinct ſhelly ſtuds, the points of which are thruſt through theſe holes, and their heads appear within the lip, not unlike another row of teeth under their natural ones.

The men often paint their faces of a black colour, and of a bright red, and ſometimes of a blueiſh or leaden hue; but not in any regular figure. The women puncture or ſtain the chin with black, that comes to a point in each of their cheeks; a cuſtom ſimilar to which is in vogue among the Greenland females, as we are informed by Crantz.

Their canoes are of two ſorts; the one large and open, the other ſmall and covered. The framing conſiſts of ſlender pieces of wood, and the outſide is com-

posed of the skins of seals, or other sea animals, stretched over the wood.

Their weapons and implements for hunting and fishing are the same with those used by the Greenlanders and Esquimaux. Many of their spears are headed with iron, and their arrows are generally pointed with bone. Their larger darts are thrown by means of a piece of wood about a foot long, with a small groove in the middle, which receives the dart: at the bottom is a hole for the reception of one finger, which enables them to grasp the piece of wood much firmer, and to throw with greater force.

It is uncertain with what tools their wooden utensils, frames of canoes, &c. are made, the only one that we observed among them being a sort of stone adze, somewhat resembling those of Otaheite, and other islands of the Pacific Ocean. They have a great quantity of iron knives, some of which are rather curved, others straight, and some very small ones, fixed in longish handles, with the blades bent upwards. They have also knives of another sort, sometimes almost two feet in length, shaped in a great measure like a dagger, with a ridge towards the middle. They wear these in sheaths of skins, hung by a thong round their necks under their robe or frock. It is probable that they use them only as weapons, and that their other knives are applied to different purposes.

The food that we saw them eat was the flesh of some animal, either roasted or broiled, and dried fish. Some of the former that was purchased had the appearance of bear's flesh. They likewise eat a larger sort of fern root, either baked or dressed in some other method. Some of us observed them eat freely of a substance, which we imagined was the interior part of the pine bark. Their drink, in all probability, is water; for in their canoes they brought snow in wooden vessels, which they swallowed by mouthfuls. Their manner of eating is decent and cleanly, for they constantly took care to remove any dirt that might adhere to their food; and though they would sometimes eat the raw

fat

fat of ſome ſea animal, they did not fail to cut it carefully into mouthfuls.

Our knowledge of the animals of this part of the American continent is entirely derived from the ſkins that were brought by the natives for ſale. Theſe were principally of bears, common and pine martins, ſea otters, ſeals, racoons, ſmall ermines, foxes, and the whitiſh cat or lynx.

Beſides theſe animals, there is here the white bear, of whoſe ſkins the natives brought ſeveral pieces, and ſome complete ſkins of cubs. There is alſo the wolverene, or quickhatch, whoſe ſkin has very bright colours; and a larger ſpecies of ermine than the common one, varied with brown, and having ſcarcely any black on its tail.

With reſpect to birds, we found here the halcyon, or great king fiſher, which had fine bright colours; the ſhag; the white-headed eagle; and the humming bird, which often flew about our ſhips while we lay at anchor. The water fowl ſeen by us were black ſea pyes, with red bills; geeſe; a ſmall ſort of duck, and another ſort with which none of us were acquainted.

The fiſh that were principally brought to us by the natives for ſale, were torſk and halibut; and we caught ſome ſculpins about the ſhip, with ſtar fiſh of a purpliſh hue, that had ſixteen or eighteen rays. The rocks were almoſt deſtitute of ſhell fiſh; and the only other animal of this tribe that was obſerved by us was a reddiſh crab, covered with very large ſpines.

The metals ſeen by us were iron and copper; both which, but more particularly the former, were in ſuch abundance, as to form the points of numbers of their lances and arrows. The ores which they made uſe of to paint themſelves with, were a brittle, unctuous, red ocre, or iron ore; a pigment of a bright blue, and black lead. Each of theſe ſeemed to be very ſcarce among them.

We obſerved few vegetables of any kind; and the trees that chiefly grew about this Sound were the Canadian

nadian and ſpruce pine, ſome of which were of a conſiderable ſize.

Leaving Prince William's Sound, on Wedneſday the 20th of May, we ſteered to the ſouth-weſt with a gentle breeze. We continued to ſtretch to the ſouth-weſt, and paſſed a lofty promontory, in the latitude of 59° 10′, and the longitude of 207° 45′. It having been diſcovered on Princeſs Elizabeth's birth day, Captain Cook gave it the name of Cape Elizabeth. As we could ſee no land beyond it, we flattered ourſelves that it was the weſtern extremity of the continent; but we were ſoon convinced that we were miſtaken, freſh land appearing in ſight, bearing weſt-ſouth-weſt. The wind had now increaſed to a ſtrong gale, and forced us to a conſiderable diſtance from the coaſt. On the 22d, in the afternoon, the gale abated, and we ſtood for Cape Elizabeth, which about noon next day bore weſt, diſtant ten leagues.

By variable light airs and calms, we were detained off the Cape till ten o'clock in the morning of the 25th, when a breeze ſpringing up, we ſteered along the coaſt, and perceived that the land of Cape St. Hermogenes was an iſland about ſix leagues in circumference, ſeparated from the coaſt by a channel of about one league in breadth.

St. Hermogenes ended in a low point, named Point Banks. The ſhip was at this time in the latitude of 58° 41′, and in the longitude of 207° 44′. In this ſituation the land was in ſight, bearing north-weſt, which, it was imagined, connected Cape Elizabeth with this ſouth-weſt land. When we approached it, we ſaw it was a group of high iſlands and rocks, and conſequently unconnected with any other land. From the nakedneſs of their appearance they were denominated the Barren Iſles. They are ſituated in the latitude of 59°, three leagues diſtant from Cape Elizabeth, and five from Point Banks.

The weather, which had been thick and hazy, cleared up towards the evening, and we perceived a very lofty promontory, whoſe elevated ſummit appeared

peared above the clouds, forming two exceeding high mountains. The Commodore named this promontory Cape Douglas, in honour of his friend Dr. Douglas, canon of Windsor. Its latitude is 58° 56′, and its longitude 206° 10′; twelve leagues from Point Banks, and ten to the westward of the Barren Isles.

On the 26th, at day break, being to the northward of the Barren Isles, we perceived more land, extending from Cape Douglas to the north. It consisted of a chain of very high mountains; one of which, being much more conspicuous than the rest, obtained the name of Mount St. Augustin.

We were not discouraged at perceiving this land, supposing it to be wholly unconnected with the land of Cape Elizabeth. We also expected to find a passage to the north-west, between Cape Douglas and Mount St. Augustin. It was, indeed, imagined, that the land to the north of Cape Douglas consisted of a group of islands, separated by so many channels, any of which we might have chosen, according to the direction of the wind.

Flattered with these ideas, and having a fresh gale at north-north-east, we stood to the north-west till eight o'clock, when we were fully convinced, that what we had supposed to be islands, were summits of mountains, connected by the lower land, which we could not perceive at a greater distance, on account of the haziness of the horizon. This land was covered wholly with snow, from the tops of the mountains down to the sea beach, and had in every other respect the appearance of a great continent. Captain Cook was now fully convinced that he should discover no passage by this inlet; and his persevering in the search of it was more to satisfy others than to confirm his own opinion.

After various and fruitless attempts to discover a passage through the inlet, it was totally given up, and Captain Cook named it River Turnagain. We had traced it to the latitude of 61° 31′, and the longitude of 210°, which is upwards of seventy leagues from its

entrance, and saw no appearance of its source. The time we spent in the discovery of this great river ought not to be regretted, if it should hereafter prove useful to the present or any future age. But the delay thus occasioned was an essential loss to us, who had an object of greater magnitude in view. The season was far advanced; and it was now evident that the continent of North America extended much farther to the west than we had reason to expect from the most approved charts. The Commodore, however, had the satisfaction to reflect, that if he had not examined this very large river, speculative fabricators of geography would have ventured to assert, that it had a communication with the sea to the north, or with Hudson's or Baffin's bay to the east; and it would probably have been marked, on future maps of the world, with as much appearance of precision as the imaginary Straits of de Fuca and de Fonte.

Mr. King was again sent, in the afternoon, with two armed boats, with orders from Captain Cook to land on the south-east side of the river, where he was to display the flag, and in His Majesty's name to take possession of the country and the river. He was also ordered to bury a bottle in the earth, containing some English coin of 1772, and a paper, whereon were written the names of our ships and the date of our discovery. This point of land was named Point Possession.

When it was high water we weighed anchor, and, with a faint breeze, stood over to the west shore, where we anchored early the next morning on account of the return of the flood.

We weighed at half past ten, and plied down the river with a gentle breeze at south, when, by the inattention of the man at the lead, the Resolution struck, and stuck upon a bank nearly in the middle of the river. We had twelve feet depth of water about the ship, at the lowest of the ebb, but the bank was dry in other parts.

When the Resolution came aground, Captain Cook made a signal for the Discovery to anchor. We were after-

afterwards informed, that ſhe had been almoſt aſhore on the weſt ſide of the bank. About five o'clock in the afternoon, as the flood tide came in, the ſhip floated off without ſuſtaining any damage, or occaſioning the leaſt trouble. We then ſtood over to the weſt ſhore, where we anchored in deep water, to wait for the ebb, the wind being ſtill unfavourable to us.

At ten o'clock at night we weighed with the ebb, and, about five the next morning, the 3d of June, the tide being finiſhed, we caſt anchor on the weſt ſhore, about two miles below the bluff point. When we were in this ſtation we were viſited by many of the natives, who attended us all the morning; and, indeed, their company was highly acceptable to us, as they brought with them a quantity of fine ſalmon, which they exchanged for ſome of our trifles. Several hundred weight of it was procured for the two ſhips, and the greateſt part of it was ſplit, and ready for drying.

The mountains now, for the firſt time after our entering the river, were free from clouds, and we perceived a volcano in one of thoſe on the weſtern ſide. Its latitude is 60° 23′; and it is the firſt high mountain north of Mount St. Auguſtin. The volcano is near the ſummit, and on that part of the mountain next the river. It emits a white ſmoke, but no fire. The wind continuing ſoutherly, we ſtill tided it down the river, and on the morning of the 5th, arriving at the place where we had loſt our kedge anchor, we attempted, though unſucceſsfully, to recover it.

The ebb tide making in our favour, we weighed, and, with a gentle breeze at ſouth-weſt, plied down the river. The flood, however, obliged us to anchor again; but about one o'clock the next morning, we got under ſail with a freſh breeze, paſſed the barren iſlands about eight, and at noon Cape St. Hermogenes bore ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, about eight leagues diſtant. We intended to go through the paſſage between the iſland of that name and the main land: but the wind ſoon after failed us, and we had baffling airs from the eaſtward; we, therefore, abandoned the deſign of carrying our ſhip through that paſſage.

The 9th, 10th, and 11th, we had conſtant miſty weather, with ſome rain, and ſeldom had a ſight of the coaſt; we had a gentle breeze of wind, and the air was raw and cold. We continued plying up the coaſt.

In the evening of the 12th, the fog clearing up, we ſaw the land about twelve leagues diſtant, bearing weſt, and we ſtood in for it early the next morning. At noon we were within three miles of it; an elevated point, which was named Cape Barnabas, in the latitude of 57° 13′, bore north-north-eaſt, at the diſtance of about ten miles. We could not ſee the north-eaſt extreme for the haze, but the point to the ſouth-weſt had an elevated ſummit, which terminated in two round hills, and was therefore called Two-headed Point. This part of the coaſt is principally compoſed of high hills and deep vallies.

We continued to ply, and, at about ſix in the evening being about midway between Cape Barnabas and Two-headed Point, two leagues from the ſhore, we had ſixty-two fathoms water. Here a low point of land was obſerved, bearing ſouth 69° weſt. On the 14th, at noon, we were in the latitude 56° 49′. The land ſeen the preceding evening now appeared like two iſlands. We were up with the ſouthernmoſt part of this land the next morning, and perceived it to be an iſland, which obtained the name of Trinity Iſland. Its greateſt extent, in the direction of eaſt and weſt, is about ſix leagues. It has naked elevated land at each end, and is low towards the middle. Its latitude is 56° 36′, and its longitude 205°. It is diſtant about three leagues from the continent, between which rocks and iſlands are interſperſed; there ſeems, nevertheleſs, to be a good paſſage, and ſafe anchorage. We at firſt imagined that this was Beering's Foggy Iſland; but its ſituation is not agreeable to his chart.

On Wedneſday the 17th, we had gentle breezes between weſt and north-weſt; the weather was perfectly clear, and the air dry and ſharp. The continent, about noon, extended from ſouth-weſt to north by eaſt; the neareſt part about ſeven or eight leagues diſtant; a

group

group of iſlands lying to the ſouth-weſt, about the ſame diſtance from the continent.

The weather was clear and pleaſant on the 18th, and it was calm the greateſt part of the day.

The Commodore having occaſion to ſend a boat to the Diſcovery, one of the people on board her ſhot a moſt beautiful bird. It is ſmaller than a duck, and the colour is black, except that the fore part of the head is white; behind each eye, an elegant yellowiſh white creſt ariſes; the bill and feet are of a reddiſh colour. The firſt we ſaw of theſe birds was to the ſouthward of Cape St. Hermogenes; after we ſaw them daily, and frequently in large flocks. We often ſaw moſt of the other ſea birds, that are uſually met with in the northern ocean; ſuch as ſhags, gulls, puffins, ſheerwaters, ducks, geeſe, and ſwans; and we ſeldom paſſed a day, without ſeeing whales, ſeals, and other fiſh of great magnitude.

By four o'clock in the afternoon, we had paſſed ſeveral iſlands to the ſouth of us. We found thirty fathoms water in the channel; and ſoon after we had got through it, the Diſcovery, which was two miles aſtern, fired three guns and brought to, making a ſignal to ſpeak with us. Captain Cook was much alarmed at this; for, as no apparent danger had been obſerved in the channel, he was apprehenſive that the Diſcovery had ſprung a leak, or met with ſome ſimilar accident. A boat was ſent to her, which immediately returned with Captain Clerke. He informed the Commodore, that ſome natives, in three or four canoes, having followed the ſhip for ſome time, at laſt got under his ſtern; one of whom made many ſigns, having his cap off, and bowing in the European manner. A rope was then handed down from the ſhip, to which he faſtened a thin wooden box, and, after he had made ſome more geſticulations, the canoes left the Diſcovery.

It was not imagined that the box contained any thing till the canoes had departed; when it was accidentally opened, and found to contain a piece of paper,

per, carefully folded up, on which ſome writing appeared, which they ſuppoſed to be in the Ruſſian language. To this paper was prefixed the date of 1778, and a reference was made therein to the year 1776. Though unable to decypher the alphabet of the writer, we were convinced by his numerals, that others had preceded us in viſiting theſe dreary regions. Indeed the hopes of ſpeedily meeting ſome of the Ruſſian traders, muſt be highly ſatisfactory to thoſe, who had been ſo long converſant with the ſavages of the Pacific Ocean, and thoſe of the continent of North America.

At firſt Captain Clerke imagined that ſome Ruſſians had been ſhipwrecked here; and that ſeeing our ſhips, theſe unfortunate perſons were induced to inform us of their ſituation. Deeply impreſſed with ſentiments of humanity on this occaſion, he was in hopes the Reſolution would have ſtopped till they had time to join us; but no ſuch idea ever occurred to Captain Cook. If this had really been the caſe, he ſuppoſed, that the firſt ſtep which ſuch ſhipwrecked perſons would have taken, in order to ſecure relief, would have been, to ſend ſome of their people off to the ſhips in the canoes. He, therefore, rather thought, the paper was intended to communicate ſome information, from ſome Ruſſian trader, who had lately viſited theſe iſlands, to be delivered to any of his countrymen who ſhould arrive; and that the natives ſuppoſing us to be Ruſſians, had brought off the note. Convinced of this, he enquired no farther into the matter, but made ſail, and ſteered to the weſtward.

At noon, on the 21ſt, we made but little progreſs, having only faint winds and calms. Halibut Head then bore north 24° weſt. This iſland is ſeven leagues in circumference, and, except the head, is very low and barren; ſeveral ſmall iſlands are near it, between which and the main, there appears to be a paſſage of the breadth of two or three leagues.

Having three hours calm in the afternoon, upwards of an hundred halibuts were caught by our people, ſome

ſome of which weighed upwards of an hundred pounds, and none of them leſs than twenty. They were highly acceptable to us. We fiſhed in thirty-five fathoms water, about a mile diſtant from the ſhore.

The weather was principally cloudy and hazy, till the afternoon of the 22d, when the wind ſhifted to the ſouth-eaſt, attended, as uſual, with thick rainy weather.

On the 24th, at ſix in the morning, we ſaw the continent, and at nine it extended from north-eaſt by eaſt, to ſouth-weſt by weſt; the neareſt part four leagues diſtant. The land to the ſouth-weſt conſiſted of iſlands, being what we had ſeen the preceding night. In the evening, being about the diſtance of four leagues from the ſhore, and having little wind, we threw out our hooks and lines, but caught only two or three little cod.

We got an eaſterly breeze the next morning, and with it, what was very uncommon, clear weather; inſomuch, that we clearly ſaw the volcano, the other mountains, and all the main land under them. Between this point and the iſlands, a large opening appeared, for which we ſteered, till land was ſeen beyond it; and though we did not perceive that this land joined the continent, a paſſage through the opening was doubtful, as well as whether the land to the ſouth-weſt was inſular or continenal. Unwilling to truſt too much to appearances, we ſteered to the ſouthward; when, having got without all the land in ſight, we ſteered weſt, the iſlands lying in that direction.

We derived but little advantage from daylight, the weather being ſo thick that we could not diſcover objects at the diſtance of a hundred yards; but, as the wind was moderate, we ventured to run. Some hours after, the fog being a little diſperſed, we diſcovered the imminent danger we had eſcaped. We were three quarters of a mile from the north-eaſt ſide of an iſland; two elevated rocks were about half a league from us, and from each other. Several breakers alſo appeared about them; and yet Providence had ſafely conducted the

the ſhips through in the dark, between thoſe rocks, which we ſhould not have attempted to have done in a clear day, and to ſo commodious an anchoring place.

Being ſo near land, Captain Cook ordered a boat aſhore, to examine what it produced. When ſhe returned in the afternoon, the officer who commanded her ſaid, he ſaw ſome graſs, and other ſmall plants, one of which had the appearance of purſlain; but the iſland produced neither trees nor ſhrubs.

We weighed at ſeven o'clock, and ſteered between the iſland near which we had anchored, and a ſmall one not far from it. The breadth of the channel does not exceed a mile, and the wind failed before we could paſs through it; we were therefore obliged to anchor, which we did in thirty-four fathoms water. Land now preſented itſelf in every direction. That to the ſouth, extended in a ridge of mountains to the ſouth-weſt; which we afterwards found to be an iſland called *Oonalaſhka*.

Between this iſland and the land to the north, which we ſuppoſed to be a group of iſlands, there appeared to be a channel in a north-weſt direction. On a point, weſt from the ſhip, and at the diſtance of three quarters of a mile, we perceived ſeveral natives and their habitations. To this place we ſaw two whales towed in, which we ſuppoſed had juſt been killed. A few of the inhabitants, occaſionally came off to the ſhips, and engaged in a little traffic with our people, but never continued with us above a quarter of an hour at a time. They ſeemed, indeed, remarkably ſhy; though we could readily diſcover they were not unacquainted with veſſels ſimilar in ſome degree to ours. Their manner diſplayed a degree of politeneſs which we had never experienced among any of the ſavage tribes.

About one in the afternoon, being favoured with a light breeze, and the tide of flood, we weighed, and proceeded to the channel laſt mentioned; expecting, when we had paſſed through, either to find the land

trend

trend away to the northward, or that we ſhould diſcover a paſſage out to ſea, to the weſt. For we did not ſuppoſe ourſelves to be in an inlet of the continent, but among the iſlands; and we were right in our conjectures.

We weighed the next morning at day break, and were wafted up the paſſage by a light breeze at ſouth; after which we had variable light airs from all directions. There was, however, a rapid tide in our favour, and the Reſolution got through before the ebb made. The Diſcovery was not equally fortunate, for ſhe was carried back, got into the race, and found a difficulty in getting clear of it.

Being now through the channel, we found the land, on one ſide, trending weſt and ſouth-weſt, and that on the other ſide to north. This encouraged us to hope, that the continent had taken a new direction in our favour. Being ſhort of water, and expecting to be driven about in a rapid tide, without wind ſufficient to govern the ſhip, we ſtood for a harbour on the ſouth ſide of the paſſage, but were driven beyond it; and, that we might not be forced back through the paſſage, anchored near the ſouthern ſhore, in twenty-eight fathoms water, and out of the reach of the ſtrong tide; though even here it ran five knots and an half an hour.

In this ſituation, we were viſited by ſeveral of the natives, in ſeparate canoes. They bartered ſome fiſhing implements for tobacco. A young man among them overſet his canoe, while he was along-ſide one of our boats. He was caught hold of by one of our people, but the canoe was taken up by another and carried aſhore. In conſequence of this accident, the youth was obliged to come into the ſhip, where he was invited into the cabin, and readily accepted the invitation, without any ſurprize or embarraſſment. He had on an upper garment reſembling a ſhirt, made of the gut of a whale, or ſome other large ſea animal. Under this, he had another of the ſame form, made of the ſkins of birds with the feathers on, curiouſly

ſewed

ſewed together; the feathered ſide placed next his ſkin. It was patched with ſeveral pieces of ſilk ſtuff, and his cap was embelliſhed with glaſs beads.

His clothes being wet, we furniſhed him with ſome of our own, which he put on with as much readineſs as we could have done. From the behaviour of this youth, and that of ſeveral others, it evidently appeared, that theſe people were no ſtrangers to Europeans, and to many of their cuſtoms. Something in our ſhips, however, greatly excited their curioſity; for, ſuch as had not canoes to bring them off, aſſembled on the neighbouring hills to have a view of them.

We were detained by thick fogs and a contrary wind, till the ſecond of July; during which time we acquired ſome knowledge of the country, as well as of its inhabitants. This harbour is called *Samganoodha*, by the natives; is ſituated on the north ſide of Oonalaſhka, the latitude being 53° 55′ the longitude 130° 30′; and in the ſtrait which ſeparates this iſland from thoſe to the north. It is about a mile broad at the entrance, and runs in about four miles ſouth by weſt. Plenty of good water may be procured here, but not a piece of wood of any kind.

On the 2d of July we ſteered from Samganoodha, with a gentle breeze at ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, to the northward, and met with nothing to obſtruct us in that courſe.

On Saturday the 4th, at eight o'clock in the morning, we ſaw high land, covered with ſnow. Not long after we had a calm; and being in thirty fathoms water, we caught, with hook and line, a good number of excellent cod.

We made but little progreſs on the 6th and 7th, as the wind was northerly. In the evening of the latter day, about eight o'clock, the depth of water was nineteen fathoms, and we were three or four leagues from the coaſt, which, on Wedneſday the 8th, extended from ſouth-ſouth-weſt to eaſt by north, and was all low land, with a ridge of mountains, covered with ſnow behind it.

On

On the ninth, in the morning, having a breeze at north-weſt, we ſteered eaſt by north, in order to make a nearer approach to the coaſt. We were now in the longitude of 201° 33′ eaſt, and in the latitude of 57° 49′ north. In this ſituation, our ſoundings were fifteen fathoms, over a bottom of fine black ſand.

From this time to the 1ſt of Auguſt, we continued our courſe northward, meeting with variable winds, and being frequently entangled among ſhoals and iſlands, which conſiderably retarded our progreſs. To one of the iſlands we diſcovered in this run, Captain Cook gave the name of Round Iſland. It ſtands in the latitude of 58° 37′ north, and the longitude of 200° 6′ eaſt, and is ſeven miles diſtant from the continent.

On the 2d of Auguſt, our latitude was 60° 34′ north, and our longitude 192° eaſt.

Between three and four o'clock this afternoon, Mr. Anderſon, ſurgeon of the Reſolution, expired, after he had lingered under a conſumption for upwards of a twelvemonth. He was a ſenſible intelligent young man, and an agreeable companion. He had great ſkill in his profeſſion, and had acquired a conſiderable portion of knowledge in other departments of ſcience. Our readers will doubtleſs have obſerved, how uſeful an aſſiſtant he had proved in the courſe of the voyage; and if his life had been prolonged to a later period, the Public might have received from him many valuable communications reſpecting the natural hiſtory of the different places viſited by us. Soon after he had reſigned his breath, we diſcovered land to the weſtward, at the diſtance of twelve leagues. We ſuppoſed it to be an iſland; and the Commodore, to perpetuate the memory of the deceaſed, for whom he had a particular eſteem, diſtinguiſhed it by the name of Anderſon's Iſland. The following day Mr. Law, ſurgeon of the Diſcovery, was removed into the Reſolution; and Mr. Samuel, the ſurgeon's firſt mate of the Reſolution, was appointed to ſucceed Mr. Law as ſurgeon of the Diſcovery.

At

At three in the afternoon, on the 4th, we saw land before us, which we imagined to be the continent of America. It appeared rather low next the sea; but, inland, it rose in hills, which seemed to be of a tolerable height. It had a greenish hue, and was apparently destitute of wood, and free from snow.

On Wednesday the 5th, at ten o'clock in the morning, we ran down, and soon after, anchored between the island and the continent in seven fathoms. Not long after we had cast anchor, Captain Cook, accompanied by Mr. King, and some other officers, landed upon the island. He hoped to have had from it a prospect of the coast and sea towards the west; but in that direction, the fog was so thick, that the view was not more extensive than it was from our ships. The coast of the continent seemed to incline to the north, at a low point, named by us Point Rodney.

The latitude of this island is 64° 30′ north, and its longitude is 193° 57′ east. It is about twelve miles in circumference. The surface of the ground principally consists of large loose stones, covered in many places with moss and other vegetables, of which twenty or thirty different species were observed, and most of them were in flower. But the Captain saw not a tree or shrub, either on the island, or upon the neighbouring continent. Near the beach where he landed, was a considerable quantity of wild purslain, longwort, pease, &c. some of which he took on board for boiling. He saw several plovers, and other small birds; a fox was also seen. At a small distance from that part of the shore where our gentlemen landed, they found a sledge, which induced Captain Cook to give the island the appellation of Sledge island. It appeared to be such a one as is used by the Russians in Kamtschatka, for the purpose of conveying goods from one place to another over the snow or ice. It was about twenty inches in breadth, and ten feet in length, had a sort of rail work on each side, and was shod with bone. Its construction was admirable, and its various parts

parts were put together with great neatneſs; ſome with wooden pins, but for the moſt part with thongs or laſhings of whale bone; in conſequence of which, the Captain imagined that it was entirely the workmanſhip of the natives.

We weighed anchor at three o'clock in the morning of the 6th, and made ſail to the north-weſt, with a light breeze from the ſouthward. Between four and five in the morning of the 8th, we had a ſight of the north-weſt land; and not long afterwards, having a calm, and being driven by a current towards the ſhore, we thought proper to anchor in twelve fathoms water, at the diſtance of about two miles from it. A north-eaſterly breeze ſpringing up at eight o'clock, we weighed and made ſail to the ſouth-eaſtward, hoping to find a paſſage between this north-weſt land and the coaſt; but we quickly got into ſeven fathoms water, and perceived low land connecting the two coaſts, and the elevated land behind it.

Convinced that the whole was a continued coaſt, we tacked, and ſteered for its north-weſtern part, near which we anchored in ſeventeen fathoms. The weather, at preſent, was very thick and rainy; but, at four the next morning, it cleared up, and enabled us to diſcern the neighbouring land. A lofty ſteep rock or iſland bore weſt by ſouth; another iſland to the northward of it, and conſiderably larger, bore weſt by north; the peaked hill before mentioned, ſouth-eaſt by eaſt; and the point that was under it, ſouth, 32° eaſt. Under this hill is ſome low land extending towards the north-weſt, the extreme point of which was about one league diſtant. Over it, and alſo beyond it, we obſerved ſome high land, which we imagined was a continuation of the continent.

This point of land, which the Commodore diſtinguiſhed by the name of Cape Prince of Wales, is the weſtern extreme of all America hitherto known. It ſtands in the longitude of 191° 45′ eaſt, and in the latitude of 65° 46′ north. We fancied that we ſaw

ſome

ſome people on the coaſt; and, perhaps, we were not miſtaken in our ſuppoſition, as ſome elevations like ſtages and others reſembling huts, were obſerved at the ſame place.

At eight o'clock this morning, a faint northerly breeze ariſing, we weighed anchor; but our ſails were ſcarcely ſet, when it began to blow and rain with great violence, there being, at the ſame time, miſty weather. The wind and current were in contrary directions, raiſing ſuch a ſea, that it often broke into the ſhip. We ſtood on till ten o'clock, and then made towards the eaſt, in order to paſs the night.

On Monday the 10th, at break of day, we reſumed our courſe for the land ſeen by us the preceding evening. Betwixt the ſouth-weſtern extremity, and a point bearing weſt, ſix miles diſtant, the coaſt forms a ſpacious bay, in which we dropped our anchors at ten in the forenoon, about two miles from the northern ſhore, over a gravelly bottom, at the depth of ten fathoms.

Steering directly in for this bay, we obſerved on the north ſhore, a village, and ſome people, who ſeemed to have been thrown into confuſion, or fear, at the ſight of our veſſels. We could plainly perceive perſons running up the country with burdens upon their ſhoulders. At this village Captain Cook propoſed to land; and accordingly went with three armed boats, accompanied by ſome of the officers. Thirty or forty men, each armed with a ſpontoon, a bow, and arrows, ſtood up on an eminence near the houſes; three of them came down towards the ſhore, on the approach of our gentlemen, and were ſo polite as to pull off their caps, and make them low bows. Though this civility was returned, it did not inſpire them with ſufficient confidence to wait for the landing of our party; for the inſtant they put the boats aſhore, the natives retired. Captain Cook followed them alone, without any thing in his hands and by ſigns and geſtures, prevailed on them to ſtop and accept ſome trifling preſents: in return for theſe, they gave him two fox ſkins, and a couple of ſea-horſe teeth. The

Cap-

Captain was of opinion, that they had brought these articles with them for the purpose of presenting them to him, and that they would have given them to him even if they had expected no return.

They seemed very timid and cautious; intimating their desire by signs, that no more of our people should come up. On the Captain's laying his hand on the shoulder of one of them, he started back several paces; in proportion as he advanced they retreated, always in the attitude of being ready to make use of their spears; while those on the eminence were ready to support them with their arrows. Insensibly the Captain and two or three of his companions, introduced themselves, among them. The distribution of a few beads among some of them, soon created a degree of confidence, so that they were not alarmed, when the Captain was joined by a few more of his people; and in a short time, a kind of traffic was entered into. In exchange for tobacco, knives, beads, and other articles, they gave a few arrows, and some of their clothing; but nothing that our people had to offer, could induce them to part with a spear or a bow. These they held in continual readinss, never quitting them, except at one time, when four or five persons laid theirs down, while they favoured our party with a song and a dance; and even then, they placed them in such a manner, that they could lay hold of them in a moment.

Their arrows were pointed either with stone or bone, but very few of them had barbs, and some of them had a round blunt point. What use these are applied to, we cannot say, unless it be to kill small animals without damaging the skin. Their bows were such as we had observed on the American coast: their spontoons, or spears, were of iron or steel, and of European or Asiatic workmanship; and considerable pains had been taken to embellish them with carving, and inlayings of brass, and a white metal. Those who stood with bows and arrows in their hands, had the spear slung by a leathern strap over their right shoulder. A

leathern

leathern quiver ſlung over their left ſhoulder, ſerved to contain arrows; and ſome of theſe quivers were exceedingly beautiful, being made of red leather, on which was very neat embroidery, and other ornaments. Several other things, and particularly their clothing, indicated a degree of ingenuity, far ſurpaſſing what any one could expect to find among ſo northern a people.

Their apparel conſiſted of a pair of breeches, a cap, a frock, a pair of boots, and a pair of gloves, all made of the ſkins of deer, dogs, ſeals, and other animals, and extremely well dreſſed; ſome with the hair or fur on, and others without it. The caps were made in ſuch a manner, as to fit the head very cloſe; and beſides theſe caps, which were worn by moſt of them, we procured from them ſome hoods made of dog ſkins, that were ſufficiently large to cover both head and ſhoulders.

The village was compoſed both of their winter and their ſummer habitations; the former are exactly like a vault, the floor of which is ſunk below the ſurface of the earth. One of them which Captain Cook examined, was of an oval figure, about twenty feet in length, and twelve or more in height; the framing conſiſted of wood, and the ribs of whales, judiciouſly diſpoſed, and bound together with ſmaller materials of the ſame kind. Over this framing, a covering of ſtrong coarſe graſs was laid, and that again was covered with earth; ſo that on the outſide, the houſe had the appearance of a little hillock, ſupported by a wall of ſtone, of the height of three or four feet, which was built round the two ſides, and one end. At the other end of the habitation, the earth was raiſed ſloping, to walk up to the entrance, which was by a hole in the top of the roof, over that end. The floor was boarded, and under it was a ſort of cellar; at the end of each houſe was a vaulted room, which he ſuppoſed was a ſtore-room. Theſe ſtore-rooms communicated, by a dark paſſage with the houſe; and with the open air by a hole in the roof, even with the ground; but they

cannot

cannot be ſaid to be entirely below ground; for one end extended to the edge of the hill along which they were made, and which was built up with ſtone. Over it ſtood a kind of ſentry-box or tower, formed of the large bones of great fiſh.

Their ſummer huts were of a tolerable ſize, and circular, being brought to a point at the top: ſlight poles and bones, covered with the ſkins of ſea animals, compoſed the framing. Captain Cook examined the inſide of one: there was a fire-place juſt within the door, where a few wooden veſſels were depoſited, all very dirty. Their bed-places were cloſe to the ſide, and occupied about one half of the circuit: ſome degree of privacy ſeemed to be obſerved, for there were ſeveral partitions made with ſkins. The bed and bedding conſiſted of deer ſkins, and moſt of them were clean and dry.

The canoes of theſe people are of the ſame kind with thoſe of the northern Americans; ſome, both of the large and ſmall ſort, being ſeen lying in a creek near the village.

From the large bones of fiſh, and other ſea animals, it appeared, that the ſea furniſhed them with the greater part of their ſubſiſtence. The country ſeemed extremely barren, as our gentlemen ſaw not a tree or ſhrub. At ſome diſtance towards the weſt, they obſerved a ridge of mountains covered with ſnow, that had fallen not long before.

At firſt, ſome of us ſuppoſed this land to be a part of the iſland of Olaſchka, laid down in Mr. Stæhlin's map before mentioned; but from the appearance of the coaſt, the ſituation of the oppoſite ſhore of America, and from the longitude, we ſoon conjectured that it was more probably the county of the Tſchutſki, or the eaſtern extremity of Aſia, explored by Beering in the year 1728. In admitting this, however, without farther examination, we muſt have pronounced Mr. Stæhlin's map, and his account of the new northern Archipelago, to be either remarkably erroneous, even in latitude, or elſe to be a mere fiction; a judgment

 which

which we would not presume to pass upon a publication so respectably vouched, without producing the most decisive proofs.

After our party had remained with these people betwen two and three hours, they returned on board; and, soon after, the wind becoming southerly, we weighed anchor, stood out of the bay, and steered to the north-east, between the coast and the two islands. At twelve o'clock the next day (August 11) the latitude of the ship was 66° 5¼′ north, the longitude 191° 19′ east.

We steered to the eastward from this station, in order to make a nearer approach to the American coast; and, in the forenoon of the 16th, we perceived a brightness in the northern horizon, like that reflected from ice, usually called the blink. Little notice was taken of it, from a supposition that it was improbable we should so soon meet with ice. The sharpness of the air, however, and gloominess of the weather, for the two or three preceding days, seemed to indicate some sudden change. About an hour afterwards, the sight of an enormous mass of ice, left us no longer in any doubt respecting the cause of the brightness of the horizon. Between two and three o'clock, we tacked close to the edge of the ice, in twenty-two fathoms water, being then in the latitude of 70° 41′ north, and unable to stand on any farther: for the ice was perfectly impenetrable, and extended from west by south, to east by north, as far as the eye could reach. Here we met with great numbers of sea-horses, some of which were in the water, but far more upon the ice. The Commodore had thoughts of hoisting out the boats to kill some of these animals; but, the wind freshening, he gave up the design; and we continued to ply towards the south, or rather towards the west, for the wind came from that quarter.

On Wednesday the 19th, at eight in the morning, the wind veering to west, we tacked to the northward; and, at twelve, the latitude was 70° 6′ north, and the longitude 196° 42′ east. In this situation, we had a considerable quantity of drift ice about our ships, and

and the main ice was about two leagues to the north. Between one and two, we got in with the edge of it. It was leſs compact than that which we had obſerved towards the north; but it was too cloſe, and in too large pieces, to attempt forcing the ſhips through it. We ſaw an amazing number of ſea-horſes on the ice, and as we were in want of freſh proviſions, the boats from each ſhip were diſpatched to procure ſome of them. By ſeven in the evening, we had received, on board the Reſolution, nine of theſe animals; which, till this time, we had ſuppoſed to be ſea-cows; ſo that we were greatly diſappointed, particularly ſome of the ſailors, who, on account of the novelty of the thing, had been feaſting their eyes for ſome days paſt. Nor would they now have been diſappointed, nor have known the difference, if there had not been two or three men on board, who had been in Greenland, and declared what animals theſe were, and that no perſon ever eat of them. Notwithſtanding this, we made them ſerve us for proviſions, and there were few of our people who did not prefer them to our ſalt meat.

The fat of theſe animals is, at firſt, as ſweet as marrow; but, in a few days, it becomes rancid, unleſs it is ſalted, in which ſtate it will keep much longer. The lean fleſh is coarſe and blackiſh, and has a ſtrong taſte; and the heart is almoſt as well-taſted as that of a bullock. The fat, when melted, affords a good quantity of oil, which burns very well in lamps; and their hides, which are of great thickneſs, were extremely uſeful about our rigging. The teeth, or tuſks, of moſt of them were, at this time, of a very ſmall ſize; even ſome of the largeſt and oldeſt of theſe animals, had them not exceeding half a foot in length. Hence we concluded, that they had lately ſhed their old teeth.

They lie upon the ice in herds of many hundreds, huddling like ſwine, one over the other; and they roar very loud; ſo that in the night, or when the weather was foggy, they gave us notice of the vicinity of the ice, before we could diſcern it. We never found the

whole herd ſleeping, ſome of them being conſtantly upon the watch. Theſe, on the approach of the boat, would awake thoſe that were next to them; and the alarm being thus gradually communicated, the whole herd would preſently be awake. However, they were ſeldom in a hurry to get away, before they had been once fired at. Then they would fall into the ſea, one over the other in the utmoſt confuſion; and, if we did not happen, at the firſt diſcharge, to kill thoſe we fired at, we generally loſt them, though mortally wounded.

They did not appear to us to be ſo dangerous as ſome authors have repreſented them, not even when they are attacked. They are, indeed, more ſo in appearance than in reality. Vaſt multitudes of them would follow, and come cloſe up to the boats; but the flaſh of a muſket in the pan, or even the mere pointing of one at them, would ſend them down in a moment. The female will defend her young one to the very laſt, and at the expence of her own life, whether upon the ice or in the water. Nor will the young one quit the dam, though ſhe ſhould have been killed; ſo that, if you deſtroy one, you are ſure of the other. The dam, when in the water, holds her young one between her fore-fins. It is an animal not unlike a ſeal, but incomparably larger. The length of one of them, which was none of the largeſt, was nine feet four inches from the ſnout to the tail; the circumference of its body at the ſhoulder was ſeven feet ten inches; its circumference near the hinder fins was five feet ſix inches, and the weight of the caroaſe, without the head, ſkin, or entrails, was eight hundred and fifty-four pounds. The head weighed forty-one pounds and a half, and the ſkin two hundred and five pounds.

Soon after we had got our ſea-horſes on board, we were, in a manner, ſurrounded with the ice; and had no means of clearing it, but by ſteering to the ſouthward, which we did till three o'clock the next morning, with a light weſterly breeze, and, in general, thick, foggy weather.

We were at preſent in the latitude of 69° 32′ north, and

and in the longitude of 195° 48′ eaſt; and, as the main ice was not far from us, it is evident, that it now covered a part of the ſea, which, a few days before, had been free from it; and that it extended farther towards the ſouth, than where we firſt fell in with it.

We continued ſteering to the weſt, till five in the afternoon of the 26th, when we were, in ſome degree, embayed by the ice, which was very cloſe in the north-weſt and north-eaſt quarters, with a great quantity of looſe ice about the edge of the main body.

On Thurſday the 27th, at four in the morning, we tacked and ſtood to the weſtward, and at ſeven o'clock in the evening, we were cloſe in with the edge of the ice. There being but little wind, Captain Cook went with the boats, to examine the ſtate of the ice. He found it conſiſting of looſe pieces, of various extent, and ſo cloſe together, that he could ſcarcely enter the outer edge with a boat; and it was as impracticable for the ſhips to enter it, as if it had been ſo many rocks. He particularly remarked, that it was all pure tranſparent ice, except the upper ſurface, which was rather porous. It ſeemed to be wholly compoſed of frozen ſnow, and to have been all formed at ſea. The pieces of ice that formed the outer edge of the main body, were from forty or fifty yards in extent, to four or five, and the Captain judged, that the larger pieces reached thirty feet or more, under the ſurface of the water. At noon, our latitude was 69° 17′ north, our longitude 183° eaſt, and our depth of water was twenty-five fathoms. At two in the afternoon, having got on board as many ſea-horſes as were deemed ſufficient, and the wind freſhening at ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, we hoiſted in the boats, and ſteered to the ſouth-weſt.

On the 29th, in the morning, we ſaw the main ice towards the north, and ſoon after perceived land bearing ſouth-weſt by weſt. In a ſhort time after this, more land was ſeen bearing weſt. It ſhewed itſelf in two hills, reſembling iſlands, but ſoon the whole appeared connected. It was totally deſtitute of wood,

and even of ſnow; but was, probably, covered with a moſſy ſubſtance, that gave it a brownifh hue. In the low ground that lay between the ſea and the high land, was a lake, extending to the ſouth-eaſtward farther than we could ſee.

The ſeaſon was now ſo far advanced, and the time when the froſt generally ſets in was ſo near, that Captain Cook did not think it conſiſtent with prudence, to make any farther attempts to diſcover a paſſage into the Atlantic Ocean this year, in any direction, ſo ſmall was the probability of ſucceſs. His attention was now directed to the ſearch of ſome place, where we might recruit our wood and water; and the object that principally occupied his thoughts was, how he ſhould paſs the winter, ſo as to make ſome improvements in navigation and geography, and, at the ſame time, be in a condition to return to the northward the enſuing ſummer, to proſecute his ſearch of a paſſage into the Atlantic.

Having ſtood off till our ſoundings were eighteen fathoms, we made ſail to the eaſtward, along the coaſt, which, we were now pretty well convinced, could only be the continent of Aſia. The wind blowing freſh, and there being, at the ſame time, a thick miſt, and a very heavy fall of ſnow, it was requiſite that we ſhould proceed with particular caution: we therefore brought to, for a few hours, in the night. Early the next morning, which was the 30th of Auguſt, we ſteered ſuch a courſe as we judged moſt likely to bring us in with the land, being guided, in a great meaſure, by the land; for the weather was extremely thick and gloomy, with inceſſant ſhowers of ſnow. At ten o'clock we obtained a ſight of the coaſt, which ſeemed to form ſeveral rocky points, that were connected by a low ſhore, without any appearance of an harbour. At a diſtance from the ſea many hills preſented themſelves to our view, the higheſt of which were involved in ſnow: in other reſpects, the whole country had a naked aſpect.

Captain Cook was now convinced of what he had before

before imagined, that this was the country of the Tſchuſki, or the north-eaſtern coaſt of Aſia; and that Beering had proceeded thus far in the year 1728.

On the 7th of September, at eight o'clock in the evening, we perceived a light on ſhore; and two canoes with people in them came off towards us. We brought to, in order to give them time to approach; but they reſiſted all our tokens of amity, and kept at the diſtance of a quarter of a mile. We therefore left them, and proceeded along the coaſt. The next morning, at one o'clock, obſerving that the water ſhoaled pretty faſt, we anchored in ten fathoms, and remained in that ſituation till day-light came on.

On the 9th, at break of day, we ſaw land, which we ſuppoſed to be two iſlands; and not long afterwards, we found ourſelves near a coaſt covered with wood; a pleaſing ſight, to which we had not been lately accuſtomed.

At eight the next evening, we anchored near the ſouthern end of the moſt northerly iſland, for ſuch we then imagined it to be. The next morning, however, we found that it was a peninſula, connected with the continent by a low iſthmus, on each ſide of which, a bay is formed by the coaſt. We plied into the ſouthernmoſt of theſe bays, and caſt anchor again, about twelve o'clock, in five fathoms water, over a muddy bottom.

We obſerved on the peninſula ſeveral of the natives; and one of them came off in a ſmall canoe. Captain Cook gave this man a knife and ſome beads, with which he appeared to be well pleaſed; we made ſigns to him to bring us ſome proviſions, upon which he inſtantly quitted us, and paddled towards the ſhore. Happening to meet another man coming off, who had two dried ſalmon, he got them from him; and when he returned to our ſhip, he refuſed to give them to any body except Captain Cook. Some of our people fancied, that he aſked for him under the name of *Capitane*; but in this they were perhaps miſtaken. Others of the inhabitants came off ſoon afterwards, and gave us a few dried

fish, in exchange for such trifles as we had to barter with them. They shewed no dislike for tobacco, but they were most desirous of knives.

In the afternoon, Mr. Gore was dispatched to the peninsula, to procure wood and water; of the former of which articles, we observed great plenty upon the beach. Lieutenant Gore returned about eight o'clock in the evening, with the launch loaded with wood. He informed the Commodore, that he had found but little fresh water, and that the wood could not be procured without difficulty, on account of the boats grounding at some distance from the beach. After having continued, for some time, to stand off and on with the ships, we at length cast anchor in less than five fathoms, at the distance of half a league from the coast.

The following day, which was Sunday the 13th, a family of the natives came near the spot where our people were occupied in taking off wood. The Captain saw only the husband and wife, and their child, besides a fourth person, who was the most deformed cripple he had ever seen. The husband was nearly blind, and neither he nor his wife were such well-looking people as many of those whom we had met with on this coast: both of them had their lower lips perforated; and they were in possession of some glass beads, resembling those we had seen before among their neighbours. Iron was the article that pleased them most. For four knives, which had been formed out of an old iron hoop, the Captain obtained from them near four hundred pounds weight of fish that had been lately caught by them. Some of these were trout, and others were, with respect to size and taste, somewhat between a herring and a mullet. The Captain gave a few beads to the child, who was a female; upon which the mother immediately burst into tears, then the father, next the cripple, and at last, to add the finishing stroke to the concert, the child herself. This music, however, was not of long duration.

Before night, on the 13th, we had amply supplied the ships with wood, and had conveyed on board about

a dozen

a dozen tons of water to each. On the 14th a party was detached on ſhore to cut brooms, and likewiſe the branches of ſpruce trees for brewing beer. About twelve o'clock all our people were taken on board, for the wind freſhening had raiſed ſo heavy a ſurf on the beach, that our boats could not continue to land without extreme difficulty and danger.

As doubts were ſtill entertained, whether the coaſt, upon which we now were, belonged to an iſland or to the continent of America, Lieutenant King was diſpatched by the Commodore, with two boats well manned and armed, to make ſuch a ſearch as might tend to remove all difference of opinion on the ſubject.

Lieutenant King returned from his expedition about ſeven o'clock the next evening. The crews of the boats rowed without intermiſſion towards the land till one the next morning, when Mr. King, upon his landing, aſcended the heights, from which he could ſee the two coaſts join, and that the inlet terminated in a ſmall creek or river, before which there were banks of ſand or mud, and in every part ſhoal water. The land for ſome diſtance towards the north was low and ſwampy; then it roſe in hills; and the perfect junction of thoſe, on each ſide of the inlet, was traced without the leaſt difficulty.

From the elevated ſituation, in which Mr. King took his ſurvey of the Sound, he could diſcern many ſpacious vallies, with rivers flowing through them, well wooded, and bounded by hills of a moderate height. One of the rivers towards the north-weſt ſeemed to be very conſiderable; and he was inclined to ſuppoſe from its direction, that it diſcharged itſelf into the ſea at the head of the bay. Some of his people penetrating beyond this into the country, found the trees to be of a larger ſize the farther they proceeded.

To this inlet Captain Cook gave the name of Norton's Sound, in honour of Sir Fletcher Norton, now Lord Grantley, a near relation of Mr. King.

Captain Cook being now perfectly convinced, that Mr. Staehlin's map was extremely erroneous, and hav-

ing restored the continent of America to the space which that gentleman had occupied with his imaginary island of Alaschka, thought it now high time to quit these northerly regions, and retire to some place for the winter, where he might obtain provisions and refreshments. He did not consider Petropaulowska, or the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul in Kamtschatka, as likely to furnish a sufficient supply. He had likewise other reasons for not going thither at present; the principal of which was, his great unwillingness to remain inactive for six or seven months, which would have been the consequence of passing the winter in any of these northern countries. He at length concluded, that no situation was so convenient for our purpose as the Sandwich Islands; to them, therefore, he formed a resolution of repairing: but a supply of water being necessary before he could execute that design, he determined, with a view of procuring this essential article, to search the coast of America for a harbour, by proceeding along it to the southward. If he should not meet with success in that search, his intention was to reach Samganoodha, which was appointed for our place of rendezvous, in case the ships should happen to separate.

In the morning of the 17th of September we weighed anchor, with a light easterly breeze; and on the 18th we resumed our progress along the coast. On Wednesday the 23d, at day break, land made its appearance at the distance of six or seven leagues. From this point of view it resembled a cluster of islands; but it was found to be only one of thirty miles in extent. Captain Cook afterwards found that it was entirely unknown to the Russians, and therefore, considering it as a discovery of our own, he named it Gore's Island. It appeared to be barren and destitute of inhabitants, at least we saw none; nor did we observe such a number of birds about it as we had seen when we first discovered it: but we discovered some sea otters, an animal which we had not found to the north of this latitude.

We kept an easterly course till eight in the morning of

of the 25th, when the Resolution sprung a leak under the starboard buttock, which was so considerable as to keep one pump constantly employed. We would not venture to put the ship upon the other tack, but continued to steer towards the west till six in the evening of Saturday the 26th, when we wore and stood to the eastward, and then the leak gave us no farther trouble. This proved that it was above the water line, which gave us great satisfaction.

At length, on Friday the 2d of October, at daybreak, we saw the isle of Oonalashka, in a south-east direction. We hauled into a bay, ten miles to the westward of Samganoodha, known by the appellation of Egoochshac; but finding very deep water, we speedily left it. The natives visited us at different times, bringing with them dried salmon, and other fish, which our sailors received in exchange for tobacco. Only a few days before, every ounce of tobacco that remained in the ship had been distributed among them, and the quantity was not half sufficient to answer their demands. Notwithstanding this, so thoughtless and improvident a being is an English sailor, that they were as profuse in making their bargains, as if we had arrived at a port in Virginia; by which means, in less than two days, the value of this commodity was lowered above a thousand *per cent.*

The next day, at one o'clock in the afternoon, we anchored in the harbour of Samganoodha, and, on the morning of the 4th, the carpenters were employed in ripping off the sheathing of and under the wale of the Resolution on the starboard side. Many of the seams were found entirely open; it was therefore not to be wondered at, that so much water had got into the ship. We cleared the fish and spirit rooms, and the after-hold; and disposed things in such a manner, that, in case of any future leaks of the same nature, the water might find its way to the pumps. Besides this work, and completing our stock of water, we cleared the fore-hold, and took in a quantity of ballast.

The vegetables we had met with when we were here

before were now, for the moſt part, in a ſtate of decay. There being great plenty of berries, one-third of the people, by turns, had permiſſion to go aſhore and gather them. Conſiderable quantities of them were alſo brought to us by the inhabitants. If there were any ſeeds of the ſcurvy among the people of either ſhip, theſe berries, and the uſe of ſpruce beer, which they were allowed to drink every other day, effectually eradicated them.

We likewiſe procured abundance of fiſh; at firſt, chiefly ſalmon, both freſh and dried, which the natives brought us. Some of the freſh ſalmon was in the higheſt perfection; but there was one ſort, which, from the figure of its head, we called hook-noſed, that was but indifferent. Drawing the ſeine ſeveral times, at the head of the bay, we caught many ſalmon trout, and a halibut that weighed two hundred and fifty-four pounds. We afterwards had recourſe to hooks and lines. A boat was ſent out every morning, which ſeldom returned without eight or ten halibut, a quantity more than ſufficient to ſerve all our people. Theſe fiſh were excellent, and there were few who did not prefer them to ſalmon. Thus we not only obtained a ſupply of fiſh for preſent conſumption, but had ſome to carry with us to ſea.

Captain Cook received, on the 8th, by the hands of a native of Oonalaſhka, named Derramouſhk, a very ſingular preſent, conſidering the place we were in. It was a rye loaf, or rather a pye in the form of a loaf, as it incloſed ſome ſalmon well ſeaſoned with pepper. This man had brought a ſimilar preſent for Captain Clerke, and a note for each of the Captains, written in a character which none of us underſtood. It was natural to imagine, that theſe two preſents were from ſome Ruſſians now in our neighbourhood, and therefore the Captains ſent, by the ſame meſſenger, to theſe unknown friends, a few bottles of rum, wine and porter, which they ſuppoſed would be highly acceptable. Captain Cook alſo ſent, in company with Derramouſhk, Corporal Lediard of the marines, an intelligent man, for

for the purpose of gaining farther information; with orders, that if he met with any Russians, he should endeavour to make them understand, that we were Englishmen, the friends and allies of their nation.

On Saturday the 10th, Corporal Lediard returned with three Russian seamen, or furriers, who, with several others, resided at Egoochshac, where they had some store-houses, a dwelling-house, and a sloop of about thirty tons burden. One of these Russians was either Master or Mate of this vessel. They were all three intelligent, well-behaved men, and extremely ready to give us all the information we could desire. But, for want of an interpreter, we found it very difficult to understand each other. They appeared to have a perfect knowledge of the attempts which their countrymen had made to navigate the Frozen Ocean, and of the discoveries that had been made from Kamtschatka, by Beering, Tscherikoff, and Spangenberg. But they had not the least idea to what part of the world Mr. Stæhlin's map referred, when it was laid before them. Captain Cook pointed out Kamschatka, and some other places, upon this map, they asked him whether he had seen the islands there represented; and, on his answering in the negative, one of them put his finger upon a part of the map, where a number of islands are laid down, and said, that he had cruised there in search of land, but could never meet with any. The Captain then shewed them his own chart, and found that they were strangers to every part of the coast of America, except that which lies opposite this island.

The three Russians having remained all night with the Commodore, visited Captain Clerke the following morning, and then departed, perfectly satisfied with the reception they had met with. They promised to return in a few days, and bring with them a chart of the islands situate between Kamtschatka and Oonalashka.

In the evening of the 14th, while Captain Cook and Mr. Webber were at a village, not far from Samganoodha, a Russian landed there, who proved to be the principal person among his countrymen in this and the adja-

adjacent isles. His name was Erasim Gregorioff Sin Ismyloff. He arrived in a canoe that carried three persons, attended by twenty or thirty smaller canoes, each conducted by one man. Immediately after landing, they constructed a small tent for Ismyloff, of materials which they had brought with them, and they afterwards made others for themselves, of their canoes and paddles, which they covered with grass. Ismyloff having invited the Captain and Mr. Webber into his tent, set before them some dried salmon and berries. He appeared to be a man of sense; and the Captain felt no small mortification in not being able to converse with him, except by signs, with the assistance of figures and other characters. The Captain requested him to favour him with his company on board the next day, and accordingly he came with all his attendants. He had, indeed, moved into the neighbourhood of our station, for the express purpose of waiting upon us.

Captain Cook was in hopes of receiving from him the chart which his three countrymen had promised, but he was disappointed. However, Ismyloff assured him he should have it, and he kept his word. The Captain found him very well acquainted with the geography of those parts, and with all the discoveries which had been made in this quarter by the Russians.

Not only Ismyloff, but also the others affirmed, that they were totally unacquainted with the American continent to the northward; and that neither Lieutenant Synd, nor any other Russian, had seen it of late years. They called it by the same name which Mr. Staehlin has affixed to his large island, that is Alaschka.

In the afternoon, Ismyloff, after having dined with Captain Clerke, left us with all his retinue, but promised to return in a few days. Accordingly, on the 19th, he paid us another visit, bringing with him the charts above mentioned, which he permitted Captain Cook to copy; and the contents of which are the foundation of the following remarks.

These charts were two in number, they were both manuscrips, and bore every mark of authenticity.

One

One of them comprehended the Penſhinſkian ſea; the coaſt of Tartary, as low as the latitude of 41° north; the Kurile Iſlands, and the peninſula of Kamtſchatka. We were informed by Mr. Iſmyloff, that a great part of the ſea-coaſt of Kamtſchatka had been corrected by himſelf; and he deſcribed the inſtrument uſed by him for that purpoſe, which muſt have been a theodolite. He alſo told us, that there were only two harbours proper for ſhipping, on all the eaſtern coaſt of Kamtſchatka, viz. the bay of Awatſka, and the river Olutora, in the bottom of the gulph of the ſame name; that there was not one harbour on its weſtern coaſt; and that Yamſk was the only one, except Okotſk, on all the weſtern ſide of the Penſhinſkian ſea, till we come to the river Amur. The Kurile Iſlands contain but one harbour, and that is on the north-eaſt ſide of Mareekan; where the Ruſſians have a ſettlement.

The other chart comprehended all the diſcoveries that the Ruſſians had made to the eaſtward of Kamtſchatka, towards America. That part of the American coaſt, with which Tſcherikoff fell in, is laid down in this chart between the latitude of 58° and 58½° north, and 75° of eaſtern longitude, from Okotſk, or 218½° from Greenwich; and the place where Beering anchored in 59½° of latitude, and 63½° of longitude from Okotſk, or 207° from Greenwich. To ſay nothing of the longitude, which may, from ſeveral cauſes, be erroneous, the latitude of the coaſt, diſcovered by Beering and Tſcherikoff, particularly that part of it which was diſcovered by the latter, differs conſiderably from Mr. Muller's chart. Whether the chart now produced by Iſmyloff, or that of Muller, be moſt erroneous in this reſpect, it may be difficult to determine.

Iſmyloff continued with us till the evening of the 21ſt, when he took his final leave. Captain Cook intruſted to his care a letter to the Lords of the Admiralty, incloſing a chart of all the northern coaſts we had viſited. Iſmyloff ſaid there would be an opportunity of tranſmitting it to Kamtſchatka, or Okotſk, in the courſe of the ſucceeding ſpring; and that it would

would be at Petersburg the following winter. He gave the Captain a letter to Major Behm, Governor of Kamtschatka, who resides at Bolcheretsk in that peninsula; and another to the commanding officer at Petropaulowska.

Mr. Ismyloff seemed to possess abilities that might entitle him to a higher station than that in which we found him. He had considerable knowledge in astronomy, and in the most useful branches of the mathematics. Captain Cook made him a present of an Hadley's octant; and, though, perhaps, it was the first he had ever seen, he very quickly made himself acquainted with most of the uses to which that instrument can be applied.

On Thursday the 22d, in the morning, we made an attempt to get out to sea, with the wind at south-east, but did not succeed. In the afternoon of the 23d we were visited by one Jacob Ivanovitch Soposnicoff, a Russian, who commanded a small vessel at Oomanak. This man seemed very modest, and would drink no strong liquor, of which the other Russians, whom we had met with here, were extremely fond. He appeared to know what supplies could be obtained at the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, and the price of the various articles, more accurately than Mr. Ismyloff. But, by all accounts, every thing we should have occasion to purchase at that place was very scarce, and bore a high price. This man informed us, that he was to be at Petropaulouska in the ensuing May; and, as we understood, was to have the charge of Captain Cook's letter. He seemed very desirous of having some token from the Captain to carry to Major Behm; and, to gratify him, the Captain sent a small spying-glass.

After we had contracted an acquaintance with these Russians, several of our gentlemen, at different times, visited their settlement on the island, where they always met with friendly treatment. It consisted of a dwelling-house and two store-houses. Besides the Russians, there was a number of the Kamtschadales, and

and of the Oonalaſhkans, as ſervants to the former. Some other natives of this iſland, who appeared to be independent of the Ruſſians, lived at the ſame place. Such of them as belonged to the Ruſſians, were all of the male ſex; and they are either taken, or purchaſed from their parents when young. There were, at preſent, about twenty of theſe who could be conſidered in no other light than as children. They all reſide in the ſame houſe, the Ruſſians at the upper end, the Kamtſchadales in the middle, and the Oonalaſhkans at the lower end, where is fixed a capacious boiler for preparing their food, which principally conſiſts of fiſh, with the addition of wild roots and berries. There is no great difference between the firſt and laſt table, except what is produced by cookery, by which the Ruſſians can make indifferent things palatable. They dreſs whales fleſh in ſuch a manner as to make it very good eating; and they have a kind of pan-pudding of ſalmon-roe, beaten up fine and fried, which is a tolerable ſubſtitute for bread. They may perhaps, occaſionally, taſte real bread, or have a diſh, in which flour is one of the ingredients. If we except the juice of berries, which they generally ſip at their meals, they drink no other liquor than pure water; and it ſeems to be very fortunate for them that they have nothing ſtronger.

As the iſland furniſhes them with ſubſiſtence, ſo it does, in ſome meaſure, with clothing. This is chiefly compoſed of ſkins. The upper garment, which is made like a waggoner's frock, reaches down to the knees. Beſides this, they wear a waiſtcoat or two, a pair of breeches, a fur cap, and a pair of boots, the legs of which are formed of ſome kind of ſtrong gut, but the ſoles and upper leathers are of Ruſſian leather.

The native inhabitants of this iſland are, to all appearance, a very peaceable, inoffenſive race of people; and, in point of honeſty, they might ſerve as a pattern to the moſt civilized nations. But, from what we ſaw of their neighbours, with whom the Ruſſians are unconnected, we have ſome doubt whether this was their original diſpoſition; and are rather inclined to be of opinion,

opinion, that it is the consequence of their present state of subjection. Indeed, if we did not misunderstand the Russians, they had been under the necessity of making some severe examples before they could bring the islanders into tolerable order.

The people of Oonalashka are in general rather low of stature, but plump, and well shaped. Their necks are commonly short, and they have swarthy, chubby faces. They have black eyes, and small beards. Their hair is long, black, and straight: the men wear it loose behind, and cut before; but the women generally tie it up in a bunch.

The dress of both sexes is the same with respect to fashion, the only difference is in the materials. The frock worn by the women is made of the skins of seals; and that of the men, of the skins of birds; both reach below the knees. This constitutes the whole dress of the females. But, over the frock, the men wear another composed of gut, which water cannot penetrate; it has a hood to it, which is drawn over the head. Some of them wear boots; and all of them wear a sort of oval snouted cap, made of wood, with a rim that admits the head. They dye these caps with green and other colours; and round the upper part of the rim they fix the long bristles of some sea animal, on which glass beads are strung; and on the front is a small image or two formed of bone. They do not make use of paint; but the women puncture their faces slightly, and both sexes perforate the lower lip, in which they fix pieces of bone. But it is as uncommon here to see a man with this ornament, as to observe a woman without it. Some fix beads to the upper lip under the nostrils; and they all suspend ornaments in their ears.

Fish and other sea animals, birds, roots, berries, and even sea-weed, compose their food. They dry quantities of fish during the summer, which they lay up in small huts for their use in winter; and, probably, they preserve berries and roots for the same season of scarcity. They eat most of their provisions raw. Boiling and broiling were the only methods of cookery that we

saw

ſaw practiſed among them; and the former they, in all probability, learnt from the Ruſſians. Some have in their poſſeſſion ſmall braſs kettles; and thoſe who have not, make uſe of a flat ſtone, with ſides of clay.

Though the Ruſſians live among theſe people, they found much leſs iron in poſſeſſion of the latter, than we had met with among other tribes on the neighbouring continent of America, who had never ſeen the Ruſſians, nor, perhaps, had any intercourſe with them. Probably a few beads, and a ſmall quantity of tobacco and ſnuff, purchaſe all they have to ſpare. There are few of them that do not ſmoke and chew tobacco, and take ſnuff.

They did not appear to be very deſirous of more iron, or to want any other inſtruments, except ſewing needles, their own being formed of bone. With theſe they ſew their canoes, and make their clothes, and alſo work very curious embroidery. All ſewing is performed by the females. They are the ſhoe-makers, taylors, and boat-builders, or boat-coverers; for the men, in all probability, conſtruct the wooden frame, over which the ſkins are ſewed. They manufacture mats, and baſkets of graſs, which are both ſtrong and beautiful. There is, indeed, a neatneſs and perfection in moſt of their work, that ſhews they are neither deficient in ingenuity nor perſeverance.

We did not obſerve a fire-place in any one of their habitations. They are lighted, as well as heated, by lamps; which, though ſimple, effectually anſwer the purpoſe for which they are intended. They conſiſt of a flat ſtone, hollowed on one ſide like a plate; in the hollow part they put the oil, mixed with ſome dry graſs, which ſerves for a wick.

We ſaw no offenſive, nor even defenſive weapon among the natives of Oonalaſhka. It can ſcarcely be ſuppoſed that the Ruſſians found them in ſuch a defenceleſs ſtate; it is rather to be imagined, that, for their own ſecurity, they have diſarmed them. Political motives, likewiſe, may have induced the Ruſſians not to permit theſe iſlanders to have any large canoes;

for

for we can hardly believe they had none such originally, as we found them among all their neighbours. However, we observed none here except two or three that belonged to the Russians.

Their implements for hunting and fishing are all extremely well made of wood and bone, and are not very different from those used by the Greenlanders. The only difference is in the point of the missile dart; which, in some that we saw at this island, does not exceed an inch in length; whereas those of the Greenlanders, according to Crantz, are about eighteen inches long. Indeed these darts, as well as some others of their instruments, are extremely curious. Their darts are generally made of fir, and are about four feet in length. One end is formed of bone, into which, by means of a socket, another small piece of bone, which is barbed, is fixed, but contrived in such a manner as to be put in and taken out without trouble: this is secured to the middle of the stick by a strong, though thin piece of twine, composed of sinews. The bird, fish, or other animal, is no sooner struck, than the pointed bone slips out of the socket, but remains fixed in its body by means of a barb. The dart then serves as a float to trace the animal, and also contributes to fatigue it considerably, so that it is easily taken. They throw these darts by the assistance of a thin piece of wood, twelve or fourteen inches long; the middle of this is slightly hollowed, for the better reception of the weapon; and at the termination of the hollow, which does not extend to the end, is fixed a short pointed piece of bone, to prevent the dart from slipping. The other extremity is furnished with a hole for the reception of the fore-finger, and the sides are made to coincide with the other fingers and thumbs, in order to grasp with greater firmness. The natives throw these darts to the distance of eighty or ninety yards, with great force and dexterity. They are exceedingly expert in striking fish, both in the sea, and in rivers. They also use hooks and lines, nets and wears. The

lines

lines are formed of twisted sinews, and the hooks of bone.

Whales, porpoises, grampuses, halibut, sword-fish, salmon, trout, cod, soals, flat-fish, and several other sorts, are found here; and there may be many more that we had not an opportunity of seeing. Salmon and halibut appear to be in the greatest plenty; and on them the people of these isles principally subsist; at least, they were the only sort of fish, except cod, that we observed to be laid up for their winter store.

Water fowls are neither found here in such numbers, nor in such variety, as in the northern parts of the Atlantic Ocean. However, there are some in these parts, that we do not recollect to have seen in other countries.

The few land-birds seen by us are the same with those of Europe; but there were probably many others which we had no opportunity of observing. A very beautiful bird was shot in the woods at Norton Sound; which, we understand, is sometimes found in England, and known by the appellation of chatterer. Our people saw other small birds there, but in no great abundance or variety; such as the bullfinch, the woodpecker, the yellow-finch, and tit-mouse.

It is remarkable, that there are no trees growing on this part of the American continent, nor upon any of the adjacent isles; but plants are to be found in great variety at Oonalashka. Several of them are such as we meet with in Europe, and also in Newfoundland, and other parts of America; and others of them, which are likewise found in Kamtschatka, are eaten by the natives both there and here.

There were several plants which were serviceable to us, but are not used either by the Russians or the natives. These were pea-tops, wild purslain, a sort of scurvy-grass, cresses, and a few others. We found all these very palatable, whether dressed in soups or in sallads. The vallies and low grounds abound with grass, which grows very thick, and to a greath length.

The Oonalashkans inter their dead on the tops of hills, and raise over the grave a little hillock. One of the

the natives, who attended Captain Cook in a walk into the country, pointed out several of these repositories of the dead. There was one of them, by the side of a road, that had a heap of stones over it; and all who passed it added a stone to the heap. In the country were seen several stone hillocks, that seemed to have been artificially raised. Some of them were, to appearance, of great antiquity.

We are unacquainted with the notions of these people respecting the Deity, and a future state. We are equally uninformed with regard to their diversions, having seen nothing that could give us any insight into either.

From the observations, made during our continuance in the harbour of Samganoodha, its latitude is 53° 5′ north, and its longitude 193° 29′ 45″ east.

On Monday the 26th of October, we sailed from Samganoodha harbour, when the wind being southerly, we stood to the westward. We intended to proceed to the Sandwich Islands, in order to pass a few of the winter months there, if we should meet with the necessary refreshments, and then advance in our progress to Kamtschatka, so as to arrive there about the middle of May in the ensuing year. This being determined on, the Commodore gave Captain Clerke instructions for proceeding in case of separation; Sandwich Islands being appointed for the first place of rendezvous; and, for the second, Petropaulowska, in Kamtschatka.

At half after six, in the morning of the 29th, we discovered land, which we supposed to be the island Amoghta. At eight, the wind having veered to the westward, we could not weather the island, and gave over plying; bearing away for Oonalashka, in order to go to the north of it, not daring, in so hard a gale of wind, to attempt a passage to the south-east of it.

We got sight of Oonalashka about three in the afternoon, when we shortened sail, and hauled the wind, being unable to get through the passage before night. On the 20th, at day break, having a hard gale with heavy

heavy ſqualls, we bore away under courſes and close-reefed topſails. About noon we were in the middle of the ſtrait, and got through it at three in the afternoon.

On the 2d of November, ſeveral guns were fired by the Diſcovery, which we immediately anſwered. We loſt ſight of her at eight, and ſaw no more of her till eight the next morning. She joined us at ten, when the height of the gale being over, we made ſail, and purſued our courſe to the ſouthward.

In the afternoon of Saturday the 7th, Capt. Clerke came on board with ſome melancholy intelligence. He informed us that the ſecond night after we departed from Samganoodha, the main tack of the Diſcovery gave way, by which accident one man was killed, and the boatſwain, with two or three others, wounded. He added, that his ſails and rigging received conſiderable damage on the 3d, and that he fired the guns as a ſignal to bring to.

We ſtruggled with heavy ſqualls till the 25th, when at day break, land was diſcovered. We ſtood for it, and at eight o'clock we perceived that our diſcovery of the group of Sandwich Iſlands had been very imperfect, thoſe which we had viſited in our progreſs northward, all lying to the leeward of our preſent ſtation.

An elevated hill appeared in the country, whoſe ſummit roſe above the clouds. The land, from this hill, fell in a gradual ſlope, terminating in a ſteep rocky coaſt; the ſea breaking againſt it in a moſt dreadful ſurf. Unable to weather the iſland, we bore up, and ranged to the weſtward. We perceived people on many parts of the ſhore; and ſeveral houſes and plantations. The country appeared to be well ſupplied with wood and water, and ſtreams were ſeen in various places falling into the ſea.

It being of the utmoſt importance to procure a proper ſupply of proviſions at theſe iſlands, which could not poſſibly be accompliſhed, if a free trade with the natives were to be permitted, Captain Cook publiſhed

an

an order, prohibiting all persons on board the ships from trading, except those appointed by himself and Captain Clerke; and these were under the limitations of trading only for provisions.

About noon, the nearest shore was three miles distant, in the latitude of 20° 59′, and the longitude of 203° 50′. Some canoes came off, and when they got along side, many of the conductors of them came into the ship without hesitation. Our visiters supplied us with a quantity of cuttle fish, in exchange for nails and iron. They brought but little fruit or roots, but said they had plenty of them on their island, as well as of hogs and fowls. We traded with them till about four in the afternoon, at which time they had disposed of all their cargoes; and, not expressing any inclination to fetch more, we immediately made sail.

On the 30th, in the afternoon, being off the north-east end of the island, some more canoes came off. In the evening, another island was seen to the windward, called *Owhyhee*. That which we had been off for some days, was called *Mowee*.

At eight in the morning, on the 1st of December, perceiving that we could fetch Owhyhee, we stood for it, when our visiters from Mowee thought proper to embark in their canoes and went ashore.

On the 2d of December, in the morning, to our great surprize, we saw the summits of the mountains covered with snow. Drawing near the shore, some of the natives approached us, who appeared a little shy at first, but we prevailed on some of them to come on board; and, at length induced them to return to the island, to bring a supply of what we wanted. We had plenty of company after these had reached the shore, who brought us a tolerable supply of pigs, fruit, and roots. We traded with them till about six in the evening, when we stood off, in order to ply to windward round the island. We had now procured pork, fruit, and roots, sufficient to supply us for four or five days. We therefore made sail, and still plyed to windward.

Cap-

Captain Cook having procured a great quantity of ſugar cane, and having, upon a trial, diſcovered that a decoction of it made very palatable beer, he ordered ſome of it to be brewed for our general uſe; but, on the broaching of the caſks, not one of the crew would even taſte it. The Commodore having no other motive in preparing this beverage, than that of preſerving our ſpirits for a colder climate, neither exerted his authority, nor had recourſe to perſuaſion, to induce them to drink it; knowing, that ſo long as we could be plentifully ſupplied with other vegetables, there was no danger of the ſcurvy. But, that he might not be diſappointed, he ordered that no grog ſhould be ſerved in either of the ſhips. The Commodore and his officers continued to drink this ſugar-cane beer, whenever materials could be procured for brewing it. Some hops, which we had on board, improved it much; and it was doubtleſs, extremely wholeſome, though the Captain's inconſiderate crew could not be perſuaded but it was injurious to their health.

Having kept at ſome diſtance from the coaſt, till the 13th, we ſtood in again; and after trading with the natives who came off to us, returned to ſea. We alſo intended to have approached the ſhore again on the 15th, to get a freſh ſupply of fruit and roots; but the wind happening to be then at ſouth-eaſt, we embraced the opportunity of ſtretching to the eaſtward, in order to get round to the ſouth-eaſt end of the iſland. The wind continued at ſouth-eaſt the greateſt part of the 16th; on the 17th it was variable; and on the 18th it was continally varying.

At noon, on the 20th, the ſouth-eaſt point bore ſouth, at the diſtance of three leagues, and we were viſited in the afternoon by ſome of the natives, who came off in their canoes, bringing with them pigs and plantains. The latter were highly acceptable, we having been without vegetables for ſome days; but this was ſo inconſiderable a ſupply (hardly ſufficient for one day) that we ſtood in the next morning, till within about four miles of the land, when a number of

of canoes came off, laden with provisions. The people in them continued trading with us till four o'clock in the afternoon; at which time we had got a good supply; we therefore made sail, stretching off to the northward.

We met with less reserve and suspicion in our intercourse with the people of this island, than we had ever experienced among any tribe of savages. They frequently sent up into the ship, the articles they meant to barter, and afterwards came in themselves, to traffic on the quarter deck. The inhabitants of Otaheite, whom we have so often visited, have not that confidence in our integrity. Whence it may be inferred, that those of Owhyhee are more faithful in their dealings than the Otaheitans.

It is but justice to observe, that they never attempted to over-reach us in exchanges, nor to commit a single theft. They perfectly understand trading, and clearly comprehended the reason of our plying upon the coast. For, though they brought off plenty of pigs, and other provisions, they were particular in keeping up their price; and, rather than dispose of them at an under value, would carry them to shore again.

After purchasing what the natives had brought off, we made sail, and at noon were in the latitude of 19° 55′, and in the longitude of 205° 3′.

Before day-break, on the 1st of January, 1779, the atmosphere was laden with heavy clouds, and the new year was ushered in with a heavy rain. We had a light breeze southerly with some calms. At ten the rain ceased, the sky became clear, and the wind freshened.

Being now about four or five miles from the shore, some canoes arrived with hogs, fruit, and roots. We traded with the people in the canoes, till three in the afternoon, when being pretty well supplied, we made sail.

The 2d, 3d, and 4th, were passed in running down the south-east side of the island, standing off and on during

during the nights, and employing part of each day in lying to, to give the natives an opportunity of trading with us. They frequently came off to us, at the diſtance of five leagues from the ſhore, but never brought much with them at thoſe times, either from a fear of loſing their articles in the ſea, or from the uncertainty of a market. We procured a quantity of ſalt, of a moſt excellent quality.

Having now got a quantity of ſalt, we purchaſed only ſuch hogs as were large enough for ſalting, refuſing all thoſe that were under ſize. But we could ſeldom procure any that exceeded the weight of ſixty pounds. Happily for us, we had ſtill ſome vegetables remaining. Indeed, from the appearance of this part of the country, it ſeemed incapable of affording them. Evident marks preſented themſelves of its having been laid waſte by a volcano; and that, though we had not ſeen any thing of the kind, the devaſtation it had made in the neighbourhood was but too viſible.

We were again viſited by the natives next morning. They came laden with the ſame articles of commerce as before. Being not far from the ſhore, Captain Cook ſent Mr. Bligh in a boat, to ſound the coaſt, and alſo to go aſhore in ſearch of freſh water. He reported, on his return, that within two cables length of the ſhore, he found no ſoundings with a line of one hundred and ſixty fathoms; that, on the land, he could diſcover no ſtream or ſpring; that there was ſome rain water in holes upon the rocks, which the ſpray of the ſea had rendered brackiſh; that the whole ſurface of the country was compoſed of ſlags and aſhes, interſperſed with a few plants.

On the 10th, in the morning, we had light airs from the north-weſt, and calms; and at four o'clock in the morning of the 11th, the wind being at weſt, we approached the land, in expectation of getting ſome refreſhments. The natives, ſeeing us ſo near them, began to come off, and we continued trading with them the whole day, though we procured but a very ſcanty

ſupply, many of thoſe who came off in their canoes not having a ſingle thing to barter. From this circumſtance, it appeared, that this part of the iſland was extremely poor, and had already furniſhed us with every thing they could ſpare.

On the 15th, the weather was remarkably fine; and on the 16th, at day-break, ſeeing the appearance of a bay, the Commodore ſent Mr. Bligh with a boat from each ſhip, to ſurvey it, being now about three leagues off.

Canoes arrived from all quarters; inſomuch that, by ten o'clock in the morning, there were at leaſt a thouſand about the two ſhips, crowded with people, and laden with hogs and other proviſions. We were perfectly convinced of their having no hoſtile intentions; not a ſingle perſon having a weapon with him of any ſort. Trade and curioſity were their only inducements to viſit us. Such numbers as we had frequently on board, it might be expected that ſome of them ſhould betray a thieviſh diſpoſition. One of them took a boat's rudder from the ſhip, and was not detected till it was too late to recover it. Captain Cook imagined this to be a proper opportunity to ſhew theſe iſlanders the uſe of fire-arms; two or three muſquets, and as many four pounders, were, by his orders, fired over the canoe which went away with the rudder. But, as the ſhot was not intended to take effect, the ſurrounding multitude were more ſurprized than frightened.

Mr. Bligh, when he returned in the evening, reported, that he had found a bay with good anchorage, and freſh water, in a deſirable ſituation. Into this bay, the Commodore determined to take his ſhips, in order to refit, and ſupply ourſelves with refreſhments. At the approach of night, the moſt conſiderable part of our viſitors retired to the ſhore; but many, at their own earneſt requeſt, were permitted to ſleep on board. Curioſity, at leaſt with ſome of them, was not the only motive; for ſeveral articles were miſſing the next morning; in conſequence of which, the Commodore came

came to a resolution not to admit so many on any future night.

On the 17th, at eleven in the forenoon, we anchored in the bay, called by the natives *Karakakooa*, within a quarter of a mile of the north-east shore. After we were moored, the ships continued much crowded with the natives, and surrounded by a vast multitude of canoes. In the course of our voyages, we had no where seen such vast numbers of people assembled at one place. Besides those who visited us in canoes, all the shore was covered with spectators, and hundreds were swimming about the ships like shoals of fish. We were struck with the singularity of this scene; and few of us lamented that we had not succeeded in our late endeavours to find a northern passage homeward. To this disappointment we were indebted for re-visiting the Sandwich Islands, and for enriching our voyage with a discovery, in many respects, the most important that has been made by Europeans in the Pacific Ocean.

BOOK V.

JOURNAL OF THE TRANSACTIONS ON RETURNING TO THE SANDWICH ISANDS.

THE bay of Karakakooa is situated in the district of Akona, on the west side of the island of Owhyhee. It extends about a mile in depth, and is bounded by two points of land, bearing south-east and north-west from each other, at the distance of half a league. The north point is flat and barren, on which is situated the village of Kowrowa. A more considerable village, called Kakooa, stands in the bottom of the bay, near a grove of stately cocoa trees. A high rocky cliff, inaccessible from the sea shore, runs between them. Near the

the coaſt, on the ſouth ſide, the land has a rugged appearance: beyond which the country gradually riſes, and abounds with cultivated incloſures, and groves of cocoa trees. The habitations of the people are ſcattered about in great plenty. Round the bay the ſhore is covered with a black coral rock, except at Kakooa, where there is an excellent ſandy beach, with a *morai* at one extremity, and a ſpring of freſh water at the other. We moored at the north ſide of this bay, and within a quarter of a mile from the ſhore.

The inhabitants, perceiving our intention to anchor in the bay, came off in aſtoniſhing numbers, expreſſing their joy by ſinging, ſhouting, and the moſt extravagant geſtures. The decks, ſides, and riggings of our ſhips were covered with them, Women and boys, who were unable to procure canoes, came ſwimming round us in great multitudes, ſome of whom, not finding room to get on board, amuſed themſelves the whole day by playing in the water.

One of the chiefs, who viſited the Reſolution, was named Pareea. Though a young man, we ſoon diſcovered him to be a perſon of great authority. Some preſents from the Commodore attached him to our intereſts, and we found him exceedingly uſeful to us. Before we had been long at anchor, the Diſcovery had ſo many people hanging on one ſide, that ſhe was obſerved to heel conſiderably; and our people found it impoſſible to prevent the crowds from preſſing into her. Captain Cook, apprehenſive that ſhe might receive ſome injury, communicated his fears to Pareea, who inſtantly cleared the ſhip of its incumbrances, and diſperſed the canoes that ſurrounded her.

Mr. King went on ſhore the next morning, with a guard of eight marines, having received orders to erect the obſervatory in a proper ſituation; by which me ns the waterers, and other working parties on ſhore, might be ſuperintended and protected. Obſerving a convenient ſpot for this purpoſe, almoſt in the center of the village, Pareea immediately offered to exerciſe his power in our behalf, and propoſed that ſome

ſome houſes ſhould be taken down, that our obſervations might not be obſtructed. This generous offer, however, was declined, and we made choice of a potatoe field, which was granted us moſt readily; and to prevent the intruſion of the natives, the place was conſecrated by the prieſts, by placing their wands round the wall which incloſed it.

This interdiction the natives call *taboo*, a term frequently repeated by theſe iſlanders, and ſeemed to be a word of extenſive operation. In this inſtance it procured us more privacy than we could have wiſhed. No canoes attempted to land near us; the natives only ſat on the wall, not daring to come within the *tabooed* ſpace without obtaining our permiſſion. The men, indeed, at our requeſt, would bring proviſions into the field; but our utmoſt endeavours were ineffectual to induce the women to approach us. Preſents were tried, but without ſucceſs.

This circumſtance afforded great amuſement to our friends on board, whither multitudes of people (particularly women) continually flocked; inſomuch that they were frequently obliged to clear the veſſel, in order to have room to perform their neceſſary duties. Two or three hundred women were ſometimes obliged to jump, at once, into the water; where they continued to ſwim and play till they could be re-admitted.

Nothing material happened on board till the 24th. The caulkers were employed on the ſides of the ſhips, and the rigging was repaired. The ſalting of hogs was alſo a principal object of the Commodore's attention; and we had improved in this operation ſince our former voyages.

To cure the fleſh of animals, in tropical climates, by ſalting, has long been thought impracticable; putrefaction making ſo rapid a progreſs, as not to allow the ſalt to take effect before the meat gets tainted. Captain Cook appears to be the firſt navigator who has attempted to make experiments relative to this buſineſs. His firſt attempts in 1774, in his ſecond voyage to the Pacific Ocean, ſo far ſucceeded,

as to convince him of the error of the general opinion. As his present voyage was likely to be protracted a year beyond the time that provisions had been supplied for the ships, he was obliged to contrive some method of procuring subsistence for the crews, or relinquish the prosecution of his discoveries. He therefore renewed his attempts, and his most sanguine expectations were answered.

We had not been long settled at the observatory, before we discovered the habitations of a society of priests. Their huts were erected round a pond, inclosed within a grove of cocoa trees, by which they were separated from the beach and the village, and gave the situation an air of religious retirement. Captain Cook being made acquainted with these circumstances, he was determined to visit them; and, expecting the manner of his reception would be singular, he took Mr. Webber with him, to enable him to represent the ceremony in a drawing.

When he arrived at the beach, he was conducted to *Harre-no-Orono*, or the house of Orono. On his approaching this sacred place, he was seated at the foot of a wooden idol. He was then arrayed in red cloth, and Kaireekeea, assisted by twelve priests, presented a pig with the usual solemnities. After this ceremony, the pig was strangled, and thrown into the embers of a fire prepared for that purpose. When the hair was singed off, a second offering was made, and the chanting repeated as before; after which, the dead pig was held for some time under Captain Cook's nose, and then laid with a cocoa nut at his feet.

While we continued in the bay, whenever the Commodore came on shore, he was preceded by one of these priests, who proclaimed the landing of the *Orono*, and ordered the inhabitants to prostrate themselves. He was constantly attended by the same person on the water, where he was stationed in the bow of the boat, having a wand in his hand, to give notice of his approach to the natives, who were in canoes; on which

which they instantly ceased paddling, and fell on their faces till he had passed.

But their civilities extended beyond parade and ceremony: our party, on shore were daily supplied by them with hogs and vegetables, sufficient for our subsistence, and to spare; and canoes laden with provisions, were as regularly sent off to the ships. Nothing was demanded in return, nor was the most distant hint ever given that any compensation was expected. Their manner of conferring favours, appeared more like the discharge of a religious duty, than to result from mere liberality. On asking to whom we were indebted for all this munificence, we were informed, that it was at the expence of Kaoo, the chief priest, and grandfather to Kaireekeea, who was then in the suit of the sovereign of the island.

We had, indeed, less reason to be satisfied with the behaviour of the warrior chiefs than with that of the priests. In our intercourse with the former, they were always sufficiently attentive to their own interests; and, besides their propensity to stealing, which may admit of palliation from its universality in those seas, they had other artifices equally dishonourable. The following is one instance, in which we discovered, with regret, that our friend Koah, who had been introduced to us by Pareea, was a party principally concerned.

The chiefs, who made us presents of hogs, were always generously rewarded; in consequence of which, we were supplied with more than we could consume. On these occasions, Koah, who constantly attended us, usually petitioned for those that we did not absolutely want, and they were given him of course. A pig was one day presented to us by a man whom Koah introduced as a chief, which we knew to be the pig that had, a short time before, been given to Koah. Suspecting we had been imposed upon, we found, on farther inquiry, that the pretended chief was one of the common people; and, from other concurrent circumstances, we were perfectly convinced that, in

many inſtances, we had been the dupes of ſimilar impoſition.

On Sunday the 24th, we were not a little ſurpriſed to find, that no canoes were permitted to put off, and that the natives confined themſelves to their houſes. At length, however, we were informed, that the bay was *tabooed*, and that all intercourſe with us was interdicted, on account of the arrival of Terreeoboo, their king. Not apprehending an accident of this kind, the ſhips were deprived of their uſual ſupply of vegetables.

On Monday the 25th, in the morning, we endeavoured by threats and promiſes, to induce the inhabitants to approach us. At length, ſome of them were venturing to put off, and a chief was obſerved to be very active in driving them away. In order to make him deſiſt, a muſquet was inſtantly fired over his head, which operated as it was intended, and refreſhments were to be had as uſual. In the afternoon, the ſhips were privately viſited by Terreeoboo, attended only by one canoe, which had his wife and family on board. After ſtaying till almoſt ten o'clock, he returned to the village of Kowrowa.

About noon the next day, the king, in a large canoe, with ſome attendants in two others, paddled from the village, in great ſtate, towards the ſhips. Their appearance was noble and magnificent. Terreeoboo, and his chiefs, were in the firſt canoe, arrayed in feathered cloaks and helmets, and armed with ſpears and daggers. In the ſecond came Kaoo, the chief prieſt, together with his brethren, having their idols diſplayed on red cloth. Theſe idols were figures of an enormous ſize, made of wicker-work, and curiouſly ornamented with ſmall feathers of a variety of colours. Their eyes were large pearl oyſters, with a black nut placed in the center; a double row of the fangs of dogs was fixed in each of their mouths, which, as well as the reſt of their features, appeared ſtrangely diſtorted. The third canoe was laden with hogs and vegetables. As they advanced, the prieſts, in the ſecond canoe, chanted

chanted their hymns with great ſolemnity. After paddling round the veſſels, they did not come on board, as we expected, but made immediately towards the ſhore, at the beach where we were ſtationed.

When Mr. King beheld them approaching, he ordered our little guard to receive the king; and Captain Cook, ſeeing that he intended to go on ſhore, went thither alſo, and landed almoſt at the ſame inſtant. We uſhered them into the tent, and the king had hardly been ſeated, when he roſe up, and gracefully threw over the Captain's ſhoulders, the rich feathered cloak that he himſelf wore, placed a helmet on his head, and preſented him with a curious fan. Five or ſix other cloaks, of great beauty and value, were ſpread at the Commodore's feet.

Four hogs were then brought forward, by the king's attendants, together with bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and ſugar-canes. Then followed the ceremony of Terreeoboo's changing names with Captain Cook; the ſtrongeſt pledge of friendſhip among all the iſlanders of the Pacific Ocean. A ſolemn proceſſion now advanced, conſiſting of prieſts, preceded by a venerable old perſonage, followed by a train of people leading large hogs; others being laden with potatoes, plantains, &c. We could inſtantly perceive, by the countenance and geſtures of Kaireekeea, that the old man who headed the proceſſion was the chief prieſt, on whoſe bounty we were told we had ſo long ſubſiſted. He wrapped a piece of red cloth round the ſhoulders of Captain Cook, and, in the uſual form, preſented him a pig. He was then ſeated next the king, and Kaireekeea, and his attendants began their vocal ceremonies, Kaoo and the chiefs aſſiſting in the reſponſes.

The formalities of the meeting being ended, Captain Cook conducted Teereeoboo, and ſeveral of his chiefs, on board the Reſolution. They were received with every poſſible attention and reſpect; and the Commodore, as a compenſation for the feathered cloak, put a linen ſhirt upon the ſovereign, and girt his own

hanger round him. Kaoo, and about half a dozen other chiefs remained on ſhore.

All this time, not a canoe was permitted to appear in the bay, and thoſe natives who did not confine themſelves to their huts, lay proſtrate on the ground. Before the king quitted the Reſolution, he granted leave for the natives to trade with the ſhips, as uſual; but the women (we know not on what account) were ſtill interdicted by the *taboo*; that is, to remain at home, and not have any kind of intercourſe with us.

The behaviour of the inhabitants was ſo civil and inoffenſive, that all apprehenſions of danger were totally vaniſhed. We truſted ourſelves amongſt them at all times, and upon all occaſions, without the leaſt heſitation. The officers ventured frequently up the country, either ſingly, or in ſmall parties, and ſometimes continued out the whole night. To relate all the inſtances of generoſity and civility, which we experienced upon theſe occaſions, would require volumes. In all places, the people flocked about us, anxious to afford every aſſiſtance in their power, and appeared highly gratified if we condeſcended to accept of their ſervices. Variety of innocent arts were practiſed to attract our notice, or to delay our departure.

But though their gentleneſs and hoſpitality were pleaſing to us, they were addicted to ſtealing, like all the other iſlanders of thoſe ſeas. This was a diſtreſſing circumſtance, and ſometimes obliged us to exerciſe ſeverity, which we ſhould have been happy to have avoided, if it had not been eſſentially neceſſary. Some expert ſwimmers were one day detected under the ſhips, drawing out the filling nails from the ſheathing, which they ingeniouſly performed with a flint ſtone faſtened to the end of a ſhort ſtick. This practice was ſo injurious to our veſſels, that we fired ſmall ſhot at the offenders; but that they eaſily evaded, by diving under the ſhip's bottom. It therefore became highly neceſſary to make an example of one of them, by flogging him on board the Diſcovery.

A large party of gentlemen, from both ſhips, ſet

out, about this time, on an excurſion into the country, in order to examine its natural productions.

William Watman, a ſeaman of the gunner's crew, died on the 28th. This event is the more particularly mentioned, as death had hitherto been uncommon amongſt us. He was a man in years, and much reſpected for his attachment to Captain Cook. He had ſerved twenty-one years as a marine, and then entered as a ſeaman in 1772, on board the Reſolution, and ſerved with the Commodore in his voyage towards the ſouth pole. On their return, he got admittance into Greenwich Hoſpital, through the intereſt of Captain Cook, at the ſame time with himſelf; and, anxious to follow the fortunes of his benefactor, he alſo quitted it with him, on his appointment to the command of the preſent expedition. He had been often ſubject to ſlight fevers, in the courſe of the voyage, and was infirm when we arrived in the bay; where, having been ſent for a few days on ſhore, he thought himſelf perfectly reſtored, and requeſted to return on board. His requeſt was complied with; but the day following he had a ſtroke of the palſy, which, in two days afterwards, put a period to his life.

At the requeſt of Terreeoboo, the remains of this honeſt ſeaman were buried on the *morai*; the ceremony being performed with great ſolemnity. Kaoo and his brethren were preſent at the funeral, who behaved with great decorum, and paid due attention while the ſervice was performing. On our beginning to fill up the grave, they approached it with great awe, and threw in a dead pig, together with ſome cocoa-nuts and plantains. For three ſucceſſive nights they ſurrounded it, ſacrificing hogs, and reciting hymns and prayers till morning.

We erected a poſt at the head of the grave, and nailed thereon a piece of board; on which was inſcribed the name and age of the deceaſed, and the day of his departure from this life. Theſe they aſſured us they would not remove, and they will probably be permitted to remain, ſo long as ſuch frail materials can endure.

Our ſhips were much in want of fuel, therefore Cap-

Captain Cook desired Mr. King to treat with the priests, for the purchase of the rail on the *morai*. Mr. King had his doubts about the decency of this overture, and apprehended that the bare mention of it might be deemed impious; but in this he was exceedingly mistaken. They expressed no kind of surprize at the application, and the wood was delivered without the least stipulation.

The king, and his chiefs, had, for some time, been very importunate to know the time of our departure. Mr. King's curiosity was excited, from this circumstance, to know the opinion these people had entertained of us, and what they supposed to be the objects of our voyage. He took considerable pains to satisfy himself on these points; but the only information he could get was, that they supposed we had left our native country on account of the scantiness of provisions, and that we had visited them for the sole purpose of filling our bellies. This conclusion was natural enough, considering the meagre appearance of some of our crew, the voracity with which we devoured their fresh provisions, and our anxiety to purchase as much of it as we were able. One circumstance may be added to these, which puzzled them exceedingly, that of our having no women with us.

We had now continued sixteen days in the bay, during which time our consumption of hogs and vegetables had been so enormous, that we need not be surprised at their wishing to see us take our leave. But Terreeoboo had, perhaps, no other view, in his enquiries, than a desire of having sufficient notice, to prepare suitable presents for us at our departure; for, when we informed him of our intention to quit the island in two days, a kind of proclamation was immediately made, requiring the natives to bring in their hogs and vegetables, for Terreeoboo to present to the *Orono*.

The carpenters which had been sent up the country, to cut planks for the head rail-work of the Resolution, had now been gone three days; and, not having heard from

from them, we began to be alarmed for their ſafety. We expreſſed our apprehenſions to old Kaoo, who appeared equally concerned with ourſelves; but while we were planning meaſures with him, for ſending proper perſons after them, they all ſafely arrived. They went farther into the country than they expected, before they found any trees ſuitable for their purpoſe. This circumſtance, together with the badneſs of the roads, and the difficulty of conveying the timber to the ſhips, had ſo long detained them. They beſtowed high commendations on their guides, who not only ſupplied them with proviſions, but faithfully protected their tools.

The 4th of February being fixed for our departure, Terreeoboo invited Captain Cook and Mr. King to attend him, on the 3d, to Kaoo's reſidence. On our arrival there, we ſaw large quantities of cloth lie ſcattered on the ground; abundance of red and yellow feathers, faſtened to the fibres of cocoa-nut huſks; and plenty of hatchets and iron ware, which had been received from us in barter. Not far from theſe was depoſited an immenſe quantity of various kinds of vegetables; and, at a little diſtance, a large herd of hogs. We ſuppoſed, at firſt, that the whole was intended as a preſent for us; but we were informed, by Kaireekeea, that it was a tribute to the king, from the inhabitants of that diſtrict. And, we were no ſooner ſeated, than the bundles were brought, and laid ſeverally at Terreeoboo's feet; and the cloth, feathers, and iron, were diſplayed before him.

The king was perfectly ſatisfied with this mark of duty from his people; and ſelected about a third of the iron utenſils, a third of the feathers, and ſome pieces of cloth; he ordered theſe to be ſet aſide by themſelves; and the remainder of the cloth, hogs, vegetables, &c. were afterwards preſented to Captain Cook and Mr. King. The value and magnitude of this preſent far exceeded any thing that we had met with. The whole was immediately conveyed on board. The large hogs were ſelected, in order to be ſalted for ſea ſtore; but

but the ſmaller pigs, and the vegetables, were divided between the crews.

We left the *morai*, and got our obſervatories on board. The *taboo* was removed, and, with it, its magical effects. As ſoon as we had quitted the place, the people ruſhed in, and vigilantly ſearched, hoping to find ſome valuable articles left behind. Mr. King being the laſt on ſhore, and waiting for the return of the boat, the inhabitants crowded about him, and having prevailed on him to ſit down among them, expreſſed their regret at our ſeparation. It was even with difficulty that they would ſuffer him to depart. He was, indeed, highly eſteemed among them, as will appear from the following relation.

Having had, while we were in the bay, the command of the party on ſhore, he became more acquainted with the natives, and they with him, than thoſe who were required to be on board. He experienced great kindneſs and civility from the inhabitants in general, but the friendſhip ſhewn by the prieſts was conſtant and unbounded.

He was anxious to conciliate their eſteem; in which he ſo happily ſucceeded, that, when they were acquainted with the time of our departure, he was urged to remain behind, and received overtures of the moſt flattering kind. When he endeavoured to excuſe himſelf, by alledging, that Captain Cook would not permit it, they propoſed to conduct him to the mountains, and there conceal him till the departure of the ſhips. On Mr. King's aſſuring them, that the Captain would not ſail without him, the king and Kaoo repaired to Captain Cook, (whom they ſuppoſed to be his father) formally requeſting that he might be ſuffered to remain behind. The Commodore, unwilling to give a poſitive refuſal to a propoſal ſo generouſly intended, aſſured them, that he could not then part with him; but he ſhould return thither the next year, when he would endeavour to oblige them.

On Thurſday the 4th of February, early in the morning, we unmoored, and the Reſolution and Dis-

covery

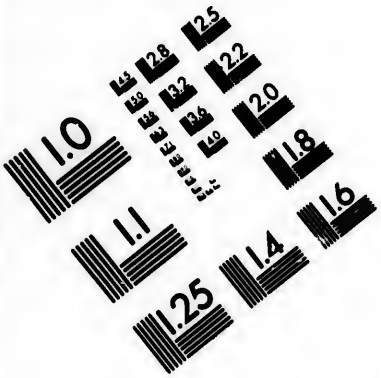
covery ſailed out of the bay; attended by a vaſt number of canoes. It was Captain Cook's intention to finiſh the ſurvey of Owhyhee, before he went to the other iſlands, hoping to meet with a road more ſheltered than Karakakooa Bay; and, if he ſhould not ſucceed here, he meant to examine the ſouth-eaſt part of Mowee, where he had been informed, there was a moſt excellent harbour.

On the 5th, and the following day, we had calm weather, and conſequently our progreſs was but ſlow.

The weather became gloomy in the afternoon of the 6th, and ſuch violent guſts of wind blew off the land, that we were obliged to take in all the ſails, and bring to, under the mizen ſtay-ſail.

The weather became more moderate in the evening, and we again made ſail; but it blew ſo violently about midnight, as to ſplit the fore and main-top-ſails. We bent freſh ſails in the morning of the 7th, and had a light breeze, and fair weather. A gale of wind coming on at midnight, we were obliged to double reef the top-ſails. At day-break, on the 8th, we found that the foremoſt had again given way; the fiſhes being ſprung, and the parts ſo very defective, as to make it abſolutely neceſſary to unſtep the maſt. Captain Cook, for ſome time, heſitated, whether he ſhould return to Karakakooa, or take the chance of finding a harbour in the iſlands to leeward. The bay was not ſo commodious, but that a better might probably be met with, either for repairing the maſts, or procuring refreſhments; the latter of which, it was imagined, the neighbourhood of Karakakooa had lately been pretty well drained of. It was, on the other hand, conſidered as an imprudent ſtep, to leave a tolerable good harbour, which, once loſt, could not be regained, for the mere poſſibility of meeting with a better; eſpecially as the failure of ſuch a contingency might have deprived us of any reſource.

Variable winds, and a ſtrong current to the northward, retarded our progreſs in our return; and, in the evening of the 9th, about eight o'clock, it blew very hard



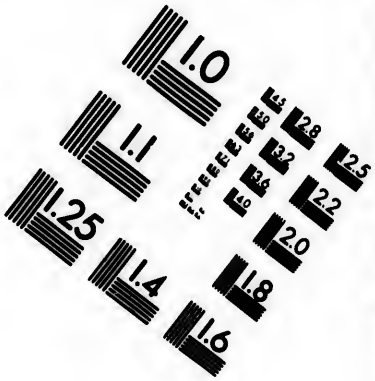
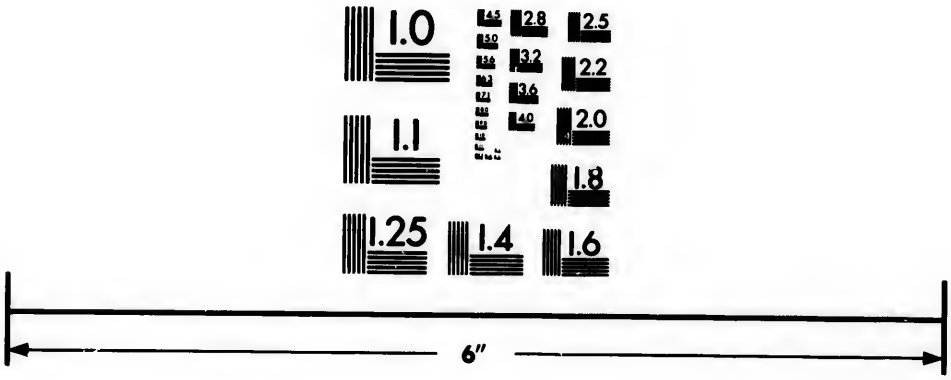
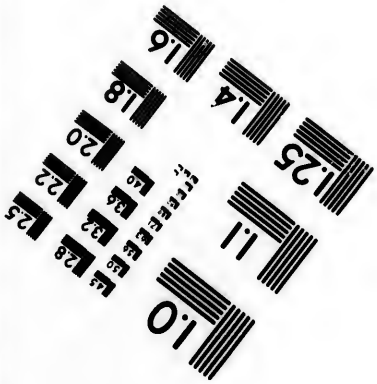


IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)





Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503


2.8
2.5
3.2
3.6
2.2
2.0
1.8


1.0

hard from the ſouth-eaſt, which occaſioned us to cloſe reef the top-ſails. Early in the morning of the 10th, in a heavy ſquall, we found ourſelves cloſe in with the breakers, to the northward of the weſt point of Owhyhee. We had juſt room to avoid them, and fired ſeveral guns to alarm the Diſcovery, and apprize her of the danger.

The weather, in the forenoon, was very moderate, and a few canoes ventured to come off to us; when thoſe on board informed us, that much miſchief had been occaſioned by the late ſtorms, and that a great many canoes had been loſt. We kept beating to windward the remainder of the day; and, in the evening, were within a mile of the bay; but we ſtood off and on till day-light the next morning, when we anchored in our old ſtation.

The whole of the 11th, and part of the 12th of February, we were engaged in getting out the foremaſt, and conveying it on ſhore. Not only the head of the maſt had ſuſtained damage, but the heel was become exceedingly rotten, having a very large hole in the middle of it. Several days being probably required to make the neceſſary repairs, Meſſieurs King and Baily got the obſervatory on ſhore, and pitched their tents on the *morai*, guarded by a corporal, and ſix marines. A friendly intercourſe was renewed with the prieſts, who, for our greater ſecurity, *tabooed* the place with their wands as before. The ſail-makers alſo repaired to the ſhore to repair the damages, in their department, ſuſtained by the late heavy gales. They occupied an habitation lent us by the prieſts, adjoining to the *morai*.

Our reception, on coming to anchor, was ſo different from what it had been upon our firſt arrival, that we were all aſtoniſhed: no ſhouts, buſtle, or confuſion, but a ſolitary deſerted bay, with hardly a canoe ſtirring. Their curioſity, indeed, might be ſuppoſed to be diminiſhed by this time; but the hoſpitable treatment we had continually been favoured with, and the friendly footing on which we parted, induced us to expect that,

on

on our return, they would have received us with the greateſt demonſtrations of joy.

Various were our conjectures on the cauſe of this extraordinary appearance, when the whole myſtery was unravelled by the return of a boat, which we had ſent on ſhore, bringing intelligence that Terreeoboo was abſent, and that the bay was *tabooed*. This account appeared very ſatisfactory to many of us; but others were of opinion, that there was, at this time, ſomething very ſuſpicious in the behaviour of the natives; and that the *taboo*, or interdiction, on pretence of Terreeoboo's abſence, was artfully contrived, to give him time to conſult with his chiefs in what manner we ſhould be treated. We never could aſcertain whether theſe ſuſpicions were well founded, or whether the natives had given a true account. It is probable, indeed, that our ſudden return, for which they could aſſign no apparent cauſe, might create alarms in them; yet the conduct of Terreeoboo, who, on his ſuppoſed arrival the next morning, immediately waited on Captain Cook; and the natives, from that moment, renewing their friendly intercourſe with us, ſeem to evince that they neither meant, nor apprehended, a different kind of conduct.

An account of another accident, ſimilar to this, may be mentioned in ſupport of this opinion, which happened to us on our firſt viſit, the day before the king's arrival. A native having ſold a hog on board the Reſolution, and received the price agreed on, Pareea, who ſaw the tranſaction, adviſed the ſeller not to part with his hog, without an advanced price. For his interference in this buſineſs, he was harſhly ſpoken to, and puſhed away; and as the *taboo* was ſoon laid on the bay, we, at firſt, ſuppoſed it to be in conſequence of the affront offered to the chief.

Theſe two circumſtances conſidered, it is extremely difficult to draw any certain concluſion from the actions of a people, with whoſe language and cuſtoms we are ſo imperfectly acquainted. Some idea, however, may be formed of the difficulties thoſe have to encounter, who, in their intercourſe with theſe ſtran-

gers,

gers, are obliged to ſteer their courſe in the midſt of uncertainty, where the moſt ſerious conſequences may be occaſioned by only imaginary offences. Whether theſe conjectures are erroneous or true, it is certain that things were conducted in their uſual quiet courſe, till the 13th of February, in the afternoon.

At the approach of evening on that day, the commander of the Diſcovery's watering party, came to inform Mr. King, that ſeveral chiefs were aſſembled near the beach, and were driving away the natives, who aſſiſted the ſailors in rolling the caſks to the ſhore: at the ſame time declaring, that their behaviour ſeemed exceedingly ſuſpicious, and that he imagined they would give him ſome farther diſturbance. He ſent a marine with him, agreeably to his requeſt, but permitted him to take only his ſide arms. The officer, in a ſhort time, returned, and informed Mr. King, that the inhabitants had armed themſelves with ſtones, and were become tumultuous. He therefore went himſelf to the ſpot, attended by a marine, with his muſquet. At their approach the iſlanders threw away their ſtones, and, on Mr. King's application to ſome of the chiefs, the mob was diſperſed. Every thing being now quiet, Mr. King went to meet Captain Cook, who was then coming on ſhore in the pinnace. He related to him what had recently happened, and received orders to fire a ball at the offenders, if they again behaved inſolently, and began to throw ſtones. In conſequence of theſe directions, Mr. King gave orders to the corporal, that the ſentinels pieces ſhould be loaded with ball, inſtead of ſhot.

On our return to the tents, we heard a continued fire of muſquets from the Diſcovery; which we perceived to be directed at a canoe, which was haſtening towards the ſhore, with one of our ſmall boats in purſuit of it. This firing, we concluded, was the conſequence of ſome theft, and Captain Cook ordered Mr. King to follow him with a marine armed, and to endeavour to ſeize the people as they landed. They accordingly ran to the place, where the canoe was expected

ted to come aſhore, but did not arrive in time; the people having quitted it, and fled into the country before their arrival.

At this time they did not know that the goods had been already reſtored; and thinking it probable, from what they had obſerved, that they might be of importance, they did not chooſe to relinquiſh their endeavours to recover them; and, having inquired of the natives what courſe the people had taken, they purſued them till it was almoſt dark, when they ſuppoſed themſelves to be about three miles from the tents; and, thinking the iſlanders amuſed them with falſe information in their purſuit, they gave up the ſearch and returned.

A difference of a more ſerious nature had happened during their abſence. The officer, who had been diſpatched in the ſmall boat after the thieves, and who was returning on board, with the booty that had been reſtored, ſeeing Captain Cook and Mr. King engaged in the purſuit of the offenders, ſeized a canoe, which was drawn up on the ſhore. This canoe unfortunately belonged to Pareea, who, at that inſtant arriving from on board the Diſcovery, claimed his property, and proteſted his innocence. The officer perſiſted in detaining it, in which he was encouraged by the crew of the pinnace, then waiting for Captain Cook; in conſequence of which a ſcuffle enſued, and Pareea was knocked down by a violent blow on the head, with an oar. Several of the natives, who had hitherto been peaceable ſpectators, began now to attack our people with ſuch a ſhower of ſtones, that they were forced to a precipitate retreat, and ſwam off to a rock, at a conſiderable diſtance from the ſhore. The pinnace was plundered immediately by the natives, and would have been entirely demoliſhed, if Pareea had not interpoſed; who had not only recovered from his blow, but had alſo forgot it at the ſame inſtant. He ordered the crowd to diſperſe, and beckoned to our people to come and take poſſeſſion of the pinnace; and afterwards aſſured them, that he would uſe his influence to get the things reſtored which had been

been taken out of it. After their departure, he followed them in his canoe, carrying them a midſhipman's cap, and ſome other articles of the plunder; and, expreſſing much concern at what had happened, begged to know if the *orono* would kill him, and whether he might be permitted to come on board the next day? He was aſſured that he would be well received, and therefore joined noſes with the officers (their uſual token of friendſhip) and paddled over to Kowrowa.

Captain Cook, when theſe particulars were repreſented to him, was exceedingly concerned; and, when he and Mr. King were returning on board, he expreſſed his fears that theſe iſlanders would oblige him to purſue violent meaſures; adding, they muſt not be permitted to ſuppoſe, that they had gained an advantage over us. It was then, however, too late to take any ſteps that evening; he therefore only gave orders, that every iſlander ſhould be immediately turned out of the ſhip. This order being executed, Mr. King returned or ſhore; and the events of the day having much abated our former confidence in the natives, a double guard was poſted on the *morai*, with orders to let Mr. King know, if any men were ſeen lurking about the beach. At eleven o'clock, five of the natives were ſeen creeping round the bottom of the *morai*; they approached with great caution, and, at laſt, perceiving they were diſcovered, immediately retired out of ſight. About midnight one of them ventured himſelf near the obſervatory, when a centitnel fired over him; on which they all fled, and we had no farther diſturbance during the remainder of the night.

At day-light the next morning, Mr. King went on board the Reſolution, in order to get the timekeeper; and in his way thither was hailed by the Diſcovery, and received information that their cutter had ſome time in the night been ſtolen from the buoy, where it had been moored.

On Mr. King's arrival on board, he found the marines were arming themſelves, and Captain Cook buſied in loading his double-barrelled gun. Whilſt he was acquainting

quainting him with what had happened in the night at the *morai*, he eagerly interrupted him, and informed him of the loſs of the Diſcovery's cutter, and of the preparations he was making to recover it. It was his uſual practice in all the iſlands of this ocean, when any thing of conſequence had been ſtolen from him, by ſome ſtratagem, to get the king, or ſome of the principal *Erees*, on board, where he detained them as hoſtages till the property was reſtored. This method having hitherto proved ſucceſsful, he meant to adopt it on the preſent occaſion; and gave orders to ſtop every canoe that ſhould attempt to leave the bay; reſolving to ſeize and deſtroy them, if the cutter could not be recovered by peaceable means. In purſuance of this, the boats of both ſhips, properly manned and armed, were ſtationed acroſs the bay; and before Mr. King quitted the ſhip, ſome great guns were fired at two canoes, that were attempting to eſcape.

Between ſeven and eight o'clock Captain Cook and Mr. King quitted the ſhip together; the former in the pinnance, with Mr. Phillips, and nine marines; and the latter in the ſmall boat. The laſt orders Mr. King received from Captain Cook were, to quiet the minds of the people, on our ſide of the bay, by the ſtrongeſt aſſurances that they ſhould not be injured; to keep his people together, and to be continually on his guard. Captain Cook and Mr. King then ſeparated; the Captain going towards Kowrowa, where Tereeoboo reſided; and Mr. King proceeded to the beach: his firſt buſineſs, when he arrived on ſhore, was to iſſue ſtrict orders to the marines to continue within the tent, to charge their muſkets with ball, and not on any conſideration to quit their arms. He then attended old Kaoo and the prieſts at their reſpective huts, and explained to them, as well as he was able, the reaſon of the hoſtile preparations, which had ſo exceedingly alarmed them. He found they were no ſtrangers to the circumſtance of the cutter's being ſtolen, and aſſured them, that though the Commodore was not only reſolved to recover it, but alſo to puniſh, in the moſt exemplary manner, the authors of the theft; yet that

they, and all the inhabitants of the village, on our ſide, had not the leaſt occaſion to be alarmed, or to apprehend the leaſt danger from us. He importuned the prieſts to communicate this to the people, and intreat them not to entertain an idea of fear, but to continue peaceable and quiet. Kaoo interrogated Mr. King, with great emotion, if any harm was to happen to Terreeoboo? He aſſured him there was not; and both he and his brethren appeared much ſatisfied with this aſſurance.

Captain Cook having in the mean time called off the launch, from the north point of the bay, and taken it with him, landed at Kowrowa, with the lieutenant and nine marines. He proceeded immediately into the village, where he was reſpectfully received; the people, as uſual, proſtating themſelves before him, and making their accuſtomed offerings of ſmall hogs. Perceiving that his deſign was not ſuſpected, his next ſtep was, to inquire for the king, and the two boys, his ſons, who had been almoſt continually his gueſts on board the Reſolution. The boys preſently returned with the natives, who had been ſearching for them, and immediately conducted Captain Cook to the habitation where Terreeoboo had ſlept. The old man had juſt awoke; and after ſome converſation reſpecting the loſs of the cutter, from which the Commodore was convinced that he was not in any wiſe privy to it, he invited him to accompany him, and ſpend the day on board the Reſolution. The king accepted the invitation, and aroſe immediately to accompany him.

Every thing had now a proſperous appearance; the two boys were already in the pinnace, and the reſt of the party approaching the water ſide, when a woman, named Kanee-kabareea, the mother of the boys, and one of Terreeoboo's favourite wives, followed him, beſeeching him, with tears and entreaties, not to venture to go on board. Two chiefs, who came with her, took hold of him, and inſiſting he ſhould proceed no farther, obliged him to ſit down. The iſlanders, now collecting in vaſt numbers along the ſhore, who had probably been alarmed by the diſcharging of the great guns,

guns, and the hoſtile appearances in the bay, gathered together round Captain Cook and Terreeoboo. Thus ſituated, the lieutenant of marines, perceiving that his men were huddled together in the crowd, and conſequently unable to uſe their arms, if there ſhould appear to be a neceſſity for it, propoſed to Captain Cook, to draw them up along the rocks, cloſe to the edge of the water. The populace making way for them to paſs, the lieutenant drew them up in a line, within about thirty yards of the place where Terreeoboo was ſitting.

The old king continued all this time on the ground, bearing the moſt viſible marks of terror and dejection in his countenance. Captain Cook, unwilling to abandon the object which occaſioned him to come on ſhore, urged him moſt earneſtly to proceed; whilſt, on the other hand, if the king expreſſed any inclination to follow him, the chiefs, who ſurrounded him, interpoſed; at firſt they had recourſe to prayers and entreaties, but afterwards to force and violence, and even inſiſted on his remaining on ſhore. Captain Cook, at length, perceiving that the alarm had ſpread too generally, and that there was not a probability of getting him off without much bloodſhed, gave up the point; at the ſame time obſerving to Mr. Phillips, that, to compel him to go on board, would probably occaſion the loſs of many of the lives of the inhabitants.

Notwithſtanding this enterprize had now failed, and was abandoned by Captain Cook, yet it did not appear that his perſon was in the leaſt degree of danger, till an accident happened, which occaſioned a fatal turn to the affair. The boats, ſtationed acroſs the bay, having fired at ſome canoes, for attempting to get out, unfortunately had killed one of their principal chiefs. Intelligence of his death arrived at the village where Captain Cook then was, juſt as he had parted from the king, and was proceeding with great deliberation towards the ſhore. The ferment it immediately occaſioned was but too conſpicuous; the women and children were inſtantly ſent away, and the men were ſoon clad in their war-mats, and armed with ſpears and

ſtones. One of the natives, having provided himſelf with a ſtone, and a long iron ſpike (called by the natives a *pahooa)* advanced towards the Captain, flouriſhing his weapon in defiance, and threatening to throw the ſtone. The Captain requeſted him to deſiſt; but the iſlander repeating his menaces, he was highly provoked, and fired a load of ſmall ſhot at him. The man was ſhielded in his war-mat, which the ſhot could not penetrate; his firing, therefore, ſerved only to irritate and encourage them. Vollies of ſtones were thrown at the marines; and one of the *Erees* attempted the life of Mr. Phillips with his *pahooa*; but, not ſucceeding in the attempt, he received from him a blow with the butt end of his piece. Captain Cook immediately diſcharged his ſecond barrel, loaded with ball, and killed one of the moſt violent of the aſſailants. A general attack with ſtones ſucceeded, which was followed on our part, by a diſcharge of muſquetry, not only from the marines, but alſo from the people in the boats. The natives, to our great aſtoniſhment, received our fire with great firmneſs; and, without giving time for the marines to charge again, they ruſhed in upon them with dreadful ſhouts and yells. What followed was a ſcene of horror and confuſion, which can more eaſily be conceived than properly related.

Four of the marines retreated among the rocks, and fell a ſacrifice to the fury of the enemy; three others were dangerouſly wounded; and the lieutenant ſtabbed between the ſhoulders with a *pahooa*; but having fortunately reſerved his fire, ſhot the man from whom he had received the wound, at the inſtant he was preparing to repeat his blow. The laſt time our unfortunate Commodore was diſtinctly ſeen, he was ſtanding at the water's edge, and ordering the boats to ceaſe firing, and pull in.

It was imagined by ſome of thoſe who were preſent, that the marines, and thoſe who were in the boats, fired without Captain Cook's orders, and that he was anxious to prevent the farther effuſion of blood; it is therefore probable, that, on this occaſion, his humanity proved

fatal

ed himſelf
y the na-
, flouriſh-
to throw
deſiſt; but
ighly pro-
im. The
ſhot could
ly to irri-
ones were
attempted
, not ſuc-
im a blow
ook imme-
with ball,
ilants. A
was fol-
uetry, not
ople in the
t, received
iving time
d in upon
t followed
can more

rocks, and
ree others
nt ſtabbed
ving fortu-
whom he
s preparing
nfortunate
ding at the
firing, and

re preſent,
boats, fired
was anxious
s therefore
ity proved
fatal

Dodd d.2. Birrell sculp.

The DEATH of CAPTAIN COOK.

fatal to him: for it was obſerved, that while he faced the natives, no violence had been offered him; but, when he turned about, to give directions to the boats, he was ſtabbed in the back, and fell with his face into the water. A general ſhout was ſet up by the iſlanders on ſeeing him fall, and his body was dragged inhumanly on ſhore, where he was ſurrounded by the enemy, who ſnatching the dagger from each other's hands, diſplayed a ſavage eagerneſs to join in his deſtruction.

Such was the fate of our moſt excellent Commander! After a life, diſtinguiſhed by ſuch ſucceſsful enterprizes, his death can hardly be reckoned premature, ſince he lived to accompliſh the great work for which he ſeemed particularly deſigned, being rather removed from the enjoyment, than the acquiſition of glory. How ſincerely his loſs war lamented, by thoſe who owed their ſecurity to his ſkill and conduct, and every conſolation, to his tenderneſs and humanity, it is impoſſible to deſcribe; and the taſk would be equally difficult to repreſent the horror, dejection, and diſmay, which followed ſo dreadful and unexpected a cataſtrophe. Let us, therefore, turn from ſo calamitous a ſcene, to the pleaſing contemplation of his character and virtues, and pay our laſt juſt tribute to the memory of this worthy man, in a ſhort hiſtory of his life and public ſervices.

Captain James Cook was born in the year 1727, near Whitby, in Yorkſhire; and, at an early age, commenced an apprenticeſhip to a ſhopkeeper in a neighbouring village. This not being ſuitable to his natural propenſity, he ſoon quitted the counter, and contracted, for nine years, with the maſter of a veſſel in the coal trade. In 1755, at the commencement of the war, he entered into the king's ſervice on board the Eagle, then commanded by Captain Hamer, and afterwards by Sir Hugh Palliſer, who, perceiving his merit, advanced him to the quarter deck.

In 1758, we find him maſter of the Northumberland, Lord Colville's flag ſhip, who then commanded the ſquadron ſtationed on the coaſt of America. Here, as

he has frequently declared, he first read Euclid, and closely applied himself to the study of the mathematics, with the assistance of only a few books, and his own industry. While he thus found means to cultivate his understanding, and supply, in some degree, the deficiencies of an early education, he was engaged in most of the active scenes of war in America. At the siege of Quebec, he was intrusted by Sir Charles Saunders with the execution of important services, in the naval department. He was the pilot who conducted the boats to the attack of Montmorency; managed the embarkation to the heights of Abraham; and pointed out, by buoys, how the large ships might proceed with security up the river. The manner in which he acquitted himself in these important services, procured him the esteem and friendship of Sir Charles Saunders and Lord Colville, who continued his zealous patrons during the remainder of their lives. At the conclusion of the war, he was appointed, through the interest of Lord Colville and Sir Hugh Pallifer, to make a survey of the Gulf of St. Lawrence, and the coasts of Newfoundland. He was thus employed till the year 1767, when Sir Edward Hawke appointed him to the command of an expedition to the South Seas, in order to make an observation of the transit of *Venus*, and to prosecute discoveries in that part of the globe.

His services, since this period, are too generally known to require enumeration. His reputation has proportionably advanced beyond the effect of panegyric. He seems, indeed, to have been peculiarly qualified for this species of enterprize. His natural inclination, the nature of his services, and indefatigable application, all conspired to complete him for it; so that he acquired such a degree of professional knowledge, as can fall to the lot of very few.

His frame and constitution were robust, and such as enabled him to undergo the severest hardships. When necessity required it, he could feed, with satisfaction, upon the coarsest and most ungrateful food; and he submitted to every kind of self denial with the greatest

composure

compoſure and indifference. Nor were the qualities of his mind leſs vigorous than thoſe of his body. His underſtanding was ſtrong and perſpicuous; his judgement, eſpecially in thoſe matters in which he was more particularly engaged, quick and ſure. His deſigns and operations were the natural reſult of a great original genius. His valour was cool, deliberate, and determined, accompanied with a moſt aſtoniſhing preſence of mind on the approach of danger. His manners were plain, eaſy, and unaffected. His temper, it muſt be admitted, was too much ſubject to haſtineſs and paſſion; but this ſhould be forgotten, when it is conſidered, that his diſpoſition was the moſt benevolent and humane.

Theſe are a few traits or outlines of the character of Captain Cook; but its diſtinguiſhing feature was the moſt unremitting perſeverance to accompliſh his deſign, in oppoſition to dangers, difficulties, and hardſhips. During all his long and tedious voyages, his eagerneſs and activity were never in the leaſt abated. No alluring incitement could detain him for a moment; even thoſe intervals of recreation, which unavoidably occurred in the courſe of our ſervices, and were joyfully embraced by many of his officers, were ſubmitted to by him with impatience, if they could not be made ſubſervient to the more effectual proſecution of his deſigns.

It would be unneceſſary to recapitulate the inſtances in which theſe qualities were diſplayed. The reſult of his ſervices, however, we ſhall juſt touch upon, under two principal heads, viz. Geography and Navigation, placing each in a ſeparate and diſtinct point of view.

No ſcience, it is preſumed, has ever received greater additions from the labours of one man, than geography has done from thoſe of Captain Cook. In his firſt voyage, he diſcovered the Society Iſlands; aſcertained the inſularity of New Zealand; and diſcovered the ſtraits, which ſeparate the two iſlands, and are called after his name. He explored the eaſtern coaſt of New Holland, till then unknown; an extent of twen-

ty-ſeven degrees of latitude, and upwards of two thouſand miles.

He gave, in his ſecond expedition, a reſolution to the great problem of a ſouthern continent, having ſo completely traverſed that hemiſphere, as not to leave a poſſibility of its exiſtence, unleſs it is ſo near the pole, as to be beyond the reach of navigation. New Caledonia, the largeſt iſland in the Southern Pacific, except New Zealand, was diſcovered in this voyage. Alſo the iſland of Georgia, and an unknown coaſt, which the Captain named Sandwich land; and having twice viſited the tropical ſeas, he ſettled the ſituations of the old, and made ſeveral new diſcoveries.

His third and laſt voyage, however, is diſtinguiſhed above the reſt, by the extent and importance of its diſcoveries. Not to mention the ſeveral ſmaller iſlands in the Southern Pacific, he diſcovered the group, called the Sandwich Iſlands; which, on account of their ſituation and productions, may, perhaps, become an object of more conſequence than any other diſcovery in the South Seas. He explored what had before remained unknown of the weſtern coaſt of America, an extent of three thouſand ſeven hundred miles; aſcertained the proximity of the two continents of Aſia and America; ſailed through the ſtraits between them, and ſurveyed the coaſts on each ſide, ſo far as to be ſatisfied of the impracticability of a paſſage in that hemiſphere, from the Atlantic into the Pacific Ocean, by an eaſtern or a weſtern courſe. He has, in ſhort, completed the hydrography of the habitable globe, if we except the Japaneſe Archipelago, and the ſea of Amur, which are ſtill imperfectly known by Europeans.

His ſervices, as a navigator, are not leſs important and meritorious. The method which he invented, and ſo ſucceſsfully put in practice, of preſerving the health (and conſequently the lives) of ſeamen, will tranſmit his name to future ages, as a friend and benefactor of mankind.

It is well known among thoſe who are converſant in naval hiſtory, that the advantages which have been ſought,

ſought, through the medium of long ſea-voyages, have always been purchaſed at a dear rate. That dreadful diſorder which is peculiar to this ſervice, muſt, without exerciſing an unwarrantable degree of tyranny over our ſeamen, have been an inſuperable obſtacle to our enterprizes. It was reſerved for Captain Cook to convince the world, that voyages might be protracted to three or even four years, in unknown regions, and under every change of climate, without affecting the health in the ſmalleſt degree, and even without diminiſhing the probability of life. His method has been fully explained, in a paper which was read before the Royal Society, in 1776*.

Reſpecting his profeſſional abilities, they muſt be ſubmitted to the judgement of thoſe who are acquainted with the ſervices in which he was engaged. They cannot but acknowledge, that to have conducted three ſuch dangerous and difficult expeditions, of ſo unuſual a length, with invariable ſucceſs, muſt not only have required an accurate knowledge of his buſineſs, but alſo a moſt powerful and comprehenſive genius.

Having thus given a faithful, though a conciſe account of the death of our much-lamented Commander, and alſo of his character and ſervice, his memory muſt now be left to the gratitude and admiration of poſterity.

We have before obſerved that four of the marines, who accompanied Captain Cook, were killed by the natives on the ſpot. The others, with their lieutenant, Mr. Phillips, threw themſelves into the ſea, and made their eſcape, being protected by a ſmart fire from the boats. On this occaſion, a ſtriking inſtance of gallant behaviour, and of affection for his men, was diſplayed by Mr. Phillips; for he had ſcarcely got into the boat, when, ſeeing one of the marines, who was not a very expert ſwimmer, ſtruggling in the water, and in danger of being taken by the iſlanders, he inſtantly leaped into the ſea to his aſſiſtance, though conſiderably wounded

 himſelf;

* Sir Godfrey Copley's gold medal was awarded him on that occaſion.

himſelf; and after receiving a blow on his head from a ſtone, which had almoſt ſent him to the bottom, he caught the marine by the hair, and brought him off in ſafety. Our people for ſome time kept up a conſtant fire from the boats (which, during the whole tranſaction, were at no greater diſtance from the land than twenty yards), in order to afford their unfortunate companions, if any of them ſhould ſtill remain alive, an opportunity of effecting their eſcape. Theſe continued efforts, ſeconded by a few guns, that were, at the ſame time, fired from the Reſolution, having at length compelled the enemy to retire, a ſmall boat, manned by five midſhipmen, pulled towards the ſhore, where they perceived the bodies lying on the ground, without any ſigns of life. However, they judged it dangerous to attempt to bring them off with ſo inconſiderable a force; and their ammunition being nearly conſumed, they returned to the ſhips, leaving the bodies in poſſeſſion of the natives, together with ten ſtands of arms.

When the general conſternation, which the news of this miſfortune had diffuſed throughout the whole company of both ſhips, had in ſome degree ſubſided, their attention was called to the party at the *morai*, where the maſt and ſails were on ſhore, guarded by only ſix marines. It is difficult to deſcribe the emotions that agitated the minds of Mr. King and his attendants at this ſtation, during the time in which theſe occurrences had happened, at the other ſide of the bay. Being at the diſtance only of a mile from the village of Kowrowa, they could diſtinctly perceive a vaſt multitude of people collected on the ſpot where Captain Cook had juſt before landed. They heard the firing of the muſquets, and obſerved an uncommon buſtle and agitation among the crowd. They afterwards ſaw the iſlanders retreating, the boats retiring from the ſhore, and paſſing and repaſſing, with great ſtillneſs, between the ſhips. Mr. King's heart ſoon miſgave him on this occaſion. Where ſo valuable a life was concerned, he could not avoid being alarmed by ſuch new and threatening appearances.

ances. Besides this, he knew that Captain Cook, from a long series of success, in his transactions with the natives of this ocean, had acquired a degree of confidence, which might, in some ill-fated moment, put him too much off his guard; and Mr. King now saw all the dangers to which that confidence might lead, without deriving much consolation from the consideration of the experience which had given rise to it. His first care, on hearing the report of the musquets, was to assure the islanders, considerable numbers of whom were assembled round the wall of our consecrated field, and seemed at a loss how to account for what they had heard and seen, that they should meet with no molestation; and that, at all events, he was inclined to continue on peaceable terms with them.

Mr. King and his attendants remained in this situation till the boats had returned on board, when Captain Clerke perceiving, by means of his telescope, that our party was surrounded by the natives, who, he thought, designed to attack them, ordered two four-pounders to be fired at the islanders. These guns, though well aimed, did no mischief; but they gave the natives a convincing proof of their powerful effects. A cocoa-nut-tree, under which some of them were sitting, was broken in the middle by one of the balls; and the other shivered a rock, which stood in an exact line with them. As Mr. King had, just before, given them the strongest assurances of their safety, he was extremely mortified at this act of hostility, and, to prevent its being repeated, instantly dispatched a boat to inform Captain Clerke, that he was, at present, on the most amicable terms with the islanders, and that, if any future occasion should arise for changing his conduct towards them, he would hoist a jack, as a signal for Captain Clerke to afford him his assistance.

Mr. King waited the return of the boat with the greatest impatience; and after remaining for the space of a quarter of an hour, under the utmost anxiety and suspence, his fears were at length confirmed, by the arrival of Mr. Bligh, with orders to strike the tents immediately,

immediately, and to ſend on board the ſails that were repairing. At the ſame inſtant, Kaireekeea having alſo received information of the death of Captain Cook, from a native who had arrived from the other ſide of the bay, approached Mr. King, with great dejection and ſorrow in his countenance, inquiring whether it was true.

The ſituation of the party, at this time, was highly critical and important. Not only their own lives, but the iſſue of the expedition, and the return of at leaſt one of the ſhips, were involved in the ſame common danger. They had the maſt of the Reſolution, and the greater part of the ſails, on ſhore, protected by only half a dozen marines. The loſs of theſe would have been irreparable; and though the iſlanders had not as yet teſtified the ſmalleſt diſpoſition to moleſt the party, it was difficult to anſwer for the alteration, which the intelligence of the tranſaction at Kowrowa might produce. Mr. King therefore thought proper to diſſemble his belief of the death of Captain Cook, and to deſire Kaireekeea to diſcourage the report; apprehending that either the fear of our reſentment, or the ſucceſsful example of their countrymen, might, perhaps, lead them to ſeize the favourable opportunity, which at this time preſented itſelf, of giving us a ſecond blow. He, at the ſame time, adviſed him to bring old Kaoo, and the other prieſts, into a large houſe adjoining to the *morai*, partly from a regard to their ſafety, in caſe it ſhould have been found neceſſary to have recourſe to violent meaſures; and partly from a deſire of having him near our people, in order to make uſe of his authority with the natives, if it could be inſtrumental in maintaining peace.

Mr. King, having ſtationed the marines on the top of the *morai*, which formed a ſtrong and advantageous poſt, intruſted the command to Mr. Bligh, who received the moſt poſitive directions to act ſolely on the defenſive, went on board the Diſcovery, in order to confer with Captain Clerke on the dangerous ſituation of our affairs. He had no ſooner left the ſpot, than the

islanders began to annoy our people with stones; and just after he had reached the ship, he heard the firing of the marines. He therefore hastily returned on shore, where he found affairs growing every moment more alarming. The natives were providing arms, and putting on their mats, and their numbers augmented very fast. He also observed several large bodies advancing towards our party along the cliff, by which the village of Kakooa is separated from the north side of the bay, where Kowrowa is situate.

They at first attacked our people with stones from behind the walls of their inclosures, and meeting with no resistance, they soon became more daring. A few courageous fellows, having crept along the beach, under cover of the rocks, suddenly presented themselves at the foot of the *morai*, with an intention of storming it on the side next the sea, which was its only accessible part; and they were not dislodged before they had stood a considerable quantity of shot, and had seen one of their number fall.

The courage of one of these assailants deserves to be recorded. Having returned with a view of carrying off his companion, amidst the fire of our whole party, he received a wound, which obliged him to quit the body, and retire; but, a few minutes afterwards, he again made his appearance, and receiving another wound, was under the necessity of retreating a second time. At that moment Mr. King arrived at the *morai*, and saw this man return a third time, faint from the loss of blood and fatigue. Being informed of what had happened, he forbade the soldiers to fire; and the islander was suffered to carry off his friend, which we was just able to accomplish, and then fell down himself, and breathed his last.

A strong reinforcement from both ships having landed about this time, the natives retreated behind their walls, which affording Mr. King access to the priests: he sent one of them to exert his endeavours to bring his countrymen to some terms, and to propose to them, that if they would desist from throwing stones,

he would not allow our men to fire. This truce was agreed to, and our people were suffered to launch the mast, and carry off the sails, astronomical instruments, &c. without molestation. As soon as our party had quitted the *morai*, the islanders took possession of it, and some of them threw a few stones, which, however, did no mischief.

Between eleven and twelve o'clock, Mr. King arrived on board the Discovery, where he found that no decisive plan had been adopted for the regulation of our future proceedings. The recovery of Captain Cook's body, and the restitution of the boat, were the objects, which on all hands, we agreed to insist on: and Mr. King declared it as his opinion, that some vigorous methods should be put in execution, if the demand of them should not be instantly complied with.

Though it may justly be supposed, that Mr. King's feeling on the death of a respected and beloved friend, had some share in this opinion; yet there were doubtless other reasons, and those of the most serious nature, that had some weight with him. The confidence which the success of the natives, in killing our Commander, and obliging us to leave the shore, must naturally have inspired; and the advantage, however inconsiderable, which they had gained over us the preceding day, would, he had no doubt, excite them to make farther dangerous attempts; and the more particularly, as they had no great reason, from what they had hitherto observed, to dread the effects of our fire-arms. This kind of weapon, indeed, contrary to the expectations of us all, had produced in them no signs of terror. On our side, such was the condition of our vessels, and the state of discipline among us, that had a vigorous attack been made upon us during the night, the consequences might perhaps have been highly disagreeable. Mr. King was supported in these apprehensions by the opinion of the greater part of the officers on board; and nothing seemed to him more likely to encourage the islanders to make the attempt, than

than the appearance of our being inclined to an accommodation, which they could only impute to weakneſs or fear.

On the other hand it was urged, in favour of more conciliatory meaſures, that the miſchief was already done, and was irreparable; that the natives, by reaſon of their former friendſhip and kindneſs had a ſtrong claim to our regard; and the more particularly, as the late calamitous accident did not appear to have taken its riſe from any premeditated deſign; that, on the part of Terreeoboo, his ignorance of the theft, his willingneſs to accompany Captain Cook on board the Reſolution, and his having actually ſent his two ſons into the pinnace, muſt reſcue his character in this reſpect from the ſmalleſt degree of ſuſpicion; that the behaviour of his women, and the chiefs, might eaſily be accounted for, from the apprehenſions occaſioned in their minds by the armed force with which Captain Cook landed, and the hoſtile preparations in the bay; appearances ſo unſuitable to the confidence and friendſhip, in which both parties had hitherto lived; that the arming of the iſlanders was manifeſtly with a deſign to reſiſt the attempt they had ſome reaſon to expect would be made, to carry off their ſovereign by force, and was naturally to be expected from a people who had a remarkable affection for their chiefs.

To theſe dictates of humanity, other motives of a prudential kind were added; that we were in want of a ſupply of water, and other refreſhments; that the Reſolution's foremaſt would require ſeven or eight days work, before it could be ſtepped; that the ſpring was advancing very faſt; and that the ſpeedy proſecution of our next expedition to the northward ought to be our ſole object; and that, therefore, to engage in a vindictive conteſt with the natives, might not only ſubject us to the imputation of needleſs cruelty, but would require great delay in the equipment of our ſhips.

Cap-

Captain Clerke concurred in this latter opinion; and while we were thus engaged in concerting some plan for our future operations, a very numerous concourse of the natives still kept possession of the shore; and some of them, coming off in canoes, approached within pistol-shot of the ships, and insulted us by various marks of defiance and contempt. It was extremely difficulty to restrain the seamen from the use of their arms on these occasions; but, as pacific measures had been resolved on, the canoes were allowed to return unmolested.

Mr. King was now ordered to proceed towards the shore, with the boats of both ships, well manned and armed, with a view of bringing the islanders to a parley, and of obtaining, if possible, a conference with some of the Erees. If he should succeed in this attempt, he was to demand the dead bodies, and particularly that of Captain Cook; to threaten them, in case of a refusal, with our resentment; but, by no means to fire unless attacked; and not to go ashore on any account whatever. These instructions were delivered to Mr. King before the whole party, in the most positive manner.

Mr. King and his detachment left the ships about four o'clock in the afternoon; and, as they approached the shore, they perceived every indication of a hostile reception. The natives were all in motion; the women and children retiring; the men arming themselves with long spears and daggers, and putting on their war mats. It also appeared, that since the morning, they had thrown up breast-works of stone along the beach, where Captain Cook had landed, in expectation, perhaps, of an attack at that place.

As soon as our party were within reach, the islanders began to throw stones at them with slings, but without doing any mischief. Mr. King concluded, from these appearances, that all attempts to bring them to a parley would be ineffectual, unless he gave them some ground for mutual confidence: he therefore ordered the armed boats to stop, and advanced alone, in the small

ſmall boat, holding in his hand a white flag; the meaning of which, from an univerſal ſhout of joy from the natives, he had the ſatisfaction to find was immediately underſtood. The women inſtantly returned from the ſide of the hill, the men threw off their mats, and all ſeated themſelves together by the ſea ſide, extending their arms, and inviting Mr. King to land.

Though ſuch behaviour ſeemed expreſſive of a friendly diſpoſition, he could not avoid entertaining ſuſpicions of its ſincerity. But when we ſaw Koah, with extraordinary boldneſs and aſſurance, ſwimming off towards the boat, with a white flag in his hand, he thought proper to return this mark of confidence, and accordingly received him into the boat, though he was armed; a circumſtance which did not contribute to leſſen Mr. King's ſuſpicions. He had, indeed, long harboured an unfavourable opinion of Koah. The prieſts had always repreſented him as a perſon of a malicious temper, and no friend to us; and the repeated detections of his fraud and treachery, had convinced us of the truth of their aſſertions. Beſides, the melancholy tranſactions of the morning, in which he was ſeen performing a principal part, inſpired Mr. King with the utmoſt horror at finding himſelf ſo near him; and as he approached him, with feigned tears, and embraced him, Mr. King was ſo diſtruſtful of his intentions, that he took hold of the point of the *pahooa*, which the chief held his hand, and turned it from him. He informed the iſlander, that he had come to demand the body of Captain Cook, and to declare war againſt the natives, unleſs it was reſtored without delay. Koah aſſured him that this ſhould be done as ſoon as poſſible, and that he would go himſelf for that purpoſe; and after requeſting a piece of iron of Mr. King, he leaped into the water and ſwam aſhore, calling out to his countrymen, that we were all friends again.

Our people waited with great anxiety, near an hour, for his return. During this interval, the other boats had approached ſo near the ſhore that the men who were

were in them entered into conversation with a party of the islanders, at a little distance; by whom they were informed, that the Captain's body had been cut to pieces, and carried up the country; but of this circumstance Mr. King was not apprized till his return to the ships.

Mr. King now began to express some degree of impatience at Koah's delay; upon which the chiefs pressed him exceedingly to land; assuring him, that if he would go in person to Terreeoboo, the body would undoubtedly be restored to him. When they found they could not get Mr. King to go ashore, they endeavoured, on pretence of conversing with him with greater ease, to decoy his boat among some rocks, where they might have had it in their power to separate him from the other boats. It was easy to see through these artifices, and he was, therefore, very desirous of breaking off all communication with them, when a chief approached, who had particularly attached himself to Captain Clerke, and the officers of the Discovery, on board which ship he had sailed when we last quitted the bay, intending to take his passage to the island of Mowee. He said he came from Terreeoboo, to acquaint our people, that the body was carried up the country, but that it should be brought back the following morning. There appeared much sincerity in his manner; and being asked, if he uttered a falsehood, he hooked together his two fore fingers, which is here understood as the sign of veracity, in the use of which these islanders are very scrupulous.

Mr. King being now at a loss how to proceed, sent Mr. Vancouver to inform Captain Clerke of all that had passed; that it was his opinion, the natives did not intend to keep their word with us; and, far from being grieved at what had happened, were, on the contrary, inspired with great confidence on account of their late success, and sought only to gain time, till they could plan some scheme for getting our people into their power. Mr. Vancouver came back with orders for Mr. King to return on board, after giving

the

the iſlanders to underſtand, that, if the body was not reſtored the next morning, the town ſhould be deſtroyed.

When they perceived our pary retiring, they endeavoured to provoke them by the moſt contemptuous and inſulting geſtures. Several of our people ſaid, they could diſtinguiſh ſome of the natives parading about in the clothes which had belonged to our unhappy countrymen, and among them an *Eree*, brandiſhing Captain Cook's hanger, and a woman holding the ſcabbard.

In conſequence of Mr. King's report to Captain Clerke, of what he ſuppoſed to be the preſent temper and diſpoſition of the inhabitants, the moſt effectual methods were taken to guard againſt any attack they might make during the night. The boats were moored with top-chains; additional ſentinels were ſtationed in each of our ſhips; and guard-boats were directed to row round them, in order to prevent the iſlanders from cutting the cables.

We paſſed the night without any diſturbance, except from the howlings and lamentations which were heard on ſhore. Early the next morning (Monday the 15th) Koah came along ſide the reſolution, with a ſmall pig, and ſome cloth, which he deſired permiſſion to preſent to Mr. King. We have already mentioned, that this officer was ſuppoſed, by the iſlanders to be the ſon of Captain Cook; and as the latter had always ſuffered them to believe it, Mr. King was probably conſidered as the chief after his death. As ſoon as he came on deck, he interrogated Koah, with regard to the body; and on his returning evaſive anſwers, refuſed to accept his preſents, and was on the point of diſmiſſing him with expreſſions of anger and reſentment, had not Captain Clerke, with a view of keeping up the appearance of friendſhip, judged it more proper, that he ſhould be treated with the cuſtomary reſpect.

This chief came frequently to us in the courſe of the morning, with ſome trifling preſent or other; and

and as we always obſerved him eyeing every part of the ſhip with a great degree of attention, we took care he ſhould ſee we were well prepared for our defence.

He was extremely urgent both with Captain Clerke and Mr. King to go on ſhore, imputing the detention of the bodies to the other chiefs; and aſſuring thoſe gentlemen, that every thing might be adjuſted to their ſatisfaction, by a perſonal interview with the king. However, they did not think it prudent to comply with Koah's requeſt; and, indeed, a fact came afterwards to their knowledge, which proved his want of veracity: for, they were informed, that, immediately after the action in which Captain Cook had loſt his life, Terreeoboo had retired to a cave in the ſteep part of the mountain, that hangs over the bay, which was acceſſible only by means of ropes, and where he continued for ſeveral days, having his proviſions let down to him by cords.

After the departure of Koah from the ſhips, we obſerved that his countrymen, who had aſſembled by day break, in vaſt crowds on the ſhore, flocked around him with great eagerneſs on his landing, as if they wiſhed to learn the intelligence he had gained, and what ſteps were to be taken in conſequence of it. It is highly probable, that they expected we ſhould attempt to put our threats in execution, and they appeared fully determined to ſtand their ground. During the whole morning, we heard conchs blowing in various parts of the coaſt; large parties were perceived marching over the hills; and, upon the whole, appearances were ſo alarming, that we carried out a ſtream anchor, for the purpoſe of hauling the ſhip abreaſt of the town, in caſe of an attack; and boats were ſtationed off the northern point of the bay, in order to prevent a ſurprize from the natives in that quarter.

The warlike poſture in which they appeared at preſent, and the breach of their engagement to reſtore the bodies of the ſlain, occaſioned freſh debates among us,

us, concerning the meaſures which ſhould now be purſued. It was at length determined, that nothing ſhould be permitted to interfere with the repair of the Reſolution's maſt, and the preparations for our departure; but that we ſhould, nevertheleſs, continue our negociations for the reſtoration of the bodies of our countrymen.

The greater part of the day was employed in getting the foremaſt into a proper ſituation on the deck, that the carpenters might work upon it; and alſo in making the requiſite alterations in the commiſſions of the officers. The chief command of the expedition having devolved on Captain Clerke, he removed on board the Reſolution, promoted Lieutenant Gore to the rank of Captain of the Diſcovery, appointed Meſſrs. King and Williamſon firſt and ſecond Lieutenants of the Reſolution, and nominated Mr. Harvey, a midſhipman, who had accompanied Captain Cook in his two laſt voyages, to fill the vacant lieutenancy. During the whole day, we ſuſtained no interruption from the iſlanders; and, in the evening, the launch was mored with a top-chain, and guard-boats ſtationed round each of the ſhips as before.

About eight o'clock, it being exceedingly dark, we heard a canoe paddling towards the ſhip; and it was no ſooner perceived than both the ſentinels on deck fired into it. There were two of the natives in this canoe, who immediately roared out "*Tinnee*," (which was their method of pronouncing Mr. King's name) and ſaid they were friends, and had ſomething with them which belonged to Captain Cook. When they came on board, they threw themſelves at the feet of our officers, and ſeemed to be extremely terrified. It fortunately happened, that neither of them was hurt, notwithſtanding the balls of both pieces had gone through the canoe.

One of them was the perſon, who has been already mentioned, under the appellation of the *taboo* man, who conſtantly attended Captain Cook with the particular

cular ceremonies we have before described; and who, though a man of distinction in the island, could scarcely be prevented from performing for him the most humiliating offices of a menial servant. After bewailing, with many tears, the loss of the *Orono*, he informed us, that he had brought a part of his body. He then gave us a small bundle which he brought under his arm; it is impossible to describe the horror with which we were seized, upon finding in it, a piece of human flesh about the weight of nine or ten pounds. This, he said, was all that now remained of the body; that the rest had been cut in pieces and burnt; but that the head, and all the bones, except those which belonged to the trunk, were in the possession of Terreeoboo and the other chiefs; that what we saw had been allotted to Kaoo, the chief of the priests, for the purpose of being used in some religious ceremony; and that he had sent it as a testimony of his innocence, and of his attachment to us.

Though we pressed our two friendly visitants to continue on board till the next morning, we could not prevail upon them. They informed us, that if this transaction should come to the knowledge of the king, or any of the other *Erees*, it might be attended with the most fatal consequences to their whole society; to prevent which, they had been under the necessity of coming to us in the dark; and the same precaution, they said, would be requisite in returning on shore. They farther told us, that the chiefs were eager to take revenge on us for the death of their countrymen; and particularly cautioned us against trusting Koah, who, they assured us, was our implacable enemy, and ardently longed for an opportunity of fighting us, to which the blowing of the conchs, that we had heard in the morning, was intended as a challenge.

It also appeared from the information of these men, that seventeen of their countrymen had been slain in the first action, at the village of Kowrowa, five of whom were chiefs; and that Kaneena and his brother, our particular friends, were of that number. Eight, they

they ſaid, had loſt their lives at the obſervatory; three of whom likewiſe were perſons of the firſt diſtiction.

The two natives left us about eleven o'clock, and took the precaution to deſire, that one of our guard-boats might attend them, till they had paſſed the Diſcovery, leſt they ſhould again be fired upon, which, by alarming their countrymen on ſhore, might expoſe them to the danger of detection. The requeſt was readily complied with, and we had the ſatisfaction to find, that they reached the land ſafe and undiſcovered.

We heard, during the remainder of this night, the ſame loud lamentations as in the preceding one. Early the following morning, we received a viſit from Kbah. Mr. King was piqued at finding, that, notwithſtanding the moſt glaring marks of treachery in his conduct, and the poſitive declaration of our friends the prieſts, he ſhould ſtill be ſuffered to carry on the ſame farce, and to make us at leaſt appear the dupes of his hypocriſy. Our ſituation was, indeed, become extremely aukward and unpromiſing; none of the purpoſes for which this pacific plan of proceedings had been adopted, having hitherto been, in any reſpect, promoted by it. No ſatisfactory anſwer had been given to our demands; we did not ſeem to have made any progreſs towards a reconciliation with the natives; they ſtill remained on the ſhore in hoſtile poſtures, as if determined to oppoſe any endeavours we might make to go aſhore; and yet it was become abſolutely neceſſary to attempt landing, as the completing our ſtock of water would not admit of any longer delay.

We muſt remark, however, in juſtice to the conduct of Captain Clerke, that it was highly probable, from the great numbers of the iſlanders, and from the reſolution with which they ſeemed to expect our approach, that an attack could not have been made without danger; and that the loſs of even a very few men, might have been ſeverely felt by us, during the remainder of our voyage; whereas the delaying to put our menaces

naces into execution, though, on the one hand, it diminiſhed their opinion of our valour, had the effect of occaſioning them to diſperſe on the other. For this day, about twelve o'clock, upon finding that we perſiſted in our inactivity, great bodies of them, after blowing their conchs, and uſing every method of defiance, marched off over the hills, and never made their appearance afterwards. Thoſe, however, who remained, were not the leſs daring and preſumptuous. One of them had the inſolence to come within muſquet ſhot, ahead of the Reſolution, and, after throwing ſeveral ſtones at us, waved over his head the hat which had belonged to Captain Cook, while his countrymen aſhore were exulting and encouraging his audacity.

Our people were highly enraged at this inſult, and coming in a body on the quarter deck, begged they might no longer be obliged to put up with ſuch reiterated provocations, and requeſted Mr. King to endeavour to obtain permiſſion for them, from Captain Clerke, to take advantage of the firſt fair occaſion, of avenging the death of their much-lamented commander. On Mr. King's acquainting the Captain with what was paſſing, he ordered ſome great guns to be fired at the iſlanders on ſhore; and promiſed the crew, that if they ſhould be moleſted at the watering-place, the next day, they ſhould then be permitted to chaſtiſe them. Before we could bring our guns to bear, the natives had ſuſpected our intentions, from the buſtle and agitation they obſerved in the ſhip, and had retired behind their houſes and walls. We were conſequently obliged to fire at random; notwithſtanding which, our ſhot produced all the effects we could deſire. For, in a ſhort time afterwards, we perceived Koah paddling towards us, with the greateſt haſte; and when he arrived, we learned, that ſome people had loſt their lives, and among the reſt Maiha-maiha, a principal *Eree*, nearly related to Terreeoboo.

During the night, we took the uſual precautions for the ſecurity of the ſhips; and, as ſoon as it was dark, the two natives, who had viſited us the preceding evening,

ing, came off to us again. They assured us, that though the effects of our great guns, this afternoon, had greatly alarmed the chiefs, they had by no means relinquished their hostile intentions, and they advised us to be on our guard.

The following morning, which was the 17th, the boats of both ships were dispatched ashore to procure water; and the Discovery was warped close to the beach, in order to protect the persons employed in that service. We soon found that the intelligence which had been sent us by the priests, was not destitute of foundation, and that the islanders were determined to neglect no opportunity of annoying us, when it could be done without much hazard.

The villages, throughout this whole cluster of islands, are, for the most part, situated near the sea; and the adjacent ground is enclosed with stone walls, of the height of about three feet. These, we at first supposed, were designed for the division of property; but we now discovered that they served for a defence against invasion, for which purpose they were, perhaps, chiefly intended. They consist of loose stones, and the natives are very dexterous in shifting them, with great quickness, to such particular situations, as the direction of the attack may occasionally require. In the sides of the mountain, that stands near the bay, they have likewise holes, or caves, of considerable depth, whose entrance is secured by a fence of a similar kind. From behind both these stations, the islanders perpetually harrassed our watering party with stones; nor could the inconsiderable force we had on shore, with the advantage of musquets, compel them to retreat.

Thus opposed, our people were so occupied in attending to their own safety, that, during the whole forenoon, they filled only one tun of water. It being therefore impossible for them to perform this service, till their assailants were driven to a greater distance, the Discovery was ordered to dislodge the enemy with her great guns; which being accomplished by means of a few discharges, the men landed without molestation.

The

The natives, however, made their appearance again, soon afterwards, in their usual method of attack; and it was now deemed absolutely necessary to burn down some straggling huts, near the wall behind which they had sheltered themselves.

As directions had been given to burn only a few straggling houses, which afforded shelter to the islanders, we were greatly surprized on perceiving the whole village in flames; and before a boat, that was sent to stop the progress of the mischief, could reach the land, the habitations of our old and constant friends, the priests, were all on fire. Mr. King had, therefore, great reason to lament the illness that confined him on board this day. The priests had always been under his protection; and, unfortunately, the officers then on duty having seldom been on shore at the *morai*, were but little acquainted with the circumstances of the place. Had he been present himself, he might, in all probability, have been the means of preserving their little society from destruction.

In escaping from the flames, several of the inhabitants were shot; and our people cut off the heads of two of them, and brought them on board. The fate of one unhappy native was much lamented by all of us. As he was repairing to the well for water, he was shot at by one of the marines. The bail happened to strike his calibash, which he instantly threw from him, and ran off. He was pursued into one of the caves above mentioned, and no lion could have defended his den with greater bravery and fierceness; till at length, after he had found means to keep two of our people at bay for a considerable time, he expired, covered with wounds. This accident first brought us acquainted with the use to which these caverns are applied.

About this time a man, advanced in years, was taken prisoner, bound, and conveyed on board the Resolution, in the same boat with the heads of his two countrymen. We never observed horror so strongly portrayed, as in the face of this person, nor so violent a transition to immoderate joy, as when he was untied, and

and given to understand, that he might depart in safety. He shewed us that he was not deficient in gratitude, as he not only often returned afterwards with presents of provisions, but also did us other services.

In a short time after the destruction of the village, we saw, coming down the hill, a man, accompanied by fifteen or twenty boys, who held in their hands pieces of white cloth, plantains, green boughs, &c. It happened that this pacific embassy, as soon as they were within reach, received the fire of a party of our men. This, however, did not deter them from continuing their procession, and the officer on duty came up in time to prevent a second discharge. As they made a nearer approach, the principal person proved to be our friend Kaireekeea, who had fled when our people first set fire to the village, and had now returned, and expressed his desire of being sent on board the Resolution.

On his arrival we found him extremely thoughtful and grave. We endeavoured to convince him of the necessity there was of setting fire to the village, by which his house and those of his brethren were unintentionally destroyed. He expostulated with us on our ingratitude and want of friendship; and, indeed, it was not till the present moment, that we knew the whole extent of the injury that had been done them. He informed us, that, confiding in the promises Mr. King had made them, as well as in the assurances they had received from the men, who had brought us some of Captain Cook's remains, they had not removed their effects back into the country, as the other inhabitants had done, but had put every valuable article of their own, as well as what they had collected from us, into a house adjoining to the *morai*, where they had the mortification to see it all set on fire by our people. He had, on coming on board, perceived the heads of his two countrymen lying on deck, at which he was greatly shocked, and earnestly desired that they might

be thrown over-board. This request, by the directions of Captain Clerke, was immediately complied with.

Our watering party returned on board in the evening, having sustained no farther interruption. We passed a disagreeable night; the cries and lamentations we heard from the shore being far more dreadful than ever. Our only consolation, on this occasion, arose from the hopes that a repetition of such severities might not be requisite in future.

The next morning the treacherous Koah came off to the ships, as usual. There being no longer any necessity for keeping terms with him, Mr. King was allowed to treat him as he thought proper. When he approached the side of the Resolution, singing a song, and offering a hog and some plantains to Mr. King, the latter ordered him to keep off, and cautioned him never to make his appearance again without the bones of Captain Cook, lest his life should pay the forfeit of his repeated breach of faith. He did not appear much mortified with this unwelcome reception, but immediately returned on shore, and joined a party of his countrymen, who were throwing stones at our waterers.

The islanders being at length convinced that it was not the want of ability to chastize them, which had induced us at first to tolerate their provocations, desisted from molesting our people; and, towards the evening, a chief, named Eappo, who had seldom visited us, but whom we knew to be a man of the first distinction, came with presents from Terreeoboo to sue for peace. These presents were accepted, and the chief was dismissed with the following answer: That no peace would be granted, till the remains of Captain Cook should be restored.

We were informed by Eappo, that the flesh of all the bones of our people who had been slain, as well as the bones of the trunks, had been burnt; that the limb-bones of the marines had been distributed among the inferior chiefs; and that the remains of Captain Cook had been disposed of as follows: the head to a great *Eree*, called

Ka-

Kahooopeou; the hair to Maiha-maiha; and the arms, legs and thighs to Terreeoboo. After it was dark, many of the natives came off with various sorts of vegetables; and we also received from Kaireekeea two large presents of the same articles.

The next day was principally employed in sending and receiving the messages that passed between Captain Clerke and the old king. Eappo was very urgent, that one of our officers should go on shore; and offered to remain on board, in the mean time as an hostage. This request, however, was not complied with; and he left us with a promise of bringing the bones the following day. Our watering party, at the beach, did not meet with the least opposition from the islanders; who, notwithstanding our cautious behaviour, again ventured themselves amongst us without any marks of diffidence or apprehension.

On Saturday the 20th, early in the morning, we had the satisfaction of getting the fore-mast stepped. This operation was attended with considerable difficulty, and some danger, our ropes being so extremely rotten, that the purchase several times gave way.

This morning, between the hours of ten and eleven, we saw a numerous body of the natives descending the hill, which is over the beach, in a sort of procession, each man carrying on his shoulders two or three sugar-canes, and some bread-fruit, plantains, and taro, in his hand. They were preceded by two drummers, who, when they reached the water-side, seated themselves by a white flag, and began beating their drums, while those who had followed them, advanced, one by one, and deposited the presents they had brought with them; after which they retired in the same order. Soon afterwards Eappo appeared in his long feathered cloak, bearing something with great solemnity in his hands; and having stationed himself on a rock, he made signs that a boat should be sent him.

Captain Clerke, supposing that the chief had brought the bones of Captain Cook (which, indeed, proved to be the case,) went himself in the pinnace to receive

them, and ordered Mr. King to attend him in the cutter. When they arrived at the beach, Eappo, entering the pinnace, delivered the bones to Captain Clerke, wrapped up in a great quantity of fine new cloth, and covered with a spotted cloak of black and white feathers. He afterwards attended our gentlemen to the Resolution, but could not be prevailed on to accompany them on board; being, perhaps, from a sense of decency, unwilling to be present at the opening of the parcel.

We found, in this bundle, both the hands of Captain Cook entire, which were well known to us from a scar on one of them, that divided the fore-finger from the thumb, the whole length of the metacarpal bone; the skull, but with the scalp separated from it, and the bones of the face wanting; the scalp, with the ears adhering to it, and the hair upon it cut short; the bones of both the arms, with the skin of the fore-arms hanging to them; the bones of the thighs and legs joined together, but without the feet. The ligaments of the joints were observed to be entire; and the whole shewed sufficient marks of having been in the fire, except the hands, which had the flesh remaining upon them, and were cut in several places, and crammed with salt, most probably with a view of preserving them. The skull was free from any fracture, but the scalp had a cut in the back part of it. The lower jaw and feet, which were wanting, had been seized, as Eappo informed us, by different *Erees*; and he also told us, that Terreeoboo was using every means to recover them.

Eappo and the king's son came on board the next morning, and brought with them not only the remaining bones of Captain Cook, but likewise the barrels of his gun, his shoes and some other trifles which had belonged to him. Eappo assured us, that Terreeoboo, Maihamaiha, and himself were extremely desirous of peace; that they had given us the most convincing proofs of it; and that they had been prevented from giving it sooner by the other chiefs, many of whom were still disaffected to us. He lamented, with the most lively sorrow, the death of six chiefs, who had been killed by our people;

people; some of whom, he said, were among our best friends. He informed us, that the cutter had been taken away by Pareea's people, probably in revenge for the blow that he had received; and that it had been broken up the following day. The arms of the marines, which we had also demanded, had been carried off, he said, by the populace, and were irrecoverable.

Nothing now remained, but to perform the last solemn offices to our excellent Commander. Eappo was dismissed with orders to *taboo* all the bay; and, in the afternoon, the bones having been deposited in a coffin, the funeral service was read over them, and they were committed to the deep with the usual military honours. Our feelings, on this mournful occasion, are more easily conceived than expressed.

During the morning of the 22d, not a canoe was seen in the bay. The *taboo*, which Eappo, at our desire, had laid on it the preceding day, not being yet taken off. At length that chief came off to us. We assured him, that we were now perfectly satisfied; and that, as the *Orono* was buried, all remembrance of the late unhappy transactions was buried with him. We afterwards requested him to take off the *taboo*, and to make it known, that the islanders might bring provisions to us as usual. The ships were soon surrounded with canoes, and many of the *Erees* came on board, expressing their grief at what had happened, and their satisfaction at our reconciliation. Several of our friends, who did not favour us with a visit, sent presents of large hogs, and other provisions. Among the rest, the old treacherous Koah came off to us, but we refused him admittance.

As we were now prepared for putting to sea, Captain Clerke imagining, that, if the intelligence of our proceedings should reach the islands to leeward before us, it might have a bad effect, gave orders, that the ships should be unmoored. About eight in the evening, we dismissed all the natives; and Eappo, and the friendly Kaireekeea, took their leave of us in a very

affectionate manner. We immediately weighed anchor, and stood out of Karakakooa bay. The islanders were assembled in great numbers on the shore; and, as we passed along, received our last farewels, with every mark of good-will and affection.

Having cleared the land about ten, we stood to the northward, with a view of searching for an harbour, which the natives had often mentioned, on the south-east side of Mowee. We were, however, driven to leeward by the current and strong easterly winds; and on the 24th passed a small barren island, named Tahoorowa.

On the 28th, at day-light, we bore away for the island of Atooi, and were in sight of it by noon.

Being anchored in our old station, several canoes came to visit us; but it was very observable, that there was not that appearance of cordiality in their manner, and complacency in their countenances, as when we saw them before.

The principal object in view, at this place, was to water the ships with as much expedition as possible; and Mr. King was sent on shore in the afternoon, with the launch and pinnace, laden with casks. He was accompanied by the gunner of the Resolution, who was instructed to trade for some provisions; and they were attended by a guard of five marines. Multitudes of people were collected upon the beach, by whom, at first, we were kindly received; but, after we had landed the casks, they began to be exceedingly troublesome. They were not only very insolent in their behaviour to the watering party, but demanded a hatchet for every cask we took.

Some of them, under pretence of assisting the sailors in rolling the casks towards the shore, gave them a different direction; others stole the hats from off our people's heads, pulled them backward by the skirts of their clothes, and tripped up their heels; the populace, during all this time, shouting and laughing, with a mixture of mockery and malice. They afterwards

took

took an opportunity of ſtealing the cooper's bucket, and forcibly took away his bag. Their principal aim, however, was to poſſeſs themſelves of the muſquets of the marines, who were continually complaining of their attempts to force them from their hands. Though they, in general, preſerved a kind of deference and reſpect for Mr. King, yet they obliged him to contribute his ſhare towards their ſtock of plunder. One of them approached him in a familiar manner, and diverted his attention, whilſt another ſeized his hanger, which he held careleſſly in his hand, and ran away with it.

On the 3d of March, we completed our watering; and, on returning to the ſhips, we were informed, that ſeveral chiefs had been on board, and had apologized for the conduct of their countrymen, attributing their riotous behaviour to the quarrels then ſubſiſting among the principal people of the iſland, and which had deſtroyed all order and ſubordination.

The 4th, 5th, and 6th, were employed in completing the Diſcovery's water. The carpenters were engaged in caulking the ſhips, and preparing for our next cruiſe. We no longer received any moleſtation from the natives, who ſupplied us plentifully with pork and vegetables.

At nine in the morning of the 8th, we weighed, and proceeded towards Oneeheow, and came to anchor in twenty fathoms water, at about three in the afternoon, nearly on the ſpot where we anchored in 1778.

Being now on the point of taking our final leave of the Sandwich Iſlands, we ſhall here give a general account of their ſituation and natural hiſtory, as well as of the cuſtoms and manners of the natives. This will ſerve as a kind of ſupplement to the former deſcription, which was the reſult of our firſt viſit to theſe iſlands.

This group is compoſed of eleven iſlands, extending in longitude from 199° 36′, to 205° 6′ eaſt, and in latitude from 18° 54′, to 22° 15′ north. Their names, according to the natives, are, 1. Owhyhee. 2. Atooi, Atowi, or Towi; which is alſo ſometimes called Kowi. 3. Woahoo, or Oahoo. 4. Mowee. 5. Morotoi, or

Morokoi. 6. Oreehoua, or Reehoua. 7. Morotinnee, or Morokinnee. 8. Tahoora. 9. Ranai, or Oranai. 10. Oneeheow, or Neeheehow. 11. Kahowrowee, or Tahoorowa. These are all inhabited, except Tahoora and Morotinnee.

Captain Cook had distinguished this cluster of islands by the name of the Sandwich Islands, in honour of the Earl of Sandwich, then first Lord of the Admiralty, under whose administration he had enriched Geography with so many valuable discoveries.

Owhyhee, the most easterly of these islands, and by far the largest of them all, is of a triangular figure, and nearly equilateral. The angular points constitute the northern, southern, and eastern extremities. The circumference of the whole island is about 255 geographical miles, or 293 English ones. Its breadth is twenty-four leagues; and its greatest length, which lies nearly in a north and south direction, is twenty-eight leagues and a half.

We shall now relate some particulars respecting the interior parts of Owhyhee, from the information we obtained from a party, who set out on the 26th of January, on an expedition up the country. Having previously procured two of the islanders to serve them as guides, they quitted the village about four o'clock in the afternoon. They soon arrived at some extensive plantations, consisting of the *taro* or eddy root, and sweet potatoes, with plants of the cloth-tree.

Our party stopped for the night at the second hut they observed among the plantations, where they supposed themselves to be six or seven miles distant from our ships. The prospect from this spot was described by them as very delightful: they had a view of our vessels in the bay before them; to the left they saw a continued range of villages, interspersed with groves of cocoa-nut trees, spreading along the shore; a thick wood extending itself behind them; and, to the right, a very considerable extent of ground, laid out with great regularity in well cultivated plantations, displayed itself to their view.

Our

Our travellers did not observe a spot of ground, that was susceptible of improvement, left unplanted; and, indeed, the country, from their account, could scarcely be cultivated to greater advantage for the purposes of the natives. They were surprised at seeing several fields of hay; and, upon their enquiry, to what particular use it was applied, they were informed, that it was intended to cover the grounds where the young *taro* grew, in order to preserve them from being scorched by the rays of the sun. They observed, among the plantations, a few huts scattered about, which afforded occasional shelter to the labourers: but they did not see any villages at a greater distance from the sea than four or five miles. Near one of them, which was situated about four miles from the bay, they discovered a cave, forty fathoms in length, three in breadth, and of the same height. It was open at each end; its sides were fluted, as if wrought with a chissel, and the surface was glazed over, perhaps by the action of fire.

That which is next in size, and nearest in situation to Owhyhee, is Mowee. It stands at the distance of eight leagues north-north-west from Owhyhee, and is one hundred and forty geographical miles in circuit. It is divided by a low isthmus into two circular peninsulas, of which that to the eastward is named Whamadooa, and is twice as large as that to the west, called Owhyrookoo. The mountains in both rise to a very great height, as we were able to see them at the distance of above thirty leagues.

The country is very romantic in its appearance. The hills rise almost perpendicularly, exhibiting a variety of peaked forms; and their steep sides, as well as the deep chasms between them, are covered with trees, among which those of the bread-fruit principally abound. The summits of these hills are perfectly bare, and of a reddish brown hue.

Ranai is about nine miles distant from Mowee and Morotoi, and is situate to the south-west of the passage between those two isles. The country, towards the south, is elevated and craggy; but the other parts of the island

island had a better appearance, and seemed to be well inhabited. It abounds in roots, such as sweet potatoes, *taro*, and yams; but produces very few plantains, and bread-fruit trees.

Morotoi lies at the distance of two leagues and a half to the west-north-west of Mowee. Yams are its principal produce; and it may probably contain fresh water. The coast, on the southern and western sides of the island, forms several bays, that promise a tolerable shelter from the trade winds.

Tahourowa is a small island situated off the south-western part of Mowee, from which it is nine miles distant. It is destitute of wood, and its soil seems to be sandy and unfertile. Between it and Mowee stands the little island of Morrotinnee, which has no inhabitants.

Woahoo lies about seven leagues to the north-west of Morotoi. As far as we were enabled to judge, from the appearance of the north-western and north-eastern parts (for we had not an opportunity of seeing the southern side) it is by far the finest of all the Sandwich islands. The verdure of the hills, the variety of wood and lawn, and fertile, well-cultivated vallies, which the whole face of the country presented to view, could not be exceeded.

Atooi is about twenty-five leagues to the north-west of Woahoo. Towards the north-east and north-west, the face of the country is ragged and broken; but, to the southward, it is more even; the hills rise from the sea-side with a gentle acclivity, and, at a little distance back, are covered with wood. Its produce is the same with that of the other islands of this cluster; but its inhabitants greatly excel the people of all the neighbouring islands in the management of their plantations.

Oneeheow is five or six leagues to the westward of Atooi. Its eastern coast is high, and rises with abruptness from the sea; but the other parts of the island consist of low ground, except a round bluff head on the south-eastern point. It produces plenty of yams, and of the sweet root called *tee*.

The climate of the Sandwich Isles is, perhaps, rather

ther more temperate than that of the Weſt-India iſlands, which are in the ſame latitude; but the difference is very inconſiderable.

There was a greater quantity of rain, particularly in the interior parts, during the four winter months that we continued among theſe iſlanders, than commonly falls in the Weſt-Indies in the dry ſeaſon.

With reſpect to the quadrupeds of theſe iſlands, they are confined to three ſorts, namely, hogs, dogs, and rats. The dogs are of the ſame ſpecies with thoſe we ſaw at Otaheite, having pricked ears, long backs, and ſhort crooked legs; but it did not appear that the dogs in the Sandwich Iſlands were near ſo numerous, in proportion, as at Otaheite. They have a much greater quantity of hogs, and the breed is of a larger kind.

The birds of theſe iſlands are numerous, though the variety is not great. Some of them may vie with thoſe of any country in point of beauty.

The vegetable produce of the Sandwich Iſles is not very different from that of the other iſlands of the Pacific Ocean.

The natives of the Sandwich Iſles are doubtleſs of the ſame extraction with the inhabitants of the Friendly and Society Iſlands, of New-Zealand, the Marqueſas, and Eaſter Iſland; a race which poſſeſſes all the known lands between the longitudes of 167° and 260° eaſt, and between the latitudes of 47° ſouth, and 22° north. This fact, extraordinary as it is, is not only evinced by the general reſemblance of their perſons, and the great ſimilarity of their manners and cuſtoms, but ſeems to be eſtabliſhed, beyond all controverſy, by the identity of their language.

The Sandwich Iſlanders, in general, exceed the middle ſize, and are well made. They walk in a very graceful manner, run with conſiderable agility, and are capable of enduring a great degree of fatigue: but, upon the whole, the men are inferior, with reſpect to activity and ſtrength, to the inhabitants of the Friendly Iſlands, and the women are leſs delicate in the formation of their limbs than the Otaheitean females. Their

complection is ſomewhat darker than that of the Otaheiteans; and they are not altogether ſo handſome in their perſons as the natives of the Society Iſles. Many of both ſexes, however, had fine open countenances; and the women, in particular, had white, well-ſet teeth, good eyes, and an engaging ſweetneſs and ſenſibility of look.

The ſame ſuperiority that we generally obſerved at other iſlands in the perſons of the *Erees*, is likewiſe found here. Thoſe that were ſeen by us were perfectly well formed; whereas the lower claſs of people, beſides their general inferiority, are ſubject to all the variety of ſhape and make, that is met with in the populace of other parts of the world.

It muſt be acknowledged, notwithſtanding the great loſs we ſuſtained from the ſudden reſentment and violence of theſe iſlanders, that they are of a very mild and affectionate diſpoſition, equally remote from the diſtant gravity and reſerve of the natives of the Friendly Iſles, and the extreme volatility of the Otaheiteans. They ſeem to live in the greateſt friendſhip and harmony with each other. Thoſe women who had children, ſhewed a remarkable affection for them, and paid them a particular and conſtant attention; and the men, with a willingneſs that did honour to their feelings, frequently afforded their aſſiſtance in thoſe domeſtic employments. We muſt, however, remark, that they are greatly inferior to the inhabitants of the other iſlands, in that beſt criterion of civilized manners, the reſpect paid to the female ſex. Here the women are not only deprived of the privilege of eating with the men, but are forbidden to feed on the beſt ſorts of proviſions. Turtle, pork, ſeveral kinds of fiſh, and ſome ſpecies of plantains, are denied them; and we were informed, that a girl received a violent beating, for having eaten, while ſhe was on board one of our ſhips, a prohibited article of food. With regard to their domeſtic life, they ſeem to live almoſt wholly by themſelves, and meet with little attention from the men, though no inſtances of perſonal ill-treatment were obſerved by us.

Theſe

Thefe people, in point of natural capacity, are by no means below the common ftandard of the human race. The excellence of their manufactures, and their improvements in agriculture, are doubtlefs adequate to their fituation and natural advantages. The eagernefs of curiofity, with which they ufed to attend the armourer's forge, and the various expedients which they had invented, even before our departure from thefe iflands, for working the iron obtained from us, into fuch forms as were beft calculated for their purpofes, were ftrong indications of docility and ingenuity.

It is highly probable, that the practice of feeding on the bodies of enemies, was originally prevalent in all the iflands of the Pacific Ocean, though it is not known, by pofitive and decifive evidence, to exift in any of them, except New-Zealand. The offering up human victims, which is manifeftly a relique of this barbarous cuftom, ftill univerfally obtains among thefe iflanders; and it is not difficult to conceive why the inhabitants of New-Zealand fhould retain the repaft, which was, perhaps, the concluding part of thefe horrid rites, for a longer period than the reft of their tribe, who were fituated in more fertile regions. As the Sandwich iflanders, both in their perfons and difpofition, bear a nearer refemblance to the New-Zealanders, than to any other people of this very extenfive race, Mr. Anderfon was ftrongly inclined to fufpect, that, like them, they are ftill cannibals.

The Sandwich iflanders, almoft univerfally, permit their beards to grow. There were, however, a few who cut off their beard entirely, among whom was the aged king; and others wore it only on their upper lid. The fame variety that is found among the other iflanders of this ocean, with refpect to the mode of wearing the hair, is likewife obfervable here. Some of them wear great quantities of falfe hair, flowing in long ringlets down their backs; while others tie it into one round bunch on the upper part of their heads, nearly as large as the head itfelf; and fome into fix or feven feparate bunches. They ufe, for the purpofe of daubing or

fmearing

ſmearing their hair, a greyiſh clay, mixed with ſhells reduced to powder, which they keep in balls, and chew into a ſort of paſte, whenever they intend to make uſe of it. This compoſition preſerves the ſmoothneſs of the hair, and changes it, in proceſs of time, to a pale yellow.

Necklaces, conſiſting of ſtrings of ſmall variegated ſhells, are worn by both men and women. They alſo wear an ornament, about two inches in length, and half an inch in breadth, ſhaped like the handle of a cup, and made of ſtone, wood, or ivory, extremely well poliſhed: this is hung round the neck by fine threads of twiſted hair, which are ſometimes doubled an hundred fold. Some of them, inſtead of this ornament, wear a ſmall human figure on their breaſt, formed of bone, and ſuſpended in a ſimilar manner.

The practice of *tatooing*, or puncturing the body, prevails among theſe people; and, of all the iſlands in this ocean, it is only at New-Zealand, and the Sandwich Iſles, that the face is *tatooed*.

The common dreſs of the men of all ranks conſiſts, in general, of a piece of thick cloth called the *maro*, about a foot in breadth, which paſſes between the legs, and is faſtened round the waiſt. Their mats, which are of various ſizes, but, for the moſt part, about five feet in length, and four in breadth, are thrown over their ſhoulders, and brought forward before. Theſe, however, are rarely made uſe of, except in time of war: for which purpoſe they appear to be better calculated than for common uſe, ſince they are of a thick heavy texture, and capable of breaking the blow of a ſtone, or of any blunt weapon. They generally go bare-footed, except when they travel over burnt ſtones, on which occaſion they ſecure their feet with a kind of ſandal, which is made of cords, twiſted from cocoa-nut fibres.

Beſides their ordinary dreſs, there is another, which is appropriated to their chiefs, and worn only on extraordinary occaſions. It conſiſts of a feathered cloak and cap, or helmet, of uncommon beauty and magni-

ficence.

ficence. This dreſs having been minutely deſcribed, in a former part of our work, we have only to add, that theſe cloaks are of different lengths, in proportion to the rank of the perſon who wears them; ſome trailing on the ground, and others no lower than the middle.

They dwell together in ſmall towns or villages, which contain from about one hundred to two hundred houſes, built pretty cloſe to each other, without order or regularity, and have a winding path that leads through them. They are frequently flanked, towards the ſea-ſide, with looſe detached walls, which are, in all probability, intended for ſhelter and defence. They are of various dimenſions, from forty-five feet by twenty-four, to eighteen by twelve. Some are of a larger ſize, being fifty feet in length, and thirty in breadth, and entirely open at one end. Theſe, we were informed, were deſigned for the accommodation of ſtrangers or travellers, whoſe ſtay was likely to be ſhort.

The people of an inferior claſs feed principally on fiſh and vegetables, ſuch as plantains, bread-fruit, ſweet potatoes, ſugar-canes, yams, and *taro*. To theſe, perſons of ſuperior rank add the fleſh of dogs and hogs, dreſſed after the ſame method that is practiſed at the Society Iſles. They likewiſe eat fowls of a domeſtic kind, which, however, are neither plentiful, nor in any great degree of eſtimation.

They ſalt their fiſh, and preſerve them in gourd-ſhells; not, indeed, with a view of providing againſt an occaſional ſcarcity, but from the inclination they have for ſalted proviſions; for we alſo found, that the chiefs frequently had pieces of pork pickled in the ſame manner, which they conſidered as a great delicacy. Their cookery is much the ſame as at the Friendly and Society Iſlands; and though ſome of our people diſliked their *taro* puddings, on account of their ſourneſs, others were of a different opinion.

They are very cleanly in their meals; and their method of dreſſing both their vegetable and animal food, was

was univerſally acknowledged to be ſuperior to our's. The *Ereas* conſtantly begin their meals with a doſe of the extract of pepper-root, or *ava*, prepared in the uſual mode.

They generally riſe with the ſun; and, after having enjoyed the cool of the evening, retire to their repoſe a few hours after ſun-ſet. The *Erees* are occupied in making canoes and mats; the *Towtows* are chiefly employed in the plantations, and alſo in fiſhing; and the women are engaged in the manufacture of cloth. They amuſe themſelves, in their leiſure hours, with various diverſions. Their young perſons, of both ſexes, are fond of dancing; and, on more ſolemn occaſions, they entertain themſelves with wreſtling and boxing matches, performed after the manner of the natives of the Friendly Iſlands; to whom, however, they are greatly inferior in all theſe reſpects.

The muſic of theſe people is of a rude kind; for the only muſical inſtruments that we obſerved among them, were drums of various ſizes. Their ſongs, however, which they are ſaid to ſing in parts, and which they accompany with a gentle motion of their arms, like the inhabitants of the Friendly Iſlands, have a very pleaſing effect.

They are greatly addicted to gambling. One of their games reſembles our game of draughts; but, from the number of ſquares, it ſeems to be much more intricate. The board is of the length of about two feet, and is divided into two hundred and thirty-eight ſquares, fourteen in a row. In this game they uſe black and white pebbles, which they move from one ſquare to another. Another of their games conſiſts in concealing a ſtone under ſome cloth, which is ſpread out by one of the parties, and rumpled in ſuch a manner, that it is difficult to diſtinguiſh where the ſtone lies. The antagoniſt then ſtrikes, with a ſtick, that part of the cloth where he ſuppoſes the ſtone to be; and the chances being, upon the whole, againſt his hitting it, odds of all degrees, varying with the opinion of the dexterity of the parties, are laid on the occaſion.

They

They often entertain themſelves with races between boys and girls; on which occaſions they lay wagers with great ſpirit. We ſaw a man beating his breaſt, and tearing his hair, in the violence of rage, for having loſt three hatches at one of theſe races, which he had purchaſed from us with near half his property a very little time before.

Both ſexes are ſurpriſingly expert in ſwimming, which, among theſe people, is not only deemed a neceſſary art, but is alſo a favourite diverſion. One particular method, in which we ſometimes ſaw them amuſe themſelves with this exerciſe, in Karakakooa bay, deſerves to be related. The ſurf, that breaks on the coaſt round this bay, extends about one hundred and fifty yards from the ſhore; and, within that ſpace, the ſurges of the ſea are daſhed againſt the beach with extreme violence. Whenever the impetuoſity of the ſurf is augmented to its greateſt height, they make choice of that time for this amuſement, which they perform in the following manner. About twenty or thirty of the iſlanders take each a long, narrow board, rounded at both ends, and ſet out from the ſhore in company with each other. They plunge under the firſt wave they meet, and, after they have ſuffered it to roll over them, riſe again beyond it, and ſwim farther out into the ſea. They encounter the ſecond wave in the ſame manner with the firſt. The principal difficulty conſiſts in ſeizing a favourable opportunity of diving under it; for, if a perſon miſſes the proper moment, he is caught by the ſurf, and forced back with great violence; and his utmoſt dexterity is then required, to prevent his being daſhed againſt the rocks. When, in conſequence of theſe repeated efforts, they have gained the ſmooth water beyond the ſurf, they recline themſelves at length upon their board, and prepare for their return to ſhore. As the ſurf is compoſed of a number of waves, of which every third is obſerved to be conſiderably larger than the reſt, and to flow higher upon the ſhore, while the others break in the intermediate ſpace, their firſt object is to place themſelves on the top of the largeſt

ſurge,

ſurge, which drives them along with aſtoniſhing rapidity towards the land. If they ſhould place themſelves, by miſtake, on one of the ſmaller waves, which breaks before they gain the ſhore, or ſhould find themſelves unable to keep their board in a proper direction on the upper part of the ſwell, they remain expoſed to the fury of the next; to avoid which, they are under the neceſſity of diving again, and regaining the place whence they ſet out. Thoſe perſons who ſucceed in their object of reaching the ſhore, are ſtill in a very hazardous ſituation. As the coaſt is defended by a chain of rocks, with a ſmall opening between them in ſeveral places, they are obliged to ſteer their plank through one of theſe openings; or, in caſe of ill ſucceſs in that reſpect, to quit it before they reach the rocks, and, diving under the wave, make their way back again as well as they are able. This is conſidered as highly diſgraceful, and is attended with the loſs of the plank, which we have ſeen daſhed to pieces, at the very inſtant the native quitted it. The amazing courage and addreſs, with which they perform theſe dangerous manœuvres, are almoſt incredible.

Their method of agriculture, as well as navigation, reſembles that of the other iſlands of the Pacific Ocean. They have made conſiderable proficiency in ſculpture, and their ſkill in painting or ſtaining cloth, and in the manufacture of mats, is very great. The moſt curious ſpecimens of their ſculpture, that we had an opportunity of obſerving, were the wooden bowls, in which the *Erees* drink *ava*. Theſe are, in general, eight or ten inches in diameter, perfectly round, and extremely well poliſhed. They are ſupported by three or four ſmall human figures, repreſented in different attitudes. Some of them reſt on the ſhoulders of their ſupporters; others on the hands, extended over the head; and ſome on the head and hands. The figures are very neatly finiſhed, and accurately proportioned; and even the anatomy of the muſcles is well expreſſed.

Their fiſhing-hooks are of various ſizes and figures; but thoſe which are principally made uſe of, are about

two

two or three inches in length, and are formed in the ſhape of a ſmall fiſh, ſerving as a bait, with a bunch of feathers faſtened to the head or tail. They make their hooks of bone, mother-of-pearl, or wood, pointed and barbed with little bones or tortoiſe-ſhell. Thoſe with which they fiſh for ſharks, are very large, being, in general, of the length of ſix or eight inches. Conſidering the materials of which theſe hooks are compoſed, their neatneſs and ſtrength are amazing; and, indeed, upon trial, we found them ſuperior to our own.

Of the bark of the *touta*, or cloth-tree, neatly twiſted, they form the line which they uſe for fiſhing, for making nets, and for ſome other purpoſes.

The warlike weapons of theſe people are daggers, which they call by the name *pahooa*; ſpears, ſlings, and clubs. The *pahooa* is made of a black heavy wood, that reſembles ebony. It is commonly from one to two feet in length; and has a ſtring paſſing through the handle, by which it is ſuſpended to the arm. The blade is ſomewhat rounded in the middle; the ſides are ſharp, and terminate in a point. This inſtrument is intended for cloſe engagements; and, in the hands of the natives, is a very deſtructive one.

Their ſpears are of two kinds, and are formed of a hard wood, which, in its appearance, is not unlike mahogany. One ſort is from ſix to eight feet in length, well poliſhed, and increaſing gradually in thickneſs from the extremity till within the diſtance of ſix or ſeven inches from the point, which tapers ſuddenly, and has five or ſix rows of barbs. It is probable that theſe are uſed in the way of javelins. The other ſort, with which the warriors we ſaw at Atooi and Owhyhee were chiefly armed, are from twelve to fifteen feet in length; and, inſtead of being barbed, terminate towards the point in the manner of their daggers.

Their ſlings are the ſame with our common ſlings, except in this reſpect, that the ſtone is lodged on matting inſtead of leather. Their clubs are formed indifferently of ſeveral kinds of wood: they are of various ſizes and ſhapes, and of rude workmanſhip.

In

In the Sandwich Islands, the inhabitants are divided into three classes. The *Erees*, or chiefs of each district, are the first; and one of these is superior to the rest, who is called, at Owhyhee, *Eree-taboo*, and *Eree Moee*; the first name expressing his authority, and the latter signifying that, in his presence, all must prostrate themselves. Those of the second class appear to enjoy a right of property, but have no authority. Those who compose the third class, are called *tawtews*, or servants, and have not either rank or property.

The superior power and distinction of Terreeoboo, the Eree-taboo of Owhyhee, was sufficiently evident from his reception at Karakakooa, on his first arrival. The inhabitants all prostrated themselves at the entrance of their houses; and the canoes were *tabooed*, till he discharged the interdict. He was then just returned from Mowee, an island he was contending for, in behalf of his son Teewarro, whose wife was the only child of the king of that place, against Taheeterree, his surviving brother. In this expedition, he was attended by many of his warriors; but we could never learn whether they served him as volunteers, or whether they held their rank and property by that tenure.

That the subordinate chiefs are tributary to him, is evidently proved in the instance of Kaoo, which has been already related. It has also been observed, that the two most powerful chiefs of the Sandwich Islands, are Terreeoboo, and Perreeorannee; the former being chief of Owhyhee, and the latter of Woahoo; all the smaller isles being governed by one of these sovereigns; Mowee was, at this time, claimed by Terreeoboo, for his son and intended successor; Atooi and Oneeheow being in the possession of the grandsons of Perreeorannee.

The *Erees* appear to have unlimited power over the inferior classes of people; many instances of which occurred daily whilst we continued among them. On the other hand, the people are implicitly obedient. It is remarkable, however, that we never saw the chiefs exercise

ercise any acts of cruelty, injustice, or insolence towards them; though they put in practice their power over each other, in a most tyrannical degree: which is fully proved by the two following instances.

One of the lower order of chiefs, having shewn great civility to the master of the ship, on his examination of Karakakooa Bay; Mr. King, some time afterwards, took him on board the Resolution, and introduced him to Captain Cook, who engaged him to dine with us. While we remained at table, Pareea entered, whose countenance manifested the highest indignation at seeing our guest so honourably entertained. He seized him by the hair of the head, and would have dragged him out of the cabin, if the Captain had not interfered. After much altercation, we could obtain no other indulgence (without quarrelling with Pareea) than that our guest should be permitted to remain in the cabin, on condition that he seated himself on the floor, while Pareea occupied his place at the table. An instance, somewhat similar, happened when Terreeoboo came first on board the Resolution; when Maiha-maiha, who attended him, seeing Pareea upon deck, turned him most ignominiously out of the ship; even though we knew Pareea to be a man of the first consequence.

Whether the lower class have their property secured, from the rapacity of the great chiefs, we cannot certainly say, but it appears to be well protected against theft and depredation. All their plantations, their houses, their hogs, and their cloth, are left unguarded, without fear or apprehension. In the plain country, they separate their possessions by walls; and, in the woods where horse-plaintains grow, they use white flags to discriminate property, in the same manner as they do bunches of leaves at Otaheite. These circumstances strongly indicate, that, where property is concerned, the power of the chiefs is not arbitrary; but so far limited, as to afford encouragement to the inferior orders to cultivate the soil, which they occupy distinct from each other.

Their religion resembles that of the Society and Friendly Islands. In common with each other, they have all their *Morais*, their *Whattas*, their sacred songs, and their sacrifices. These are convincing proofs that their religious opinions are derived from the same source. The ceremonies here are, indeed, longer, and more numerous than in the islands above mentioned. And though, in all these places, the care and performance of their religious rites is committed to a particular class of people; yet we had never found a regular society of priests, till we arrived at Kakooa, in Karakakooa Bay.

The prayers and offerings made by the priests before their meals, may be classed among their religious ceremonies. As they always drink *ava* before they begin their repast, whilst that is chewing, the superior in rank begins a sort of hymn, in which he is soon after joined by one or more of the company; the bodies of the others are put in motion, and their hands are gently clapped together in concert with the fingers. The *ava* being ready, cups of it are presented to those who do not join in the hymn, which are held in their hands till it is concluded; when, with united voice, they make a loud response, and drink their *ava*. The performers are then served with some of it, which they drink, after the same ceremony has been repeated; and, if any person of a very superior rank should be present, a cup is presented to him last of all. After chanting for a short time, and hearing a responsive chant from the others, he pours a small quantity on the ground, and drinks the rest. A piece of the flesh, which has been dressed, is then cut off, and, together with some of the vegetables, is placed at the foot of the figure of the Eatooa; and, after another hymn has been chanted, they begin their meal. A ceremony, in many respects resembling this, is also performed by the chiefs, when they drink *ava* between their regular meals.

According to the accounts given by the natives, human sacrifices are more common here, than in any of the

the iſlands we have viſited. They have recourſe to theſe horrid rites on the commencement of a war, and previous to every great battle, or other ſignal enterprize. The death of a chief demands a ſacrifice of one or more *towtows*, according to the rank he bears; and we were informed that no leſs than ten were doomed to ſuffer, on the death of Terreeoboo. This practice, however, is the leſs horrible, as the unhappy victims are totally unacquainted with their fate. Thoſe who are deſtined to fall, are attacked with large clubs, wherever they may happen to be; and, after they are dead, are conveyed to the place where the ſubſequent rites are to be performed.

The knocking out their fore teeth may be, with propriety, claſſed among their religious cuſtoms. Moſt of the common people, and many of the chiefs, had loſt one or more of them; and this, we underſtood, was conſidered as a propitiatory ſacrifice to the Eatooa, to avert his anger; and not, like the cutting off a part of the finger at the Friendly Iſlands, to expreſs the violence of their grief at the deceaſe of a friend.

Of their opinions, with a reſpect to a future ſtate, we had very defective information. On enquiring of them, whither the dead were gone? We were told that the breath, which they ſeemed to conſider as the immortal part, was fled to the *Eatooa*. They ſeemed alſo to give a deſcription of ſome place, which they ſuppoſe to be the abode of the dead; but we could not learn that they had any idea of rewards or puniſhments.

Very little can be ſaid reſpecting their marriages, except that ſuch a compact ſeems to exiſt among them.

The following is the only inſtance of any thing like jealouſy, which we have ſeen among them; and which ſhews, that, among married women of rank, not only fidelity, but even a degree of reſerve is required.

At one of their boxing-matches, Omeah roſe two or three times from his place, and approached his wife with ſtrong marks of diſpleaſure, commanding her, as we

we ſuppoſed, to withdraw. Whether he thought her beauty engaged too much of our attention, or whatever might be his motives, there certainly exiſted no real cauſe of jealouſy. She, however, continued in her place, and, at the concluſion of the entertainment, joined our party, and even ſolicited ſome trifling preſents. She was informed that we had not any about us; but that, if ſhe would accompany us to the tent, ſhe ſhould be welcome to make a choice of what ſhe liked. She was, accordingly, proceeding with us; which, being obſerved by Omeah, he followed in a great rage, ſeized her by the hair, and, with his fiſts, began to inflict ſevere corporal puniſhment. Having been the innocent cauſe of this extraordinary treatment, we were exceedingly concerned at it; though we underſtood it would be highly improper for us to interfere between huſband and wife of ſuch ſuperior rank. The natives, however, at length, interpoſed; and, the next day, we had the ſatisfaction of meeting them together, perfectly ſatisfied with each other; and, what was extremely ſingular, the lady would not permit us to rally the huſband on his behaviour, which we had an inclination to do; plainly telling us, that he had acted very properly.

At Karakakooa Bay, we had twice an opportunity of ſeeing a part of their funeral rites. Hearing of the death of an old chief, not far from our obſervatories, ſome of us repaired to the place, where we beheld a number of people aſſembled. They were ſeated round an area, fronting the houſe where the deceaſed lay; and a man, having on a red feathered cap, came to the door, conſtantly putting out his head, and making a moſt lamentable howl, accompanied with horrid grimaces, and violent diſtortions of the face. A large mat was afterwards ſpread upon the area, and thirteen women and two men, who came out of the houſe, ſat down upon it in three equal rows; three of the women, and the two men, being in front. The women had feathered ruffs on their necks and hands; and their ſhoulders were decorated with broad green leaves,

curiouſly

curiously scolloped. Near a small hut, at one corner of this area, half a dozen boys were placed, waving small white banners, and *taboo* sticks, who would not suffer us to approach them. Hence we imagined, that the dead body was deposited in the hut; but we were afterwards informed that it remained in the house, where the tricks were playing at the door, by the man in the red cap. The company, seated on the mat, sung a melancholy tune, accompanied with a gentle motion of the arms and body. This having continued some time, they put themselves in a posture between kneeling and sitting, and their arms and bodies into a most rapid motion, keeping pace at the same time with the music. These last exertions being too violent to continue, at intervals they had slower motions. An hour having passed in these ceremonies, more mats were spread upon the area, when the dead chief's widow, and three or four other elderly women, came out of the house with slow and solemn pace; and seating themselves before the company, began to wail most bitterly, in which they were joined by the three rows of women behind them; the two men appearing melancholy, and pensive. They continued thus, with little variation, till late in the evening, when we left them; and, at day-light in the morning, the people were dispersed, and every thing appeared perfectly quiet. We were then given to understand, that the body was removed; but we could not learn how it was disposed of. While we were directing our enquiries to this object, we were approached by three women of rank, who signified to us, that our presence interrupted the performance of some necessary rites. Soon after we had left them, we heard their cries and lamentations; and, when we met them a few hours afterwards, the lower part of their faces were painted perfectly black.

BOOK VI.

TRANSACTIONS IN A SECOND EXPEDITION TO THE NORTH, BY THE WAY OF KAMTCHATKA, AND IN RETURNING HOME, BY THE WAY OF CANTON, AND THE CAPE OF GOOD HOPE.

WE weighed anchor on the 15th of March, at ſeven o'clock in the evening, and ſtood to the ſouth-weſt, in expectation of falling in with the iſland of Modoopapappa; the natives having aſſured us that it lay in that direction, within five hours ſail of Tahoora.

Not having ſeen the iſland at eight in the evening, we hauled to the northward till midnight, when we made a ſignal for the Diſcovery to come under our ſtern, having given over all hopes of ſeeing Modoopapappa.

On the 17th we ſteered weſt, Captain Clerke meaning to keep nearly in the ſame parallel of latitude, till we made the longitude of Awatſka Bay, and then to ſteer north for the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, which was alſo fixed on as our rendezvous, if we ſhould happen to ſeparate. This track was choſen, becauſe we ſuppoſed it to be yet unexplored, and we might probably meet with ſome new iſlands in our paſſage.

We had fine weather and a moderate wind, till the 23d, when it increaſed to a ſtrong gale, and continued about twelve hours. Afterwards it became more moderate, and remained ſo till noon on the 25th; at which time we had only a very light air.

In the morning of the 26th, we imagined we ſaw land to the weſt-ſouth-weſt; but we diſcovered our miſtake, after ſailing ſixteen leagues in that direction; and, night approaching, we again ſteered weſt. We purſued this courſe without much alteration in the wind, till the 29th, when it ſhifted about, and was in

in the weſt for a few hours in the night; the weather being cloudy, accompanied with a great deal of rain.

The continuation of the light winds, with the very unſettled ſtate of the weather, and the little expectation we had of any change for the better, induced Captain Clerke to give up his plan of keeping within the tropical latitudes. In conſequence of which, we began, at ſix o'clock this evening, to ſteer north-weſt by north.

About noon on the 6th of April, we loſt the trade wind. We were then in the latitude of 29° 50′, and the longitude of 170° 1′. Our old running ropes having been continually breaking in the late gales, we reeved all the new ones we had left, and made other neceſſary preparations for the different climate we were ſhortly to encounter. The fine weather, which we experienced between the two tropics, had not been miſemployed. The carpenters were ſufficiently engaged in repairing the boats. Our beſt bower cable having received ſo much injury in Karakakooah Bay, and off Oneeheow, as to occaſion forty fathoms to be cut from it, we converted that, together with ſome other old cordage, into ſpun-yarn, and applied it to various purpoſes. By which means, many of our people were kept wholly employed by the boatſwain. Beſides, it was now become a troubleſome and laborious part of our duty to air the ſails, &c. which were continually grown wet, from the leakineſs of the ſides and decks of the veſſels.

There were other cares which had the preſervation of the health of the crews for their object; and theſe continually occupied a great number of our hands. Captain Cook's eſtabliſhed orders of airing the beds, having fires between decks, ſmoking them with gunpowder, and waſhing them with vinegar, was invariably obſerved.

We perceived in the afternoon, ſome of the ſheathing floating by the ſhip; and diſcovered, upon examination, that about fourteen feet had been waſhed off,

under the larboad bow; where the leak was supposed to have been, which had kept the people employed at the pumps, ever since our departure from the Sandwich Islands, making twelve inches water in an hour.

On the 12th, the wind veered to the east, and blew so strong a gale, as to oblige us to strike our topgallant yards. We happened, unfortunately, to be upon the most disadvantageous tack for our leak; but having always kept it under with the hand-pumps, it gave us but little concern till Tuesday the 13th, at six in the afternoon, when a sudden inundation deluged the whole space between decks, and alarmed us much. The water, which had made its way into the coal-hole, not finding a passage into the well, had forced up the platforms over it, and instantaneously set every thing afloat. Our situation was the more distressing, as we could not immediately discover any means of relieving ourselves. It could be of no service to place a pump through the upper-decks into the coal-hole, and it was become impracticable to bale the water out with buckets. We had, therefore, no other expedient left, than to cut a hole through the bulk-head, which separated the coal-hole from the fore-hold, and thus form a passage for the water into the well. Before this could be effected, however, the casks of dry provisions were to be got out of the fore-hold, which took us the remainder of the night; the carpenters, therefore, could not get at the partition till the next morning. The passage being made, the principal part of the water ran into the well, when we were enabled to get out the rest with buckets. The leak was now greatly increased, insomuch that half our people were constantly employed in pumping and baleing, till the 15th at noon. Our men submitted chearfully to this fatigue; and, to add to their sufferings, they had not a dry place to sleep in; but, in order to make them some amends, they were permitted to have their full allowance of grog.

As the weather grew more moderate, and the swell abated, we cleared away the rest of the casks, from the

the fore-hold, and made a proper passage for the water to the pumps.

The increasing inclemency of the northern climate was now severely felt. On the 18th, in the morning, we were in the latitude of 45° 40′, and the longitude of 160° 25′, We had snow, sleet, and strong gales from the south-west. Considering the season of the year, and the quarter from which the wind came, this is a remarkable circumstance.

The gale, which we had on the 18th, had split most of the sails we had bent; and, as these were our second suit, we were obliged to have recourse to our last and best set. Captain Clerke's, difficulties were augmented by the sea being generally so rough, and the ships so extremely leaky, that there was no place to repair the sails in, except his apartments, which was a serious inconvenience to him, in his declining state of health.

At six in the morning, on the 23d, we saw mountains covered with snow, and a high conical rock, at the distance of about three or four leagues. Soon after we had taken this imperfect view, a thick fog appeared. According to our maps, we were now but eight leagues from the entrance of Awatska Bay; therefore, when the weather cleared up, we stood in to take a nearer survey of the country, when a most dismal and dreary prospect presented itself. The coast is straight and uniform, without bays, or inlets; from the shore, the ground rises in moderate hills, and behind them are ranges of mountains, whose summits penetrate the clouds. The whole was covered with snow, except the sides of some cliffs, which rose, too perpendicularly from the sea to permit the snow to lie upon them.

The wind blew strong from the north-east with hazy weather and sleet, from the 24th to the 28th. The ship resembled a complete mass of ice; the shrouds being so incrusted with it, as to double their dimensions; and, indeed, the oldest seaman among us had never experienced such continued showers of sleet, and

that extremity of cold which we had now to encounter. The inclemency of the weather, the difficulty of working our ſhips, and the inceſſant duty required at the pumps, rendered the ſervice intolerable to many of our crew, ſome of whom were much froſt-bitten, and others were confined with colds.

We had, on the 25th, an imperfect glance of the entrance of Awatſka Bay, but could not preſume to enter into it, in the preſent condition of the weather. However, at three in the afternoon, of the 28th, we ſtood in with a fair wind from the ſouthward, having ſoundings from twenty-two to ſeven fathoms.

Paſſing the mouth of the bay, which extends about four miles in length, a circular baſon preſents itſelf, of about twenty-five miles in circumference; in which, at about four o'clock, we anchored in ſix fathom water, fearing to run foul of a ſhoal mentioned by Muller to lie in the channel. Great quantities of looſe ice drifted with the tide into the middle of the bay; but the ſhores were wholly blocked up with it. We looked at every corner of the bay, to ſee if we could diſcern the town of St. Peter and St. Paul, which, from the accounts we had received at Oonalaſhka, we ſuppoſed to be a place of ſtrength and conſequence. At laſt we perceived, to the north-eaſt, ſome miſerable log-houſes, and a few conical huts, amounting, in the whole, to about thirty; which, from their ſituation, we concluded to be Petropaulowſka. In juſtice, however, to the hopitable treatment we found here, it may not be amiſs to anticipate the reader's curioſity, by aſſuring him, that our diſappointment proved in the end, a matter of entertainment to us. In this wretched extremity of the earth, beyond conception barbarous and inhoſpitable, out of the reach of civilization, bound and barricadoed with ice, and covered with ſummer ſnow, we experienced the tendereſt feelings of humanity, joined to a nobleneſs of mind, and elevation of ſentiment, which would have done honour to any clime or nation.

In

In the morning of the 29th, at day-light, Mr. King was ſent with boats to examine the bay, and to preſent the letters to the Ruſſian commander, which we had brought from Oonalaſhka. We proceeded towards the village juſt mentioned, and having advanced as far as we could with the boats, got upon the ice, which reached about half a mile from the ſhore. Mr. King was attended by Mr. Webber, and two of the ſeamen, whilſt the maſter went to finiſh the ſurvey; the jolly boat being left to carry us back.

Probably the inhabibants had not, by this time, ſeen either of the ſhips or the boats; for, even on the ice, no appearance of a living creature could be ſeen in the town. When farther advanced on the ice, a few men were ſeen hurrying backwards and forwards; and afterwards a ſledge, with one perſon in it, drawn by dogs, approached us,

Struck with this unuſual ſight, and admiring the civility of the ſtranger, who we ſuppoſed, was coming to our aſſiſtance, we were aſtoniſhed to ſee him turn ſhort round, and direct his courſe towards the *oſtrog*. We were equally chagrined and diſappointed at this abrupt departure; eſpecially as the journey over the ice began to be both difficult and dangerous. At every ſtep we took, we ſunk almoſt knee-deep in the ſnow; and though there was tolerable footing at the bottom, the weak parts of the ice were not diſcoverable, and we were continually expoſed to the riſk of breaking through it. Indeed this accident actually happened to Mr. King, but by the aſſiſtance of a boat-hook, he was enabled to get upon firm ice again.

The nearer we approaced the ſhore, we found the ice ſtill more broken. The ſight of another ſledge advancing towards us, however, afforded us ſome comfort; but, inſtead of coming to relieve us, the driver ſtopt ſhort, and called out to us. Mr. King immediately held up Iſmyloff's letters. In conſequence of which, he turned about, and went full ſpeed back again; followed with the execrations of ſome of our

party. Unable to draw any conclusion from this unaccountable behaviour, we still proceeded towards the *ostrog*, with the greatest circumspection; and, when at the distance of about a quarter of a mile from it, we observed a body of armed men advancing towards us. To avoid giving them any alarm, and to preserve the most peaceable appearance, Mr. King and Mr. Webber marched in front, and the men who had boat-hooks in their hands, were ordered in the rear. The armed party consisted of about thirty soldiers, preceded by a person with a cane in his hand. Within a few paces of us, he halted, and drew up his men in a martial order. Mr. King presented Ismyloff's letters to him, and vainly endeavoured to make him understand that we were English, and had brought these dispatches from Oonalashka.

Having attentively examined us, he conducted us towards the village in solemn silence, frequently halting his men, and making them perform different parts of their manual exercise; in order to shew us, perhaps, that, if we should presume to offer any violence, we should have to deal with those who knew what they were about.

During the whole of this time, Mr. King was in his wet clothes, shivering with cold; yet he could not avoid being diverted with this military parade, though it was attended by an unseasonable delay. Arriving, at length, at the habitation of the commanding officer of the party, we were ushered in; and, after giving orders to the military without doors, our host appeared, accompanied by the secretary of the port. One of the letters from Ismyloff was now opened, and the other sent express to Bolcheretsk, a town on the west side of Kamtschatka, and the place of residence of the Russian commander of this province.

The officer, who had conducted us to his house, was a serjeant; and also the commander of the *ostrog*, who entertained us with the utmost civility.

On the morning of the 30th, the casks and cables were taken to the quarter-deck, to lighten the vessel for-

forward; and the carpenters proceeded to ſtop the leak, which had occaſioned us ſo much trouble. It was occaſioned by ſome ſheathing falling off from the larboard-bow, and the oakum having been waſhed out from between the planks. We had ſuch warm weather in the middle of the day, that the ice began to break away very faſt, and almoſt choaked up the entrance of the bay. Several of our officers waited upon the ſerjeant, who received them with great civility; and Captain Clerke made him a preſent of two bottles of rum, thinking he could not ſend him any thing more acceptable. In return, he received twenty fine trouts, and ſome excellent fowls of the grouſe kind. Though the bay ſwarmed with ducks and Greenland pigeons, our ſportſmen had no ſucceſs, they were ſo exceedingly ſhy as not to come within ſhot.

On the 1ſt of May, in the morning, we ſaw the Diſcovery ſtanding in the bay; a boat was diſpatched to her aſſiſtance, and ſhe was moored in the afternoon cloſe by the Reſolution.

By the aſſiſtance of an interpreter, we were now enabled to converſe with the Ruſſians, with ſome degree of facility; and the firſt objects of our inquiries, were, the means of procuring freſh proviſions and naval ſtores, particularly the latter, for the want of which we had been long in great diſtreſs. It appeared, upon inquiry, that the whole country about the bay could furniſh no other live cattle than two heifers, and theſe the ſerjeant engaged to procure for us. As to naval ſtores, it was fruitleſs to think of gaining them here, without paying for them a moſt exorbitant price to the merchants. Captain Clerke therefore ſent Mr. King to the Commander at Bolcheretſk, to learn the price of ſtores at that place.

On Mr. King's arrival at the capital, he was received in a public manner, and entertained with the higheſt marks of friendſhip and politeneſs. Major Behm was at this time commander of the garriſon; he not only diſtreſſed himſelf and his family, by making preſents to the Engliſh, of a great part of his ſmall

ſtock of tea, ſugar, and other refreſhments, but even ſupplied them with ſuch naval ſtores as he could procure, at the ſame time abſolutely refuſing all kind of payment, declaring that his Royal miſtreſs would be happy in hearing, that it had been in the power of her ſervants to relieve the ſubjects of ſo faithful an ally.

On the 16th of May, a ſmall bullock was killed, which the ſerjeant had procured for the ſhips' companies. Its weight was two hundred and ſeventy-two pounds. It was ſerved out to both the crews for their Sunday's dinner, and was the firſt freſh beef which they had taſted ſince the departure of our veſſels from the Cape of Good Hope in December 1776; a period of almoſt two years and a half.

John Mackintoſh, the carpenter's mate, expired this evening, after having been afflicted with a dyſentery ever ſince we had left the Sandwich Iſles. He was a peaceable and induſtrious man, and greatly regretted by his meſs-mates. Though he was the fourth perſon that we had loſt by ſickneſs during our voyage, he was the firſt, who, from his age and conſtitution, could be ſaid to have had, on our ſetting out, an equal chance of life with the reſt of his companions. Watman was ſuppoſed by us to be about ſixty years old; and Roberts, and Mr. Anderſon, from the decline which had manifeſtly commenced before our departure from England, moſt probably could not, under any circumſtances, have lived to a later period than they did.

Captain Clerke's health continuing daily to decline, notwithſtanding the ſalutary change of diet which Kamtſchatka afforded him, the prieſt of Paratounca, as ſoon as he was informed of the weak ſtate he was in, ſupplied him every day with milk, bread, fowls, and freſh butter, though his habitation was ſixteen miles from the harbour where our ſhips were ſtationed.

The Ruſſian hoſpital, near the town of St. Peter and St. Paul, was, at our firſt arrival, in a very de-

plorable ſtate. All the ſoldiers were, in a greater or leſs degree, afflicted with the ſcurvy, many being in the laſt ſtage of that diſorder. The reſt of the Ruſſian inhabitants were likewiſe in a ſimilar condition; and we obſerved, that our friend the ſerjeant, by drinking too freely of the ſpirits he had received from us, had brought on himſelf, in the courſe of a few days, ſeveral of the moſt alarming ſymptoms of that diſeaſe. Captain Clerke, deſirous of relieving them from this lamentable ſtate, put them all under the care of our ſurgeons, and gave orders, that a ſupply of ſour krout, and malt, for wort, ſhould be furniſhed for their uſe. A ſurpriſing alteration ſoon took place in the figures of moſt of them; and their ſpeedy recovery was attributed to the effects of the ſweet wort.

On Tueſday the firſt of June, two hundred and fifty poods, or nine thouſand pounds weight of rye flour were brought on board the Reſolution; and the Diſcovery received a proportional quantity. We were ſupplied with this flour from the ſtores of Petropaulowſka. The men were now put on their full allowance of bread, which, from the time of our leaving the Cape of Good Hope, they had not been indulged in. The ſame day, we completed our ſtock of water, ſixty-five tons having been conveyed on board.

We were ſurpriſed, before day-light, on the 15th, with a rumbling noiſe, that reſembled diſtant thunder; and, when the day appeared, we found that the ſides and decks of our ſhips were covered, near an inch thick, with a fine duſt like emery. The air was at the ſame time loaded and obſcured with this ſubſtance; and, towards the volcano mountain, which ſtands to the northward of the harbour, it was exceedingly thick and black, inſomuch that we were unable to diſtinguiſh the body of the hill. About twelve o'clock, and during the afternoon, the loudneſs of the exploſions increaſed; and they were ſucceeded by ſhowers of cinders, which, in general, were the ſize of peas, though many of thoſe that were picked up from the deck were larger than a hazel nut. Several ſmall ſtones, which had

undergone no alteration from the action of fire, fell with the cinders. In the evening we had dreadful claps of thunder, and vivid flashes of lightning, which, with the darkness of the sky, and the sulphureous smell of the air, produced a very awful and tremendous effect. Our distance from the foot of the mountain was about eight leagues.

At day-break on the 16th, we got up our anchors; and it being the intention of Captain Clerke to keep in sight of the coast of Kamtschatka, as much as the weather would allow, in order to ascertain its position, we continued to steer to the north-north-east, with variable light winds till the 18th. The volcano was observed to throw up immense volumes of smoke, and we did not strike ground with one hundred and fifty fathoms of line, at the distance of twelve miles from the shore.

The season being too far advanced for us to make an accurate survey of the coast of Kamtschatka, it was the design of Captain Clerke, in our course to Beering's Straits, to ascertain chiefly the respective situations of the projecting points of the coast. We therefore steered across a spacious bay, laid down between Kamtschatskoi Noss and Olutorskoi Noss, with a view of making the latter; which is represented by the Russian geographers, as terminating the peninsula of Kamtschatka, as being the southern limit of the country of the Kotiacs.

On Tuesday the 22d, we passed a dead whale, which emitted a most horrible smell, perceivable at the distance of three or four miles. It was covered with a very considerable number of gulls, petrels, and other oceanic birds, which were regaling themselves upon it.

At one o'clock in the afternoon of the 25th, when we were in the latitude of 59° 12′, and in the longitude of 168° 35′, a very thick fog came on, about the time we expected to obtain a view of Olutorskoi Noss, which (if Muller's position of it is right) could then have been only a dozen leagues from us; at which

distance we might easily have discerned land at a moderate height. Our depth of water, for the present, was so great, that we had no ground with a hundred and sixty fathoms of line.

However, on the morning of the 28th, about six o'clock, we had sight of land, towards the north west. The coast appeared in hills of a moderate elevation; but, inland, others were observed considerably higher. The snow lying in patches, and no wood appearing, the land had a very barren aspect. We found this land to be St. Thadeus's Noss.

On the 6th of July, at twelve o'clock, our latitude was 67°, and our longitude 191° 6′. Having already passed many large masses of ice, and observed that it adhered, in several places, to the shore of the Asiatic continent, we were not greatly surprized when we fell in, about three o'clock, with an extensive body of it, stretching towards the west. This appearance considerably discouraged our hopes of proceeding much farther to the north this year, than we had done the preceding. There being but little wind in the afternoon, the boats were hoisted out in pursuit of the sea-horses, great numbers of which were seen on the detached pieces of ice; but they returned without success: these animals being extremely shy, and, before our people could come within gun-shot of them, always retreated into the water.

On Friday the 9th, a fresh gale blew from the north-north-west, accompanied with violent showers of snow and sleet. Our latitude, at noon, was 69° 12′, and our longitude 188° 5′; and having now sailed almost forty leagues to the west, along the edge of the ice, without perceiving any opening, or a clear sea beyond it towards the north, we had no prospect of making farther progress to the northward at present. Captain Clerke, therefore, determined to bear away to the south by east, the only quarter which was clear, and to wait till the season was somewhat more advanced, before he made any farther attempts to penetrate through the ice.

In

In consequence of this determination, we made sail to the southward, till the 10th at noon, when we passed considerable quantities of drift ice, and a perfect calm ensued. We continued persevering in this attempt, and on the 19th had reached the latitude of 70° 33′, which was about five leagues short of the point, to which we had advanced the preceding summer; but on the 20th, a connected solid field of ice baffled all our efforts to make a nearer approach to the land, and (as we had some reason to imagine) adhering to it, we relinquished all hopes of a north-east passage to Great Britain.

Captain Clerke now finding it impossible to advance farther to the northward on the American coast, and deeming it equally improbable, that such a prodigious quantity of ice should be dissolved by the few remaining weeks that would terminate the summer, considered it as the best step that could be taken, to trace the sea over to the coast of Asia, and endeavour to find some opening that would admit him farther north, or see what more could be done upon that coast, where he hoped to meet with better success.

The next morning, the 22d of July, the clear water, in which we steered to and fro, did not exceed a mile and a half, and was lessening every moment. At length, after exerting our most strenuous endeavours to clear the loose ice, we were under the necessity of forcing a passage to the south, which we accomplished between seven and eight, though not without subjecting the ship to some very severe shocks. The Discovery was not so successful; for, about eleven o'clock, when she had almost got clear out, she became so entangled by several large pieces, that her progress was stopped, and she immediately dropped to leeward, and fell, broadside foremost, on the edge of a considerable body of ice; and there being an open sea to windward, the surf occasioned her to strike with violence upon it. This mass, at length, either so far broke, or moved, as to give the crew an opportunity of making another effort to escape; but, it unfortunately happened, that, before the ship gathered way enough to be under command,

she

ſhe fell to leeward a ſecond time, on another fragment, and the ſwell rendering it unſafe to lie to windward, and finding no proſpect of getting clear, they puſhed into a ſmall opening, furled their ſails, and made the veſſel faſt with ice-hooks.

We ſaw them in this dangerous ſituation at noon, at the diſtance of about three miles from us, in a north-weſt direction; a freſh gale from the ſouth-eaſt driving more ice towards the north-weſt, and augmenting the body that lay between us. To add to the apprehenſions which began to force themſelves on our minds, between four and five in the afternoon, the weather becoming thick and hazy, we loſt ſight of the Diſcovery. However, that we might be in a ſituation to afford her every poſſible aſſiſtance, we ſtood on cloſe by the edge of the ice. About ſix o'clock the wind ſhifting to the north, gave us ſome hopes that the ice might drift away, and releaſe her from her danger; and in that caſe, as it was uncertain in what condition ſhe might come out, we continued every half hour to fire a gun, with a view of preventing a ſeparation. Our fears for her ſafety did not ceaſe till nine, when we heard her guns fired in anſwer to ours; and not long afterwards, being hailed by her, we were informed, that, upon the change of wind, the ice began to ſeparate; and that her people, ſetting all the ſails, forced a paſſage through it. We found, that ſhe had rubbed off much of the ſheathing from her bows, and was become very leaky, from the violent blows ſhe had received when ſhe fell upon the edge of the ice.

It being now neceſſary to come to ſome determination reſpecting the courſe we were next to ſteer, Captain Clerke diſpatched a boat, with the carpenters, on board the Diſcovery, to make inquiry into the particulars of the damage ſhe had lately received. They returned in the evening, with the report of Captain Gore, and of the carpenters of both veſſels, that the damages ſuſtained were ſuch as would require three weeks to repair; and that it would be requiſite, for that purpoſe, to make the beſt of their way to ſome port.

Thus,

Thus finding our farther progreſs to the north, as well as our nearer approach to either continent, obſtructed by immenſe bodies of ice, we conſidered it as not only injurious to the ſervice, by endangering the ſafety of the ſhips, but likewiſe fruitleſs with reſpect to the deſign of our voyage, to make any farther attempts for the diſcovery of a paſſage. This, therefore, added to Captain Gore's repreſentation, determined Captain Clerke to loſe no more time in what he concluded to be an unattainable object, but to proceed to the bay of Awatſka, to repair our damages there, and, before the winter ſhould ſet in, to take a ſurvey of the coaſt of Japan.

Great was the joy that appeared on the countenance of every individual, as ſoon as Captain Clerke's reſolution were made known. We were all completely weary of a navigation full of danger, and in which the greateſt perſeverance had not been rewarded with the ſmalleſt proſpect of ſucceſs. We therefore turned our faces towards home, after an abſence of three years, with extreme delight and ſatisfaction, notwithſtanding the very long voyage we had ſtill to make.

We continued our voyage till the 31ſt of July; and on Monday the 2d of Auguſt, the weather being clear, we perceived land at noon, forming many elevated hummocks, which bore the appearance of ſepa ate iſlands.

On the 17th, Captain Clerke being no longer able to get out of his bed, ſignified his deſire, that the officers would receive their orders from Mr. King; and directed that we ſhould repair, with all convenient ſpeed, to the bay of Awatſka.

At nine o'clock in the morning, on Sunday the 22d of Auguſt, Capt. Charles Clerke expired, in the thirty-eighth year of his age. His death was occaſioned by a conſumption, which had manifeſtly commenced before his departure from England, and of which he had lingered, during the whole continuance of the voyage. His very gradual decay had for a long time rendered him a melancholy object to his friends; but the firmneſs and equanimity with which he bore it, the conſtant flow

of

of good ſpirits, which he retained even to the laſt hour, and a chearful reſignation to his fate, furniſhed them with ſome conſolation. It was impoſſible not to feel an uncommon degree of compaſſion for a gentleman, who had experienced a ſeries of thoſe difficulties and hardſhips, which muſt be the inevitable lot of every ſeaman, and under which he at laſt ſunk. He was bred to the navy from his youth, and had been in many engagements during the war which began in the year 1756. In the action between the Bellona and Courageux, he was ſtationed in the mizen-top, and was carried overboard with the maſt; but was afterwards taken up, without having received the leaſt injury. He was midſhipman on board the Dolphin, commanded by Commodore Byron, when ſhe firſt ſailed round the world; and was afterwards on the American ſtation. In the year 1768, he engaged in a ſecond voyage round the world, in the ſituation of maſter's mate of the Endeavour; and, during the expedition, ſucceeded to a lieutenancy. In the Reſolution he made a third voyage round the world, in the capacity of ſecond lieutenant; and in a ſhort time after his return, in 1775, he was appointed maſter and commander. In the preſent expedition, he was appointed captain of the Diſcovery, and to accompany Captain Cook. By the calamitous death of the other, he naturally ſucceeded, as has been already related, to the chief command.

It would ſavour of injuſtice and ingratitude to his memory, not to mention, that, during the ſhort time he commanded the expedition, he was moſt remarkably zealous for its ſucceſs. When the principal command devolved upon him, his health began rapidly to decline; and he was unequal, in every reſpect, to encounter the ſeverity of a high northern climate. The vigour of his mind, however, was not, in the leaſt, impaired by the decay of his body; and though he was perfectly ſenſible, that his delaying to return to a warmer climate, was depriving himſelf of the only chance of recovery; yet, ſo attentive was he to his duty, that he was determined not to ſuffer his own ſitua-

ſituation to bias his judgement to the prejudice of the ſervice: he therefore perſevered in the ſearch of a paſſage, till every officer in the expedition declared they were of opinion it was impracticable, and that any farther attempts would be equally hazardous and ineffectual.

Captain King ſent a meſſenger to Captain Gore, to acquaint him with the death of Captain Clerke, who brought a letter from Captain Gore, containing an order for Captain King to exert his utmoſt endeavours to keep in company with the Diſcovery, and, if a ſeparation ſhould happen, to repair, as ſoon as poſſible, St. Peter and St. Paul. In the afternoon we had light airs, which continued till noon on the 23d; when, a freſh breeze ſpringing up from the eaſt, we ſteered for the entrance of Awatſka bay. On the 24th, at one in the morning, we dropped anchor, the ebb tide then ſetting againſt us.

We weighed about nine o'clock, and went up the bay with light airs, which being afterwards ſucceeded by a freſh breeze, we anchored before three, in the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul; having up our enſign half ſtaff, as the body of our late Captain was in the veſſel; and the Diſcovery followed us in a very ſhort time.

Soon after we had anchored, we were viſited by our old friend, the Serjeant, (ſtill the commanding officer of the place) who brought with him a preſent of berries, intended for Captain Clerke. He was much affected at hearing of his death, and ſeeing the coffin wherein his body was depoſited. As the deceaſed Captain had particularly requeſted to be buried on ſhore, and gave the preference to the church at Paratounca, we embraced this opportunity of conſulting with the Serjeant, about the neceſſary ſteps to be purſued on the occaſion.

After much converſation on this ſubject, which was very imperfectly carried on, for want of an interpreter, we gathered intelligence that De L'Iſle, and ſome other Ruſſian gentlemen, who had died here, were buried near

near the barracks, at the *oſtrog* of St. Peter and St. Paul; and that this place would certainly be more eligible than Paratounca, as the church was ſhortly to be removed thither. We, therefore, determined to wait the arrival of the Prieſt of Paratounca, who was immediately to be ſent for, as being the perſon beſt qualified to give us any information we required upon the ſubject. The Serjeant, at the ſame time expreſſed his intentions of ſending an expreſs to the commander of Bolcheretſk, with intelligence of our arrival; when Captain Gore begged to avail himſelf of that opportunity of conveying a letter to him, wherein he requeſted that ſixteen head of black cattle might be ſent with all poſſible diſpatch. And, as the commander was unacquainted with any language except his own, the particulars of our requeſt were communicated to the Serjeant, who not only undertook to ſend the letter, but alſo an explanation of its contents.

It was a general remark among us, that, though the face of the country had improved in its appearance ſince we had left it, the Ruſſians looked even worſe than they did then. They made the very ſame obſervation with reſpect to us; and, as neither party ſeemed pleaſed with the diſcovery, we mutually conſoled ourſelves by caſting the blame upon the country, whoſe verdant and lively complection had occaſioned an appearance of ſallowneſs on our own.

On the 25th of Auguſt, in the morning, Captain Gore, in conſequence of the death of Captain Clerke, made out the new commiſſions. He appointed himſelf to the command of the Reſolution, and Mr. King to that of the Diſcovery. Mr. Lanyan, who was maſter's mate of the Reſolution, and who had been in the capacity in the former voyage, on board the Adventure, was appointed to the vacant lieutenancy. The following arrangements were the conſequence of theſe promotions. Lieutenants Burney and Rickman (from the Diſcovery) were appointed firſt and ſecond Lieutenants of the Reſolution; and Lieutenant Williamſon firſt Lieutenant of the Diſcovery. Captain King, by the permiſſion

permiſſion of Captain Gore, took in four midſhipmen, who had rendered themſelves uſeful to him in aſtonomical calculation; and whoſe aſſiſtance was become the more neceſſary, as we had not an ephemeris for the preſent year. And, that aſtronomical obſervations might not be neglected to be made in either ſhip, Mr. Bayly took Captain King's place in the Reſolution.

On the ſame day, we were attended by the worthy Prieſt of Paratounca. His expreſſions of ſorrow, at the death of Captain Clerke, did honour to his feelings. He confirmed what the Serjeant had related, with regard to the intended removal of the church, and aſſured us the timber was actually preparing; but ſubmitted the choice of either place entirely to Captain Gore.

As the Diſcovery had ſuffered great injury from the ice, eſpecially on the 23d of July, and had continued exceedingly leaky ever ſince, it was apprehended that ſome of her timbers might have ſtarted; the carpenters of the Reſolution were therefore ſent to aſſiſt thoſe of the Diſcovery in repairing her; and they accordingly began to rip the damaged ſheathing from the larboard bow. It was diſcovered, by this operation, that three feet of the third ſtrake were ſtaved, and the timbers ſtarted. To accommodate thoſe who were to be employed on ſhore, a tent was erected, and a party was ſent into the country, north of the harbour, to fell timber. The obſervatories were placed at the weſt end of the village, near which was erected a tent, as an abode for the Captains Gore and King.

On Sunday the 29th, in the afternoon, we performed the laſt ſad offices to Captain Clerke. The officers and crew of the two veſſels attended him in proceſſion to the grave; the ſhips, at the ſame time, firing minute guns; and, at the concluſion of the ſervice, three vollies were fired by the marines. The body was interred under a tree, which ſtands on a little eminence in the valley north of the harbour, where the ſtorehouſes and hoſpital are ſituated; this being, as Captain Gore ſuppoſed, ſuch a ſituation as was moſt

consonant

consonant to the wishes of the deceased. The Priest of Paratounca also recommended this spot, imagining it would be very near the center of the new church. This worthy pastor joined in the procession, walking with the gentleman who read the service. All the Russians in the garrison assembled on the occasion, and respectfully assisted in the solemnity.

From this time to the 30th of September, all hands were employed in preparing the ships for the remainder of their voyage, the Russians having supplied us with such necessaries as that part of the world afforded. This day Captain Gore ordered Captain King to get the ships out of the harbour, that they might be in readiness to sail. This, however, was prevented, by a violent gale of wind on the 1st of October, which continued the whole day; but, on the 2d, both the vessels warped out of the harbour, and anchored in seven fathoms water, about a quarter of a mile from the *ostrog*. The day before we quitted the harbour, some cattle from Verchnei arrived; and, that the men might have the full enjoyment of this seasonably supply, by eating it whilst it was fresh, Captain Gore determined to stay in the same station five or six days longer.

This time was far from being misapplied; for the pumps, sails, and rigging of each ship received an additional repair. Captain King, having obtained permission to use the copper belonging to the Resolution, Captain Gore, was enabled to brew a sufficient quantity of beer to last the crew a fortnight, and to make ten additional puncheons of strong spruce essence. This supply was the more acceptable, as our last cask of spirits was now serving out, except a small quantity reserved for cases of emergency.

On the 6th and 7th of October, the appearance of foul weather prevented our unmooring; but on the 8th, we sailed towards the mouth of the bay, and all the boats were hoisted in; but our progress was stopped by the wind veering to the south, which obliged us to drop another, the *ostrog* bearing north, at the distance of half a league.

At

At four in the afternoon of the 9th we again unmoored; but, whilst we were raising our last anchor, we were informed that the drummer of marines had fled from the boat, which had just left the village, and that he had been lately seen with a Kamtschadale woman, to whom he was known to have been much attached, and who had frequently importuned him to stay behind. This man was entirely useless to us, having been rendered lame by a swelling in his knees; and, on that very account, Captain King was the more unwilling to leave him behind, lest he should become a miserable burden to himself, as well as to the Russians. He therefore applied to the serjeant to send parties of his men in pursuit of him; and, in the mean time, the sailors visited a well-known haunt of his in the neighbourhood, where the drummer and his woman were found together. On the return of our deserter, we weighed anchor, and immediately followed the Resolution.

We shall now give a short description of the peninsula of Kamtschatka, which is situated on the eastern coast of Asia, and extends from 52° to 61° north latitude; the longitude of its extremity to the south being 156° 45° east. This isthmus, joining it to the continent on the north, lies between the gulphs of Olutorsk and Penshinsk. Its extremity to the south is Cape Lopatka; so called from its resembling the blade-bone of a man, which is the signification of that word. The whole peninsula is somewhat in the form of a shoe; and its greatest breath is two hundred and thirty-six computed miles, being from the mouth of the river Tigil to that of the river Kamtschatka; and, towards each extremity, it gradually becomes narrower.

We no where perceived the smallest spot of ground, that had the appearance of a good green turf, or that seemed capable of improvement by cultivation. Stunted trees were thinly scattered over the whole face of the country, whose bottoms were mossy, with a mixture of low heath; the whole resembling Newfoundland in a most striking degree.

The severity of the climate, it may naturally be supposed,

ſuppoſed, muſt be in proportion to the ſterility of the ſoil, of which it is perhaps the cauſe. In computing the ſeaſons here, ſpring ſhould certainly be omitted. Summer may be ſaid to extend from the middle of June, till the middle of September; October may be conſidered as autumn; from which period to the middle of June, it is all dreary winter.

Among the principal trees which fell under our notice, are the birch, the poplar, the alder, ſeveral ſmall ſpecies of the willow, and two ſorts of dwarfiſh cedars. One of theſe ſorts grows upon the coaſt, ſeldom exceeding two feet in height, and creeping upon the ground. Of this our eſſence for beer was made, and proved to be very proper for the purpoſe: the other, which grows much higher, is found on the mountains, and bears a kind of nut or apple.

This peninſula produces great abundance of the ſhrub kind, as mountain aſh, junipers, raſberry-buſhes, and wild roſe trees. Alſo a variety of berries, as partridge-berries, blue-berries, black-berries, cran-berries, and crow-berries. Theſe are gathered at proper ſeaſons, and preſerved by maſhing them into a thick jam. They conſtitute a conſiderable part of their winter proviſions, ſerving as a general ſauce to their dried fiſh. They alſo eat them in puddings, and in various other modes; and make decoctions of them for their common beverage.

We found great quantities of wholeſome vegetables in a wild ſtate, ſuch as chervil, garlic, onions, angelica, and wild celery. We alſo met with ſome excellent turnips, and turnip-radiſhes, upon a few ſpots of ground in the vallies. This was the utmoſt extent of their garden cultivation.

The moſt general object of the chace was for foxes, with which this country abounds, and among which are a variety of colours. The moſt common ſpecies is the ſame as the European, but their calours are more vivid and ſhining.

Fiſh is certainly the ſtaple article of food among the inhabitants of this peninſula; who cannot poſſibly derive

rive any considerable part of their sustenance either from agriculture or cattle. The soil, indeed, affords some wholesome roots, and every part of the country produces great quantities of berries; but these alone could not possibly support the inhabitants; though they are extremely salutary, as being proper correctives of the putrescent quality of their principal diet, dried fish. In short, fish may here be called the staff of life, with more propriety than bread in any other country; for neither the inhabitants, nor their domestic animals of the canine species, could possibly exist without it.

The inhabitants of Kamtschatka may be said to consist of three sorts. The Kamtschadales; the Russians, and Cossacks; and a mixture produced by their intermarriages. We are informed by Mr. Steller, who was long resident in this country, and who was indefatigable in endeavouring to acquire knowledge on this subject, that the Kamtschadales are people of remote antiquity, and have inhabited this peninsula for many ages; and that they doubtless descended from the Mungalians: though some have imagined they sprang from the Tongusian Tartars, and others from the Japanese.

The government established over this country by the Russians, considered as a military one, is remarkably mild and equitable. The natives are suffered to elect their own magistrates in their own mode, who exercise the same powers they have ever been accustomed to. One of these, called a *Toion*, presides over each *ostrog*, to whom all differences are referred; and who awards fines and punishments for all offences and misdemeanors; referring to the governor of Kamtschatka, those which are the most intricate and enormous, not choosing to decide upon them himself. The *Toion* also appoints a civil officer under him, called a corporal, who assists him in his duty, and officiates for him in his absence.

An edict has been issued by the Empress of Russia, that no offence shall be punishable with death. But we are told, that, in cases of murder (which rearly happens

pens here) the *knout* is inflicted with ſuch ſeverity, that the offender ſeldom ſurvives the puniſhment.

In ſome diſtricts, the only tribute that is exacted, is a fox's ſkin; in others, a ſable's; and, in the Kurile iſles, a ſea otter's; but, as the latter is conſiderably more valuable, the tribute of ſeveral perſons is paid with a ſingle ſkin. The tribute is collected by the *Toions*, in the different diſtricts, and is ſo inconſiderable, as hardly to be conſidered in any other light, than as an acknowledgement of the Ruſſian dominion over them.

The Ruſſians are not only to be commended for the mildneſs of their government, but are alſo entitled to applauſe for their ſucceſsful endeavours in converting the natives to Chriſtianity; there being now but very few idolaters remaining among them. It may be neceſſary to obſerve, that the religion inculcated here, is that of the Greek church. In many of the *oſtrogs*, free-ſchools are eſtabliſhed, for the inſtruction of the natives and Coſſacks in the Ruſſian language.

The articles exported from this country conſiſt entirely of furs, and this buſineſs is principally conducted by a company of merchants, appointed by the Empreſs. Twelve was the number of them originally, but three have ſince been added to them. Beſides certain privileges allowed them, they are diſtinguiſhed by wearing a gold medal, expreſſive of the Empreſs's protection of the fur trade. There are other inferior traders, chiefly Coſſacks, in different parts of the country. Whilſt the principal merchants remain here, they reſide either at Bolcheretſk, or the Niſhnei *oſtrog* the trade centering entirely in thoſe two places. This buſineſs was formerly carried on wholly in the way of barter, but every article is at preſent purchaſed with ready money, no inconſiderable quantity of ſpecie being circulated in that wretched country. The furs produce a high price; and the natives, from their mode of life, require few articles in return. Our ſailors brought a quantity of furs from the coaſt of America, and were both pleaſed and aſtoniſhed on receiving ſuch a quantity of ſilver for them from the merchants; but, as they could not pur-

chase gin or tobacco with it, or any thing else that would afford them any degree of entertainment, the roubles were soon considered as troublesome companions, and they were frequently employed in kicking them about the deck. Our men received thirty roubles of a merchant, for a sea-otter's skin, and in the same proportion for others; but, understanding they had great quantities to dispose of, and perceiving that they were unacquainted with traffic, he afterwards procured them at a much cheaper rate.

European articles are the principal that are imported, but they are not solely confined to Russian manufactures. They come from England, Holland, Siberia, Bucharia, the Calmucks, and China. They chiefly consist of coarse woollen and linen cloths, stockings, bonnets, and gloves; thin Persian silks, pieces of nankeen, cottons, handkerchiefs, both of silk and cotton; iron stoves, brass and copper pans, files, guns, powder and shot; hatchets, knives, looking-glasses, sugar, flour, boots, &c. We saw many of these articles in the possession of one of the merchants, who came from Okotsk in the Empress's galliot. These commodities, we observed, sold for three times the sum they might have been purchased for in England. And, notwithstanding the merchants have so extravagant a profit upon these imported goods, they receive still a greater advantage from the sale of the furs at Kiachta, a considerable market for them on the frontiers of China. In Kamtschatka, the best sea-otter skins usually produce about thirty roubles a-piece; at Kiachta, the Chinese merchant gives more than double that price, and disposes of them again at Pekin for a much greater sum; after which, an additional profit is made of many of them at Japan. If, then, the original value of a skin at Kamtschatka is thirty roubles, and it is afterwards transported to Okotsk, thence by land thirteen hundred and sixty-four miles to Kiachta, thence seven hundred and sixty miles to Pekin, and after that, to be transported to Japan, what a lucrative trade might be established

eſtabliſhed between Kamtſchatka and Japan, which is not above three weeks ſail from it, at the utmoſt?

It may be neceſſary to obſerve, that the principal and moſt valuable part of the fur trade, lies among the iſlands between Kamtſchatka and America. Beering firſt diſcovered theſe in 1741, and as they were found to abound with ſea-otters, the Ruſſian merchants ſought anxiouſly for the other iſlands ſeen by that navigator, ſouth-eaſt of Kamtſchatka, named in Muller's map the iſlands of St. Abraham, Seduction, &c. They fell in with no leſs than three groups of iſlands, in theſe expeditions. The firſt, about fifteen degrees eaſt of Kamtſchatka; another twelve degrees eaſt of the former; and the third, Oonalaſhka, and the neighbouring iſlands.

Theſe mercantile adventurers alſo proceeded as far as Shumagin's Iſlands, of which Kodiak is the largeſt. But here they met with ſo warm a reception, for attempting to compel the payment of a tribute, that they never ventured ſo far again. The three groups before mentioned, however, were made tributary. The whole ſea between Kamtſchatka and America is, according to the Ruſſian charts, covered with iſlands; for, as thoſe who were engaged in theſe expeditions, frequently fell in with land, which they ſuppoſed did not tally with the ſituation laid down by preceding adventures, they immediately ſuppoſed it to be a new diſcovery, and reported it accordingly on their return; and, as theſe veſſels were uſually out three or four years, and ſometimes longer, ſuch miſtakes could not immediately be rectified. It is pretty certain, however, that only thoſe iſlands which have been enumerated, have been diſcovered in that ſea, by the Ruſſians, ſouth of 60° latitude.

The ſea-otter ſkins, which are certainly the moſt valuable article in the fur trade, are principally drawn from theſe iſlands; which being now under the Ruſſian dominion, the merchants have factors reſiding in ſettlements there, for the ſole purpoſe of bartering with the natives. To extend this trade, an expedition was fitted out by the Admiralty of Okotſk, to make diſcoveries

to the north and north-eaſt of the above-mentioned iſlands, and the command of it given to Lieutenant Synd. But, as this gentleman directed his courſe too far north, he did not ſucceed in the object of his voyage; for, as we never found a ſea-otter north of Briſtol bay, they, perhaps, avoid thoſe latitudes where large amphibious ſea-animals are numerous. The Ruſſians have not ſince undertaken any expedition for making diſcoveries to the eaſtward; but they will, probably, make an advantageous uſe of our diſcovery of Cook's river. Notwithſtanding the general intercourſe between the natives, the Ruſſians, and Coſſacks, the former are as much diſtinguiſhed from the latter by their habits and diſpoſitions, as by their features and general figure.

The habitations of the natives conſiſt of three diſtinct ſorts; their *jourts*, *balagans*, and *log-houſes*, which are here called iſbas; they inhabit the firſt in the winter, and the ſecond in the ſummer; the third are introduced by the Ruſſians, wherein only the wealthier people reſide. The *jourts* are thus conſtructed: A kind of oblong ſquare is dug about ſix feet deep in the earth; the dimenſions muſt be proportioned to the numbers who are to inhabit it, for it is uſual for ſeveral to live together in the ſame *jourt*. Strong wooden poſts or pillars, faſtened in the ground, at equal diſtances from each other, on which the beams intended to ſupport the roof are extended; which is formed by joiſts, one end of which reſts upon the ground, and the other on the beams. Between the joiſts, the interſtices are filled up with wicker work, and turf is ſpread over the whole. The external appearance of a *jourt*, reſembles a round ſquat hillock. A hole, ſerving for a chimney, window, and door, is left in the center, and the inhabitants go in and out by the aſſiſtance of a long pole, having notches deep enough to afford a little ſecurity for the toe. On the ſide, and even with the ground, there is another entrance, appropriated to the uſe of the women; but if a man paſſes in or out of this door, he becomes as much

mentioned
Lieutenant
course too
of his voy-
of Briſtol
here large
e Ruſſians
or making
probably,
of Cook's
course be-
s, the for-
er by their
and general

three dif-
uſes, which
n the win-
d are intro-
althier peo-
d: A kind
n the earth;
e numbers
eral to live
poſts or pil-
ances from
to ſupport
joiſts, one
he other on
ces are filled
r the whole.
les a round
ey, window,
habitants go
pole, having
rity for the
nd, there is
the women;
becomes as
much

F. Cary sculp.t

SUMMER and WINTER HABITATIONS in KAMTSCHATKA.

much an object of ridicule, as a sailor who descends through lubber's hole.

A *jourt* consists of one apartment, forming an oblong square. Broad platforms, made of boards, are extended along the sides, at the height of about six inches from the ground; which serve them for sitting on, and on which they repose, first taking care to cover them with mats and skins. The fire-place is on one side, and, on the other, their provisions and culinary utensils are stowed. When they make entertainments, the compliment is considered in proportion to the heat of the *jourts*; the hotter they are made, the more gracious is the reception of the guests considered. We always found them so extremely hot as to be intolerable. They generally retire to the *jourts* about the middle of October, and continue in them till the month of May is more than half expired.

To erect a *balagan*, nine posts are fixed into the earth, in three regular rows, at equal distances from each other, to the height of about twelve or thirteen feet from the surface. About ten feet from the ground, rafters are laid from post to post, and securely fastened by strong ropes. The joists are laid upon these rafters, and a turf covering completes the platform or floor of the balagan. A roof of a conical figure is raised upon this, by means of long poles, which are fastened to the rafters at one end, and meet together in a point at the top. The whole is covered, or rather thatched, with a coarse kind of grass. These summer habitations have two doors, placed directly opposite to each other, to which they ascend by the same kind of ladders that are used in the *jourts*. In the lower part, which is left entirely open, they dry their fish, vegetables, and other articles intended for the consumption of the winter. Though six families usually live together in one jourt, a *balagan* is seldom occupied by more than one at a time.

The *isbas*, or log-houses, are thus erected: Long timbers are piled horizontally, with the ends let into each other, and the seams are filled up or caulked with moss.

SUMMER and WINTER HABITATIONS in KAMTSCHATKA.

Flay sculp.

Like thoſe of our common cottages, the roof is ſloping, and thatched either with graſs or ruſhes. Each log-houſe has three apartments in the inſide. One end may be ſaid to be a kind of entry, which extends the whole width and height of the houſe, and ſeems to be a kind of receptacle for their bulky articles, as ſledges, harneſs, &c. This has a communication with the beſt apartment, which is in the middle, and is furniſhed with broad benches, calculated both for eating and ſleeping upon. A door leads from this into the kitchen, almoſt half of which is taken up with an oven, or fire-place; which is let into the wall that ſeparates the middle apartment and the kitchen, and is ſo conſtructed as to communicate the heat to both rooms at the ſame time. There are two lofts over the kitchen and middle apartment, to which the inhabitants aſcend by a ladder placed in the entry for that purpoſe. Each apartment has two ſmall windows made of *talc*, and, among the inferior people, of fiſh-ſkin. The boards and beams of their habitations, are ſmoothed only with a hatchet, for they are ſtrangers to the plane; and the ſmoke has rendered them of a deep ſhining black.

A town is called an *oſtrog* in Kamtſchatka, and conſiſts of ſeveral houſes or habitations of the various kinds above mentioned. *Balagans* are conſiderably the moſt numerous; and it is remarkable, that we never ſaw a houſe of any kind that was detached from an *oſtrog*. There are, in St. Peter and St. Paul, ſeven log-houſes, nineteen *balagans*, and three jourts.

The upper garment of the Kamtſchadales reſembles that of a waggoner's frock. If for ſummer wear, it is made of nankeen; if intended for winter, it is made of a ſkin, (generally that of a deer or dog) having one ſide tanned, and the hair preſerved on the other, which is worn innermoſt. A cloſe jacket of nankeen, or ſome other cotton ſtuff, is the next under this; and beneath that, a ſhirt made of thin Perſian ſilk, of a red, blue, or yellow colour. They wear alſo a pair of long breeches, or tight trowſers, of leather, reaching below the calf of the leg. They have likewiſe a pair of boots, made of dog

dog or deer ſkin, with the hair innermoſt. They have a fur cap, having two flaps that are uſually tied up cloſe to the head, but are permitted to fall round the ſhoulders in bad weather.

The people, ſituated to the north and ſouth of this country, being but imperfectly known, we ſhall give ſuch information as we have been able to acquire, reſpecting the Kurile iſlands, and the Koreki and Tſchutſki.

The Kuriles are a chain of iſlands, extending from latitude 51° to 45°, running from the ſouthern promontory of Kamtſchatka to Japan, in a ſouth-weſt direction. The inhabitants of the neighbourhood of Lopatka, who were themſelves called Kuriles, gave theſe iſlands the ſame name, as ſoon as they became acquainted with them. Spanberg ſays they are twenty-two in number, excluſive of the very ſmall ones. The northernmoſt iſland, which is called Shoomſka, is about three leagues diſtant from the promontory Lopatka, its inhabitants conſiſting of a mixture of natives and Kamtſchadales. The next, which is named Paramouſir, is conſiderably larger than Shoomſka, and is inhabited by the real natives; whoſe anceſtors, they ſay, came from an iſland, called Onecutan, a little farther to the ſouth. The Ruſſians paid their firſt viſit to theſe iſlands in 1713, and added it to the dominions of the Empreſs. The others, as far as Ooſheſheer incluſive, are now made tributary.

Many of the inhabitants of thoſe iſlands that are under the dominion of Ruſſia, are now converted to Chriſtianity. And perhaps the time is not far diſtant, when an advantageous commerce will be carried on between Kamtſchatka and this extenſive chain of iſlands, which may afterwards produce a communication with Japan itſelf. The advantages that muſt infallibly accrue to the Ruſſians by eſtabliſhing a commerce with the Japaneſe, are ſufficiently obvious.

The Koreki country conſiſts of two diſtinct nations, which are called the wandering and fixed Koriacs. Part of the iſthmus of Kamtſchatka is inhabited by the

former, as well as all the coaſt of the Eaſtern Ocean, from thence tothe Anadir. The nation of the wandering Koriacs extends weſt ward towards the river Kovyma, and along the north-eaſt of the ſea of Okotſk, as far as the river Penſkina.

The reſemblance between the fixed Koriacs, and the Kamtſchadales, is very ſtriking; both countries too depend alike on fiſhing for ſubſiſtence. Their clothing and habitations are equally ſimilar. The fixed Koriacs are under the diſtrict of the Ingiga, and are tributary to Ruſſia.

The wandering Koriacs are wholly employed in breeding and paſturing deer, and are ſaid to have immenſe numbers in their poſſeſſion; it being common for a ſingle chief to have a herd of four or five thouſand. Deer is the food they ſubſiſt upon, aud have an averſion to every kind of fiſh. They erect no *balagans*; their only habitations being ſomewhat like the Kamtſchadale *jourts*, except that, in winter, they are covered with raw deer-ſkins; and, in ſummer, with ſuch as have been tanned. Their ſledges are drawn only by deer, and thoſe which are uſed in drawing them feed in the ſame paſture with the others. If they are wanted, the herdſman makes uſe of a certain cry which is familiar to them, which they obey by quitting the heard immediately.

The country inhabited by the Tſchutſki, is bounded by the Anadir on the ſouth, and extends to the Tſchutſko Noſs. Their attention, like that of the wandering Koriacs, is confined chiefly to their deer, with which their country abounds. They are a courageous, well-made, warlike race of people; and are formidable neighbours to the Koriacs of both nations, who often experience their depredations. The Ruſſians have long endeavoured to bring them under their dominion; and though they have loſt a great number of men in their different expeditions to accompliſh this purpoſe, they have never yet been able to effect it.

Let us now return to the proſecution of future diſcoveries. As the Lords of the Admiralty, in the inſtructions

ſtructions which they had given for the regulation of the preſent voyage, had entruſted the commanding officer of the expedition with a diſcretionary power, in caſe of not ſucceeding in the diſcovery of a paſſage from the Pacific Ocean into the Atlantic, to make choice, in his return to England, of whatever route he ſhould judge beſt adapted for the improvement of geography; Capta in Gore deſired that the principal officers would deliver their ſentiments, in writing, relative to the mode in which theſe inſtructions might moſt effectually be carried into execution. The reſult of their opinions, which, to his great ſatisfaction, he found unanimous, and perfectly agreeing with his own, was, that the condition of our veſſels, of the ſails, cordage, &c. rendered it hazardous and unſafe to make any attempt, as the winter was now approaching, to navigate the ſea between Aſia and Japan, which would otherwiſe have opened to us the moſt copious field for diſcovery; that it was therefore moſt prudent to ſteer to the eaſtward of that iſland: and, in our way thither, to ſail along the Kuriles, and examine, in a moſt particular manner, thoſe iſlands that are ſituated neareſt to the northern coaſt of Japan, which are ſaid to be of conſiderable extent, and not ſubject to the Ruſſians or Japaneſe. Should we have the good fortune to meet with ſome ſecure and commodious harbours in any of theſe iſlands, we ſuppoſed they might prove of conſiderable importance, as convenient places of ſhelter for ſubſequent navigators, who might be employed in exploring the ſeas, or as the means of producing a commercial intercourſe among the adjacent dominions of the two above-mentioned empires. Our next object was to take a ſurvey of the coaſts of the Japaneſe iſles; after which, we deſigned to make the coaſt of China, as far to the north as was in our power, and proceed along it to Macao.

This plan of operations being adopted, Captain King was ordered by Captain Gore, in caſe the two ſhips ſhould ſeparate, to repair without delay to Macao; and on the 9th of October, about ſix o'clock in the afternoon,

afternoon, having cleared the entrance of the bay of Awatſka, we made ſail to the ſouth-eaſt, the wind blowing from the north-weſt and by weſt.

On Monday the 11th, at noon, we were in the latitude of 52° 4′, and in the longitude of 158° 31′. We were now at the diſtance of nine or ten miles from the neareſt part of the coaſt, and perceived the whole inland country covered with ſnow. A point of land towards the ſouth, conſtituted the northern ſide of a deep bay, diſtinguiſhed by the name of Achachinſkoi, in whoſe diſtant bottom we imagined that a large river diſcharged itſelf, as the land behind appeared remarkably low. To the ſouthward of Achachinſkoi Bay, the land did not exhibit ſuch a rugged and barren aſpect, as was obſervable in that part of the country which we had before paſſed.

On the 13th at break of day, we deſcried the ſecond of the Kurile Iſlands, named Paramouſir by the Ruſſians, extending from weſt half ſouth to north-weſt by weſt. This land was exceedingly high, and almoſt wholly covered with ſnow. Our latitude, at this time, was 49° 49′, and our longitude 157°. We obſerved, in the courſe of the day, ſeveral whales, and a conſiderable number of albatroſſes and gulls.

The iſland of Paramouſir is the largeſt of the Kuriles that are ſubject to the dominion of the Ruſſians; and is worthy of a more accurate ſurvey than we were on this occaſion enabled to take. For, in the afternoon, the weſterly wind increaſing to a briſk gale, it was not in our power to make a nearer approach to it than we had made at noon; we were, therefore, obliged to content ourſelves with endeavouring to determine its poſition at that diſtance.

While we were abreaſt of Paramouſir, we had a very violent ſwell from the north-eaſtward, though the wind had continued for ſome time in the weſtern quarter; a circumſtance which more than once occurred to our obſervation during the courſe of the voyage. In the night we ſounded, but did not reach the

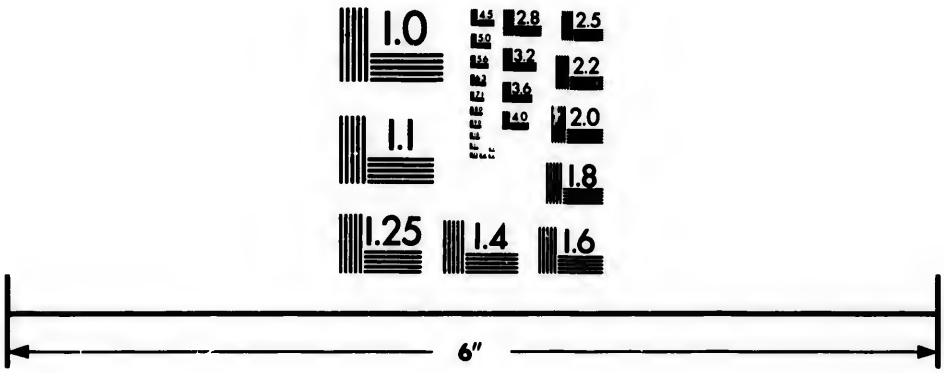
the bottom with fifty fathoms of line. The two following days, the wind blowing freſh from the weſt, obliged us to ſteer to the ſouthward, and conſequently prevented us from ſeeing any more of the Kuriles.

The wind having veered, in the afternoon of the 16th, to the northward, we hauled round to the weſt. In the courſe of this day we obſerved ſeveralal batroſſes, fulmars, and numerous flocks of gulls; we alſo ſaw a number of fiſh, which were called grampuſes by our ſailors; but we were rather inclined to judge, from the appearance of thoſe which paſſed cloſe by our veſſels, that they were the *kaſatka*, or ſword-fiſh, mentioned by Kraſcheninicoff, who has given a curious account of their mode of attacking the whales. In the evening being viſited by a ſmall land bird, about the ſize of a goldfinch, and not unlike that bird in plumage and ſhape, we thought proper to keep a careful look-out for land. However, upon our trying for ſoundings at midnight, we did not ſtrike ground with forty-five fathoms of line.

On the 18th, in the forenoon, we ſaw conſiderable quantities of rock-weed, from which, as well as from the flights of birds already mentioned, we imagined that the ſouthernmoſt of the Kurile Iſland, was at no great diſtance from us; and, about the ſame time, the wind ſhifting to the ſouthward, we were enabled to ſteer for it.

An accident befel the Reſolution in the afternoon of the 21ſt; the leach-rope of her fore-topſail gave way, and ſplit the ſail. As this had frequently happened during the life of Captain Cook, he had, on ſuch occaſions, ordered the foot and leach-ropes of the topſails to be taken out, and larger ones to be fixed in their room; and theſe likewiſe proving incapable of ſupporting the ſtrain that was on them, it manifeſtly appears, that the juſt proportion of ſtrength between the ſail and thoſe ropes is extremely miſcalculated in our ſervice.

IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503


2.8
2.5
3.2
3.6
2.2
2.0
1.8
1.0

Being disappointed in our attempts to get to the north-westward, the tempestuous weather with which we had been harrassed, and the small probability, at this season of the year, of its becoming more favourable to our designs, were the motives that now induced Captain Gore finally to abandon all farther search for the islands situate to the northward of Japan, and to direct his course to the west-south-west, for the northern part of that island.

On the 25th, at noon, we were in the latitude of 40° 18′, and in the longitude of 144°. Flights of wild ducks were this day observed by us; a pigeon lighted upon our rigging; and many birds, resembling linnets, flew about the ships, with a degree of vigour, that gave us reason to imagine, they had not been long on the wing. We also passed a piece either of bamboo or sugar-cane, and several patches of long grass. These indications of our being at no great distance from land, determined us to try for soundings; but we could not reach the bottom with ninety fathoms of line. On the approach of evening, the wind gradually veered round to the south, with which we continued our course to the west-south-west.

On Tuesday the 26th, at break of day, we had the satisfaction of perceiving high land towards the west, which proved to be Japan. Having stood on till nine o'clock, we had, by that time approached within five or six miles of the land; our depth of water was fifty-eight fathoms, with a bottom composed of fine sand. We now tacked, and stood off; but, as the wind failed us, we had proceeded, at noon, to no greater distance from the shore than three leagues. Our latitude, by observation was 40° 5′, and our longitude 142° 28′. The most northerly land in view was supposed by us to be the northern extreme of Japan. It is somewhat lower than the other parts; and from the range of the elevated lands, that were discerned over it from the mast head, the coast manifestly appeared to trend to the westward.

While

While the calm continued, that we might loſe no time, we put our fiſhing-lines overboard, in ten fathoms water, but met with no ſucceſs. This being the only diverſion which our preſent circumſtances permitted us to enjoy, we very ſenſibly felt the diſappointment; and looked back with regret to the cod-banks of the diſmal regions we had lately quitted; which had furniſhed us with ſo many ſalutary meals, and, by the amuſement they afforded, had given a variety to the tedious recurrence of the ſame nautical and aſtronomical obſervations, and the wearisome ſucceſſion of calms and gales.

At two o'clock in the afternoon, the wind blew freſh from the ſouth, and, by four, had reduced us to cloſe-reefed topſails, and obliged us to ſtand off to the ſouth-eaſtward; in conſequence of which courſe, and the gloomineſs of the weather, we ſoon loſt ſight of land. We kept on during the whole night, and till eight o'clock the following morning, when the wind ſhifting to the north, and becoming moderate, we made ſail, and ſteered a weſt-ſouth-weſt courſe towards the land, which, however, we did not make before three in the afternoon.

We proceeded towards the coaſt till eight in the evening, when our diſtance from it was about five leagues; and having ſhortened ſail for the night, we ſteered in a ſoutherly direction, ſounding every four hours; but our depth of water was ſo great, that we did not find ground with a hundred and ſixty fathoms of line.

Steering ſouth-weſt obliquely with the ſhore, we ſaw, at ten o'clock, more land in that direction. To to the weſt of this land, which is low and level, were two iſlands, as we ſuppoſed, though ſome doubts were entertained, whether they were not united with the neighbouring low ground. The hazineſs of the weather, as well as our diſtance, rendered it likewiſe impoſſible for us to aſcertain, whether there were not ſome inlets or harbours between the projecting points which ſeemed to promiſe ſhelter.

We

We continued our courſe to the ſouth-weſt during the remainder of the day, and, at midnight, found our depth of water to be ſeventy fathoms, over a bottom of fine brown ſand. We therefore hauled up towards the eaſt, till the next morning, when we again had ſight of land, about eleven leagues to the ſouth of that which we had ſeen the preceding day. At eight o'clock, we were within the diſtance of about two leagues from the ſhore, having had regular ſoundings from ſixty-five to twenty fathoms, over gravel and coarſe ſand.

It unfortunately happened, that there was a haze over the land, which prevented us from diſtinguiſhing ſmall objects on it. The coaſt ſtraight and unbroken, running nearly in the direction of north and ſouth. The ground was low towards the ſea, but gradually ſwelled into hills of a moderate elevation, whoſe ſummits were pretty even, and covered with wood.

About nine o'clock, the ſky being in ſome degree overcaſt, we tacked, and ſtood off to the eaſtward. Not long after, we obſerved a veſſel, cloſe in with the land, ſtanding to the north along the ſhore; and we alſo ſaw another in the offing, coming down on us, before the wind. The reader will eaſily conceive, that objects of any kind, belonging to a country ſo celebrated, and yet ſo imperfectly known, muſt have excited a general eagerneſs of curioſity; in conſequence of which, every perſon on board came inſtantaneouſly upon deck to gaze at them. As the veſſel to windward approached us, ſhe hauled off to a greater diſtance from the ſhore; upon which, being apprehenſive of alarming thoſe who were on board of her, by the appearance of a purſuit, we brought our ſhips to, and ſhe ſailed a-head of us, at the diſtance of four or five furlongs. We might have ſpoken to them with great facility; but Captain Gore, perceiving, by their manœuvres, that they were highly terrified, was unwilling to increaſe their apprehenſions; and, imagin-

ing

ing that we ſhould have many better opportunities of communication with the Japaneſe, ſuffered them to retire without interruption.

We were not ſufficiently near this veſſel, to remark any particulars reſpecting the men on board of her, who ſeemed to be ſix or ſeven in number, eſpecially as the uſe of our glaſſes was precluded by the thickneſs of the weather. According to the moſt probable conjectures we were enabled to form, the veſſel was of the burden of about forty tons. She had only one maſt, on which was hoiſted a quadrangular ſail, extended aloft by a yard, the braces of which worked forwards. Three pieces of black cloth came half way down the ſail, at an equal diſtance from each other. The veſſel was lower in the middle than at each end; and from her figure and appearance, we ſuppoſed that ſhe could not ſail otherwiſe than large.

The wind blew freſh at noon, and was accompanied with much rain. By three in the afternoon, it had increaſed in ſo great a degree, that we were reduced to our courſes. The ſea at the ſame time, ran as high as any of our people ever remembered to have ſeen it.

About eight o'clock in the evening, the gale, without the ſmalleſt diminution of its violence, ſhifted to the weſt, and, by producing a ſudden ſwell, in a direction contrary to that which had before prevailed, cauſed our ſhips to ſtrain and labour extremely. During the continuance of the ſtorm, the Reſolution had ſeveral of her ſails ſplit. They had, indeed, been bent for ſuch a conſiderable time, and were worn ſo thin, that this accident had lately happenend in both our veſſels almoſt daily; particularly when the ſails were ſtiff and heavy with rain, in which caſe they became leſs capable of bearing the ſhocks of the boiſterous and variable winds.

The gale at length abating, and ſettling in the weſtern quarter, we ſteered a ſouthward courſe; and on Saturday the 30th, at nine o'clock in the morning, we

we saw land, at the distance of fifteen or sixteen leagues. It shewed itself in detached parts; but we were not near enough to ascertain, whether they were small islands, or parts of Japan.

On the 31st, at two o'clock in the morning, the wind veered round to the west, and blew in violent squalls, accompanied with lightning and rain. In the course of this day, several little birds of a brown plumage, resembling linnets, which had been driven off the land by the strong westerly gales, flew about our ships. On the approach of evening, the wind coming to the north-west point, we directed our course, with the birds, to the west-south-west, with a view of regaining the coast.

The next morning, which was the 1st of November, the wind shifted to the south-east, and was attended with fair weather; in consequence of which, we obtained, with four different quadrants, forty-two sets of distances of the moon from the sun and stars, each set comprehending six observations. These nearly coinciding with each other, fix, with great accuracy, our situation, at twelve o'clock this day, in the longitude of 141° 32′, the latitude, by observation, being 35° 17′.

We steered for the land till between five and six, when we hauled our wind to the south. We observed, at this time, many Japanese vessels, close in with the land, some standing along the shore, and others apparently occupied in fishing. We now descried to the westward a mountain of extraordinary height, with a round summit, rising far inland. There is no high ground in the neighbourhood of it, the coast being of a moderate elevation, and, as far as the haziness of the horizon permitted us to judge, much broken and indented by small inlets. But, to the south of the Hummock island above mentioned, there appeared, at a considerable distance up the country, a ridge of hills, which extended towards the mountain, and might perhaps join with it.

As the weather had now a very threatening appearance, and the wind was at south-south-east, we thought it

it advisable to quit the neighbourhood of the shore, and stand off towards the east, that the ships might not be entangled with the land. We were not deceived in our prognostications; for, not long afterwards, a heavy gale began to blow, which continued till the succeeding day, and was attended with rainy and hazy weather.

On Wednesday the 3d, in the morning, we found ourselves, by our reckoning, at the distance of upwards of fifty leagues from the coast; which circumstance, united to the consideration of the very uncommon effect of currents we had already experienced, the advanced period of the year, the variable and uncertain state of the weather, and the small prospect we had of any alteration for the better, induced Captain Gore to form the resolution of leaving Japan, and prosecuting our voyage to China; particularly as he entertained hopes, that, since the track he intended to pursue had not yet been explored, he might perhaps find an opportunity of making amends, by some new and important discovery, for the disappointments we had sustained upon this coast.

If any of our readers should be inclined to suppose, that we relinquished this object too hastily, it may be observed, in addition to the facts before stated, that the coast of Japan, according to Kœmpfer's description of it, is the most dangerous in all the known world; that it would have been exceedingly hazardous, in case of distress, to have run into any of the harbours of that country; where, if we may credit the most authentic writers, the aversion of the natives to a communication with strangers, has prompted them to the commission of the most flagrant acts of barbarity; that our vessels were in a leaky condition; that the rigging was so rotten as to require continual repairs; and that the sails were almost entirely worn out, and incapable of withstanding the vehemence of a gale of wind.

We proceeded to the south-eastward during the 4th and 5th of November, with very unsettled weather, and

and much lightning and rain. On each of thoſe days we paſſed conſiderable quantities of pumice-ſtone, ſome pieces of which were taken up by our people, and found to weigh from an ounce to three pounds. We imagined that theſe ſtones had been thrown into the water by eruptions at different periods, as many of them were entirely bare, and others covered with barnacles. At the ſame time, we had a number of porpoiſes playing round our ſhips, and ſaw ſeveral ſmall land-birds, and two wild ducks.

On the 9th, we obſerved another little land-bird, a tropic bird, ſome flying fiſh and porpoiſes. The wind blowing from the northward, we continued to ſteer a ſouth-weſt courſe, without any memorable occurrence, till Friday the 12th, when, from the ſame quarter, a moſt violent gale aroſe, which reduced us to the mizen ſtay-ſail and fore-ſail; and, on the 13th in the morning, the wind veered to the north-weſt point, and was accompanied with fair weather; but though we were, at preſent, nearly in the ſituation attributed to the iſland of St. Juan, we perceived no appearance of land.

In the morning of Sunday the 14th, we had fine weather, and the wind, which blew moderately, ſhifted by degrees to the north-eaſt point, and proved to be the trade-wind. At ten o'clock, Mr. Trevenen, one of the young gentlemen who accompanied Captain King in the Diſcovery, after the death of Captain Clerke, ſaw land in the direction of ſouth-weſt, which had the appearance of a peaked mountain At noon, the longitude was 142° 2′, and the latitude 24° 37′.

The land in view, which we now diſcovered to be an iſland, was nine or ten leagues diſtant, and, at two o'clock in the afternoon, we deſcried another to the weſt-north-weſtward. This ſecond iſland, when viewed at a diſtance, appears like two; the ſouthern point conſiſting of a lofty hill of a conic figure, united by a narrow neck to the northern land, which is of a moderate elevation. This iſland being manifeſtly of greater extent than that to the ſouthward, we directed our courſe towards it.

The

The next morning, at ſix, we made ſail for the ſouthern point of the larger iſland; and, about this time, diſcovered another high iſland. At nine o'clock, we were abreaſt of the middle iſland, and within the diſtance of a mile from it: but Captain Gore, finding that a boat could not land without running ſome riſque from the heavy ſurf that broke againſt the ſhore, continued his courſe, to the weſtward.

The length of this iſland, in the direction of ſouth-ſouth-weſt and north-north-eaſt, is about five miles. Its ſouth point is an elevated barren hill, rather flat at the ſummit, and when ſeen from the weſt-ſouth-weſt, exhibits an evident volcanic crater. The ſand, earth, or rock, (for it was difficult to diſtinguiſh of which of theſe ſubſtances its ſurface was compoſed) diſplayed various colours; and we imagined that a conſiderable part was ſulphur, not only from its appearance to the eye, but from the ſtrong ſulphureous ſmell perceived by us in our approach to the point. The Reſolution having paſſed nearer the land, ſeveral of the officers of that ſhip thought they diſcerned ſteams proceeding from the top of the hill. Theſe circumſtances induced Captain Gore to beſtow on this diſcovery the appellation of Sulphur Iſland.

A low and narrow neck of land unites the hill we have juſt deſcribed, with the ſouth end of the iſland, which extends itſelf into a circumference of between three and four leagues. The part bordering on the iſthmus has ſome buſhes upon it, and preſents an aſpect of verdure; but thoſe parts that are ſituate to the north-eaſt are extremely barren, and abound with large detached rocks, many of which are of great whiteneſs. Some very dangerous breakers extend about two miles and a half to the eaſtward, and two miles to the weſtward, off the middle part of the iſland, againſt which the ſea breaks with a great degree of violence.

The north and ſouth iſlands had the appearance of ſingle mountains, of a conſiderable elevation; the former was peaked, and of a conic form; the latter more ſquare and flat at the ſummit.

Sulphur

Sulphur Island we judge to be in the latitude of 24° 48′, and the longitude of 141° 12′.

Captain Gore now thought proper to direct his course for the Bashee Isles, with the hopes of procuring at them such a supply of refreshments as might render it less necessary to continue long at Macao. These islands received a visit from Captain Dampier, who has given a very favourable account, as well of the civility of the natives, as of the abundance of hogs and vegetables, with which the country is furnished. They were afterwards seen by Commodore Byron and Captain Wallis, who passed them without landing.

For the purpose of extending our view in the day-time, our ships sailed at the distance of between two and three leagues from each other; and, during the night, we proceeded under an easy sail; so that it was scarcely possible to avoid observing any land that lay in the vicinity of our course. In this manner we continued our progress, without any interesting occurrence, having a fresh breeze from the north-east till Monday the 22d, when it augmented to a strong gale, with vehement squalls of wind and rain, which reduced us to close-reefed top-sails.

In the night of the 25th, there was an eclipse of the moon; but we were prevented by the rain from making any observation. It unfortunately happened, that one of the Discovery's people, being occupied, at the time of the greatest darkness, in stowing the main top-mast stay-sail, fell overboard, but immediately catching hold of a rope, which was providentially hanging out of the fore-chains into the sea, and the ship being brought into the wind without delay, he was got on board with no other hurt than a trifling bruise on one of his shoulders.

On the 28th, at four o'clock in the morning, the Resolution, which was then half a mile a-head of the Discovery, wore, and the crew of the latter ship, at the same time, perceived breakers close under their lee.

On the approach of day-light, we had sight of the island of Prata; and, between the hours of six and seven,

ven, we ſtood towards the ſhoal, but finding ourſelves unable to weather it, we bore away, and ran to leeward. As we paſſed along the ſouth ſide, within the diſtance of a mile from the reef, we ſaw two remarkable patches on the edge of the breakers, that had the appearance of wrecks.

At noon, the latitude, diſcovered by double altitudes, was 20° 39′; and the longitude was 116° 45′. The iſland of Prata was now three or four leagues diſtant. Near the ſouthern extremity of the iſland, and on the ſouth-weſtern ſide of the reef, we imagined that we ſaw, from the maſt-head, ſeveral openings in the reef, which ſeemed to promiſe ſecure anchorage.

The extent of the Prata ſhoal is conſiderable; for it is about ſix leagues from north to ſouth, and extends three or four leagues to the eaſt of the iſland: its limits to the weſtward we had not an opportunity of aſcertaining.

We carried a preſs of ſail during the remainder of the day, and kept the wind, which now blew from the north-eaſt by north, in order to ſecure our paſſage to Macao. It was a fortunate circumſtance, that the wind favoured us towards the evening, by veering two points more to the eaſtward; for, if the wind and weather had continued the ſame as they had been in the preceding week, we think we ſhould ſcarcely have been able to have fetched that port, in which caſe we muſt have repaired to Batavia; a place we had good reaſon to dread, from the terrible havock which the unhealthineſs of the climate had occaſioned among the crews of the former veſſels that had been employed in voyages of diſcovery, and had touched there.

In the morning of Monday the 29th, we paſſed ſome Chineſe fiſhing-boats, the crews of which eyed us with marks of great indifference. In fiſhing, they make uſe of a large dredge-net, reſembling a hollow cone in ſhape, with a flat iron rim fixed to the lower part of its mouth. The net is faſtened with cords to the head and ſtern of the boat, which being left to follow the impulſe of the wind, draws the net after it, with the

iron

iron rim dragging along the bottom. We found the ſea, to our great regret, covered with the wrecks of boats which had been loſt, as we ſuppoſed, in the late ſtormy weather.

Our latitude at twelve o'clock, by obſervation, was 22° 1′; and, ſince the preceding noon, we had run a hundred and ten miles upon a north-weſt courſe. As we were now nearly in the latitude of the Lema Iſlands, we made ſail to the weſt by north, and, after we had proceeded two and twenty miles, deſcried one of them nine or ten leagues to the weſt.

At ſix in the afternoon we were four or five leagues diſtant from the neareſt; our ſoundings being twenty-two fathoms, over a muddy bottom. We now ſlackened ſail, and kept upon our tacks for the night.

The next morning, we ran along the Lema Iſles, which, like the other iſlands ſituated on this coaſt, are deſtitute of wood, and, as far as we had an opportunity of obſerving, devoid of cultivation. About nine o'clock, a Chineſe boat, which had before been with the Reſolution, came along-ſide the Diſcovery, with offers of a pilot, which, however, Captain King declined, as it was incumbent upon him to follow his conſort. Not long afterwards, we paſſed the weſternmoſt of the Lema rocks; but, inſtead of hauling up to the north of the Grand Ladrone Iſland, as was done by Lord Anſon in the Centurion, we ſailed to leeward.

In purſuance of the inſtructions which had been given to Captain Cook by the Lords of the Admiralty, it now became neceſſary to deſire the officers and men to deliver up their journals, and all other papers they might have in their poſſeſſion, relative to the hiſtory of the voyage. Some degree of delicacy, as well as firmneſs, ſeemed to be requiſite in the execution of theſe orders. Our commanders could not be ignorant, that moſt of the officers, and ſeveral of the ſeamen, had amuſed themſelves, in their leiſure hours, with writing accounts of our proceedings, for the purpoſe of gratifying their friends, or for their own private ſatisfaction; which they might not wiſh to have ſubmitted, in their pre-

present form, to the inspection of strangers. On the other hand, the Captains could not, consistently with the instructions they had received, leave papers in their custody, which, either by accident or design, might fall into the hands of printers, and thus give rise to such spurious and imperfect narratives of our voyage, as might tend to the disparagement of our labours, and, perhaps, to the prejudice of officers, who might, though unjustly, incur the suspicion of having been the authors of such publications.

Captain King, therefore, assembled the Discovery's people on deck, and informed them of the orders that had been received, and the reasons which, in his opinion, ought to induce them to yield a perfect obedience. He, at the same time, gave them to understand, that whatever papers they wished not to have sent to the Lords of the Admiralty, should be sealed up in their own presence, and preserved in his custody, till the intentions of their Lordships, respecting the publication of the history of the voyage, were accomplished; after which, he said, they should be faithfully restored to them.

Captain King had the satisfaction to find, that his proposals met with the approbation and the ready compliance, not only of the officers, but also of the rest of the ship's company; and every scrap of paper, that contained an account of any transactions relating to the present voyage, was immediately given up. The Captain observes upon this occasion, that it is but doing justice to the seamen of this ship to declare, that they were the best disposed, and the most obedient men he ever knew, though the greatest part of them were very young, and had never served before in a ship of war.

Captain Gore made the same proposals to the people of the Resolution, who instantly complied with them, and delivered up all their papers which had any reference to the voyage.

We continued working to windward till about six o'clock in the afternoon, when we let go our anchors, by the direction of the Chinese pilot on board the Resolution, who was of opinion that the tide was now setting

ſetting againſt us. In this particular, however, he was greatly deceived; for, upon our making the experiment, we diſcovered, that it ſet towards the north till ten o'clock. The next morning (Wedneſday the 1ſt of December) he fell into an error of a ſimilar kind; for, at five, on the appearance of ſlack water, he directed that we ſhould get under way; but the ignorance he had before manifeſted, had put us upon our guard. We were therefore willing to be convinced, by our own obſervations, before we weighed anchor; and, on examining the tide, we found a ſtrong undertow, in conſequence of which, we were obliged to keep faſt till eleven o'clock. It appears from theſe circumſtances, that the tide had run down for the ſpace of twelve hours.

We ſtood on our tacks during the afternoon, between the Grand Ladrone and the iſland of Potoe, having paſſed to the eaſt of the latter. The tide beginning to ebb at nine o'clock, we again caſt anchor in ſix fathoms water; the town of Macao being at the diſtance of nine or ten miles, in a north-weſt direction; and the iſland of Potoe bearing ſouth half weſt, ſix or ſeven miles.

On the 2d of December, in the morning, one of the Chineſe contractors, who are known by the appellation of *Compradors*, came on board the Reſolution, and ſold to Captain Gore as much beef as weighed two hundred pounds, together with a conſiderable quantity of eggs, oranges, and greens. The Diſcovery received a proportional ſhare of theſe articles; and an agreement was made with the *Comprador* to provide us a daily ſupply, for which, however, he inſiſted on our paying before hand.

As our pilot now pretended that he could conduct the ſhips no farther, Captain Gore was under the neceſſity of diſcharging him; and we were left to our own guidance and direction. At two o'clock in the afternoon, the tide flowing, we took up our anchors and worked to windward; and, at ſeven, anchored again

again in three fathoms and a half water; at which time Macao bore weſt, at the diſtance of one league.

Captain Gore, in the evening, diſpatched Captain King to Macao, to pay a viſit to the Portugueſe Governor, and to requeſt the favour of his aſſiſtance, in ſupplying our people with proviſions, which he imagined might be done on more moderate terms than the *Comprador* would undertake to furniſh them. Captain King, at the ſame time, took an account of the naval ſtores, of which both our ſhips were in great want, with an intention of repairing immediately to Canton, and making application to the ſervants of our Eaſt-India Company, who reſided there at that time.

Upon Mr. King's arrival at the citadel, he was informed by the fort major, that the governor was indiſpoſed, and was therefore unwilling to receive viſitors, but that we might depend on meeting with every aſſiſtance in their power. This, however, Mr. King underſtood would be very inconſiderable, ſince they were perfectly dependent on the Chineſe, even for their daily ſupport. Indeed, the anſwer that was returned to Mr. King's firſt requeſt, furniſhed a ſufficient proof of the reduced ſtate of the Portugueſe power; for, on his ſignifying to the major, his deſire of proceeding to Canton as ſoon as poſſible, the latter acquainted him, that they could not preſume to provide a boat for him, till permiſſion had been obtained from the *Hoppo*, or officer of the cuſtoms; and that it was neceſſary to apply, for this purpoſe, to the Chineſe government at Canton.

Captain King's mortification at ſo unexpected a delay, could be equalled only by the eager impatience with which we had ſo long waited for an opportunity of gaining information with regard to European affairs. It not unfrequently happens, that, amidſt the ardent purſuit of an object, we neglect the moſt obvious means of attaining it. This was, indeed, Mr. King's caſe at preſent; for he was returning to the ſhip in a ſtate of great dejection, when the Portugueſe officer

who accompanied him, aſked him, whether he did not intend to viſit the Engliſh gentlemen at Macao. It is unneceſſary to add with what tranſport Mr. King received the intelligence conveyed to him by this queſtion, as well as with what anxious hopes and fears; what a conflict between curioſity and apprehenſion, his mind was agitated, as he and his companions walked towards the houſe of one of their countrymen. The reception they met with was by no means deficient in civility or kindneſs, though, from the ſtate of agitation they were in, it appeared to them rather cold and formal. In their inquiries, as far as regarded objects of private concern, they obtained, as was indeed to be expected, little or no ſatisfaction; but the occurrences of a public nature, which had happened ſince the period of our departure from England, and which now, overwhelmed all other feelings, and almoſt deprived them, for ſome time, of the power of reflection.

The information now received by Mr. King and his attendants, being communicated to thoſe who remained on board, we continued, for ſeveral days, to queſtion each other with reſpect to the truth of it, as if deſirous of ſeeking, in doubt and ſuſpence, for that conſolation, which the reality of our misfortunes ſeemed entirely to exclude. To theſe ſenſations the moſt poignant regret ſucceeded, on finding ourſelves cut off, at ſo great a diſtance, from the ſcene, where, we ſuppoſed the fate of contending fleets and armies was continually deciding.

The intelligence we had gained concerning the ſtate of affairs in Europe, rendered us the more anxious to accelerate our departure as much as we poſſibly could. Captain King, therefore, renewed his endeavours to procure a paſſage to Canton, but did not meet with ſucceſs at preſent; and finding there was no proſpect of his proceeding to Canton, diſpatched a letter to the Committee of the Engliſh Supercargoes, to requeſt their aſſiſtance in procuring him a paſſport, as well as in forwarding the ſtores we had occaſion for (of which

Mr.

Mr. King ſent them a liſt) with all poſſible expedition.

On Thurſday the 9th, Captain Gore received an anſwer from the Engliſh Supercargoes at Canton, in which they promiſed to exert their moſt ſtrenuous endeavours in procuring the ſupplies of which we were in want, with all poſſible diſpatch, and aſſured him, that a paſſport ſhould be ſent for one of our officers, expreſſing their hopes, at the ſame time, that we were ſufficiently acquainted with the character of the Chineſe adminiſtration, to impute any delays that might occur, to their true cauſe.

The next day, an Engliſh merchant, from one of our ſettlements, made application to Captain Gore, for the aſſiſtance of a few of his people, to navigate as far as Canton, a veſſel which he had purchaſed at Macao. Captain Gore, conſidering this as a good opportunity for Mr. King to repair to that city, gave orders, that he ſhould take with him his ſecond lieutenant, the lieutenant of marines, and ten ſailors.

Though this was not the exact mode in which Captain King could have wiſhed to viſit Canton, yet as it was highly uncertain when the paſſport would arrive, and his preſence might be of great ſervice, in expediting the requiſite ſupplies, he did not ſcruple to go on board the veſſel, having left orders with Mr. Williamſon to prepare the Diſcovery for ſea with all convenient ſpeed, and make ſuch additions and improvements in her upper works, as might contribute to render her more defenſible.

Mr. King and his attendants quitted the harbour of Macao on Saturday the 11th; and reaching Canton in the evening of the 18th, diſembarked at the Engliſh factory, where, though his arrival was wholly unexpected, he was received with every mark of civility and reſpect. Meſſrs. Fitzhugh, Bevan, and Rapier, compoſed at this time the Select Committee; and the former of theſe gentlemen acted as Preſident. They immediately gave Mr. King an inventory of thoſe ſtores with which the Eaſt-India ſhips were able to

ſupply us; and though he did not entertain the ſmalleſt doubt, that the commanders were willing to aſſiſt us with whatever they could ſpare, conſiſtently with a regard to the intereſt of their employers, as well as their own ſafety, yet it was a great diſappointment to him to obſerve in their liſt ſcarcely any canvas or cordage, of both which articles we were chiefly in want. It afforded him, however, ſome conſolation, to find that the ſtores were ready to be ſhipped, and that the proviſions we had occaſion for might be had at a day's notice.

On Sunday the 26th, in the evening, Captain King took his leave of the Supercargoes, after having returned them thanks for their many favours; among which muſt be mentioned a preſent of a conſiderable quantity of tea, for the uſe of the companies of both ſhips, and a copious collection of Engliſh periodical publications.

At one o'clock in the morning of the 27th, Meſſrs. King and Phillips, and the two Engliſh gentlemen, quitted Canton, and, about the ſame hour of the ſucceeding day, arrived at Macao, having paſſed down a channel ſituated to the weſt of that by which Mr. King had come up.

During the abſence of our party from Macao, a briſk traffic had been carrying on with the Chineſe, for our ſea-otter ſkins, the value of which augmented every day. One of our ſailors diſpoſed of his ſtock alone, for eight hundred dollars; and a few of the beſt ſkins, which were clean, and had been careful.y preſerved, produced a hundred and twenty dollars each.

A very ludicrous alteration took place in the dreſs of all our crew, in conſequence of the barter which the Chineſe had carried on with us for our ſea-other ſkins. On our arrival in the Typa, not only the ſailors, but likewiſe the younger officers were extremely ragged in their apparel; for, as the voyage had now exceeded, almoſt by a year, the time it was at firſt ſuppoſed we ſhould continue at ſea, the far greater part

part of our original ſtock of European clothes had been long ago worn out, or repaired and patched up with ſkins, and the different manufactures we had met with in the courſe of the expedition. Theſe were now mixed with the gayeſt ſilks and cottons that China could produce.

On Tueſday the 11th of January, 1780, two ſailors belonging to the Reſolution, went off with a ſix-oared cutter; and though the moſt diligent ſearch was made, both that and the ſucceeding day, we never could gain any intelligence of her. It was imagined that theſe ſeamen had been ſeduced by the hopes of acquiring a fortune if they ſhould return to the fur iſlands.

We unmoored on the 12th of January, at twelve o'clock, and ſcaled the guns, which, on board the Diſcovery, amounted at this time to ten; ſo that her people, by means of four additional ports, could fight ſeven on a ſide. In the Reſolution likewiſe, the number of guns had been augmented from twelve to ſixteen; and, in each of our veſſels, a ſtrong barricade had been carried round the upper work, and all other precautions taken to give our inconſiderable force a reſpectable appearance.

We conſidered it as our duty to furniſh ourſelves with theſe means of defence, though there was ſome reaſon to believe, that they had, in a great meaſure, been rendered ſuperfluous by the generoſity of our enemies. Captain King had been informed at Canton, that, in the public prints, which had laſt arrived from Great Britain, mention was made of inſtructions having been found on board all the French ſhips of war, that had been taken in Europe, importing, that their commanders, if they ſhould happen to fall in with the ſhips which had ſailed from England under the command of Captain Cook, ſhould ſuffer them to proceed unmoleſted on their voyage. It was alſo reported, that the American Congreſs had given ſimilar orders to the veſſels employed in their ſervice. This intelligence being farther confirmed by the private letters of ſome of the ſupercargoes, Captain Gore deemed it incumbent on

him, in return for the liberal exceptions which our enemies had made in our favour, to refrain from embracing any opportunities of capture, which these might afford, and to maintain the strictest neutrality during the whole of his voyage.

Having got under sail, about two o'clock in the afternoon, the Resolution saluted the fort of Macao with eleven guns; and the salutation was returned with an equal number. The wind failed at five, the ship missed stays, and drove into shallow water; but, an anchor being quickly carried out, she was hauled off without sustaining any damage.

After passing some islands, and encountering various winds, on the 20th we came to an anchor in the harbour of Pulo Condore, where we procured some buffaloes, and recruited our wood and water.

At six o'clock we anchored in six fathoms water, with the best bower; and the Discovery was kept steady with a stream anchor and cable towards the south-east. When moored, the extremities of the entrance of the harbour bore west-north-west a quarter west, and north by west; the opening at the upper end bore south-east by east three quarters east; and we were about two furlongs distant from the nearest part of the shore.

We had no sooner let go our anchors, than Captain Gore fired a gun, with a view of giving the inhabitants notice of our arrival, and drawing them towards the shore; but it had no effect. Early the next morning parties were dispatched to cut wood, as Captain Gore's principal motive for touching at this island was to supply the ships with that article. During the afternoon, a sudden gust of wind broke the stream-cable, by which the Discovery rode, and obliged her people to moor with the bower anchors.

As none of the islanders had yet made their appearance, notwithstanding the firing of a second gun, Captain Gore thought it advisable to go ashore in search of them, that we might lose no time in opening a traffic for such provisions as the place could furnish us with.

For this purpose, he desired Captain King to accompany him in the morning of the 22d; and, as the wind, at that time, blew violently from the eastward, they did not think it consistent with prudence to coast in their boats to the town, which stands on the eastern side of the island, but rowed round the northern point of the harbour.

On their first leaving the wood, a herd of buffaloes, consisting of at least twenty, ran towards them, tossing up their heads, snuffing the air, and making a hideous roaring.

After the buffaloes had been driven off, our party were conducted to the town, which was about a mile distant; the road to it lying through a deep whitish sand. It stands near the sea-side, at the bottom of a retired bay, which affords good shelter during the prevalence of the south-west monsoon.

The islander, who acted as a guide to our party, conducted them to the largest house in the town, belonging to the chief, or (as the natives stiled him) the Captain. At each extremity of this house was a room, separated by a partition of reeds from the middle space, which was unenclosed on either side, and was furnished with partition screens like the others. There was also a penthouse, which projected to the distance of four or five feet from the roof, and ran the whole length on each side. Some Chinese paintings, representing persons of both sexes in ludicrous attitudes, were hung at each end of the middle room. In this apartment our people were requested to seat themselves on mats, and *betel* was presented to them.

Captain King, by producing money, and pointing at different objects that were in sight, met with no difficulty in making one of the company, who seemed to be the principal person among them, comprehend the chief design of his visit, and as readily understood from him, that the Chief, or Captain, was, at this time, absent, but would quickly return; and that no purchase of any kind could be made without his concurrence and approbation.

Pula

Pula Condore is elevated and mountainous, and is encompaſſed by ſeveral iſlands of inferior extent, ſome of which are about two miles diſtant, and others leſs than one mile. Its name ſignifies the iſland of calabaſhes, being derived from two Malay words, *Pulo* implying an iſland, and *Condore* a calabaſh, great quantities of which fruit are here produced. It is of a ſemicircular form, and extends ſeven or eight miles from the moſt ſoutherly point, in the direction of north-eaſt. Its breadth, in any part, does not exceed two miles.

The anchorage in this harbour is very good, the depth of water being from five to eleven fathoms; but the bottom is ſo ſoft and clayey, that we met with conſiderable difficulty in weighing our anchors. There is ſhallow water towards the bottom of the harbour, for the extent of about half a mile, beyond which the two iſlands make ſo near an approach to each other, that they leave only a paſſage at high water for boats. The moſt commodious water-place is at a beach on the eaſtern ſide, where we found a ſmall ſtream that ſupplied us with fourteen or fifteen tons of water in a day.

The land near the harbour is a continued lofty hill, richly adorned, from the ſummit to the edge of the water, with a great variety of fine high trees. Among others, we ſaw that which is called by Dampier the tar-tree; but perceived none that were tapped, in the manner deſcribed by him.

The latitude of the harbour of Condore is 8° 40′ north; its longitude, deduced from many lunar obſervations, 106° 18′ 46″ eaſt; and the variation of the compaſs was 14′ weſt.

We weighed anchor on the 28th of January, and had no ſooner cleared the harbour, than we ſtood to the ſouth-ſouth-weſt for Pulo Timoan.

On the 8th, about eight o'clock in the morning, we proceeded through the Straits of Sunda. Being, at that time, not above two miles from two ſhips which lay there at anchor, and which now hoiſted Dutch colours,

lours, Captain Gore ſent a boat on board to procure intelligence.

The boat returned early in the afternoon, with information, that the larger of the two veſſels was a Dutch Eaſt-Indiaman, bound for Europe; and the other, a packet from Batavia, with inſtructions for the ſeveral ſhips lying in the Straits. It is cuſtomary for the Dutch ſhips, when their cargoes are all completed, to quit Batavia, on account of its very unwholeſome climate, and repair to ſome of the more healthy iſlands in the Straits, where they wait for their diſpatches, and the remainder of their lading. The Indiaman, notwithſtanding this precaution, had loſt four men ſince ſhe had left Batavia, and had as many more whoſe lives were deſpaired of. She had remained here a fortnight, and was now on the point of proceeding to Cracatoa to take in water, having juſt received final orders by the packet.

At ſeven o'clock the next morning, we made ſail, and two days afterwards came to an anchor at Cracatoa.

Cracatoa conſiſts of elevated land, gradually riſing on all ſides from the ſea; and is entirely covered with trees, except a few ſpots which have been cleared by the natives for the purpoſe of forming rice fields. The population of the iſland is very inconſiderable. Its Chief is dependent on the King of Bantam, to whom the Chiefs of all the other iſlands in the ſtraits are alſo ſubject. The coral reefs afford ſmall turtles in abundance; but other refreſhments are exceedingly ſcarce, and are ſold at a very exorbitant price. This iſland is conſidered as very healthy, in compariſon of the neighbouring countries.

About eight in the evening, the wind began to blow freſh from the weſt, accompanied with violent thunder, lightning and rain. The next morning (the 11th) at three o'clock, Captain King weighed anchor, and ſteered for Prince's Iſland, at which place they arrived on the 14th.

On the morning of the 19th, being favoured by a north-weſterly breeze, we broke ground, to our extreme ſatiſ-

ſatisfaction, for the laſt time in the ſtraits of Sunda; and on the 20th we had totally loſt ſight of Prince's Iſland.

As this iſland has been deſcribed by Captain Cook in the narrative of a former voyage, we ſhall only add, that we were uncommonly ſtruck with the great general reſemblance of the natives in point of complection, figure, manners, and even language, to the inhabitants of the various iſlands viſited by us in the Pacific Ocean.

The country is ſo plentifully furniſhed with wood, that, notwithſtanding the quantities annually cut down by the crews of the veſſels which touch at this iſland, there is no appearance of its diminution. We were well ſupplied with fowls of a very moderate ſize, and ſmall turtles; the former of which we purchaſed at the rate of a Spaniſh dollar for ten. The natives likewiſe brought us many hog-deer, and an amazing number of monkies, to our great annoyance, as the greater part of our ſailors found means to procure one, if not two, of theſe troubleſome and miſchievous animals.

The latitude of the anchoring-place at Prince's Iſland is 6° 36′ 15″ ſouth, and its longitude 105° 17′ 30″ eaſt.

We had begun to experience, from the time of our entering the ſtraits of Banca, the pernicious effects of this noxious climate. Two of the Diſcovery's people became dangerouſly ill of malignant putrid fevers; which, however, were prevented from being communicated to others, by putting the patients apart from the reſt of the crew in the moſt airy births. Many of us were attacked with diſagreeable coughs; ſeveral complained of violent pains in the head; and even the moſt healthy perſons among us felt a ſenſation of ſuffocating heat, accompanied with an extreme languor, and a total loſs of appetite.

Though our ſituation, however, was for a time thus uneaſy, and even alarming, we had, at laſt, the inexpreſſible ſatisfaction of eſcaping from theſe deſtructive ſeas without the loſs of a ſingle life. This circumſtance,

ſtance, in all probability, was partly owing to the vigorous health of the ſhip's companies, on our firſt arrival in theſe parts, as well as to the unremitting attention, that was now become habitual in our men, to the prudent and ſalutary regulations introduced among us by Captain Cook.

Captain Gore had hitherto deſigned to proceed directly to the iſland of St. Helena, without ſtopping at the Cape of Good Hope; but, as the Reſolution's rudder had been, for ſome time, complaining, and, on examination, was found to be in a dangerous ſtate, he formed the reſolution of repairing immediately to the Cape, as being the moſt eligible place, both for providing a new main-piece to the rudder, and for the recovery of his ſick.

On Monday the 10th of April, at break of day, the land made its appearance to the north-weſtward; and, in the courſe of the morning, a ſnow was ſeen bearing down to us. She proved to be an Engliſh Eaſt-India packet, which had quitted Table-bay, three days before, and was now cruiſing with inſtructions for the China fleet, and other India ſhips. She informed us that Monſieur Trongoller's ſquadron, conſiſting of half a dozen ſail, had left the Cape about three weeks before, and was gone to cruiſe off St. Helena, in ſearch of our Eaſt-India fleet. From this intelligence we conjectured, that five veſſels we had ſeen ſteering to the eaſtward, probably belonged to the French ſquadron; which, in that caſe, had relinquiſhed their cruiſe, and were, perhaps, proceeding to the iſland of Mauritius. Having communicated our conjectures to the packet, and likewiſe mentioned the time we underſtood the China fleet was to ſail from Canton, we left her, and continued our progreſs towards the Cape. In the evening, Falſe Cape bore eaſt-north-eaſt, and the Gunner's Quoin, north by eaſt; but we were prevented by the wind from getting into Falſe Bay, till the evening of the 12th, when we let go our anchors a-breaſt of Simeon's Bay.

Captain

Captain King, on Saturday the 15th, accompanied Captain Gore to Cape Town; and, the following morning, they waited on Baron Plettenberg, the governor, who received them with every possible demonstration of civility and politeness. He entertained a great personal affection for Captain Cook, and professed the highest admiration of his character; and, on hearing the recital of his misfortune, broke forth into many expressions of unaffected sorrow. In one of the principal apartments of the Baron's house, he shewed our gentlemen two pictures, one of De Ruyter, the other of Van Tromp, with a vacant space left between them, which he said, he intended to fill up with the portrait of Captain Cook; and, for this purpose, he requested that they would endeavour to procure one for him, at any price, on their arrival in Great Britain.

On Saturday, the 12th of August we descried the western coast of Ireland, and endeavoured to get into Port Galway, from whence Captain Gore intended to have dispatched the journals and charts of our voyage to London. This attempt, however, proved ineffectual; and we were compelled by violent southerly winds, to stand to the north.

Our next design was to put into Lough Swilly, but the wind continuing in the same quarter, we steered to the northward of the island of Lewis; and on Tuesday the 22d of August, about eleven o'clock in the forenoon, both our vessels anchored at Stromness. From this place Captain King was sent by Captain Gore to inform the Lords of the Admiralty of our arrival; and on Wednesday the 4th of October, the ships reached the Nore in safety, after an absence of four years, two months, and two and twenty days.

THE END.

npanied
llowing
the go-
demon-
ained a
nd pro-
and, on
th into
e of the
ſhewed
ter, the
left be-
up with
purpoſe,
cure one
Great

ried the
get into
nded to
voyage
fectual;
inds, to

lly, but
eered to
Tueſday
ie fore-
From
Gore to
val; and
reached
ars, two